



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

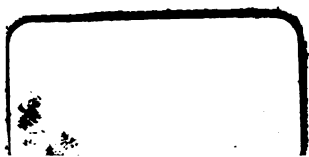
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



3 3433 06935614 9













# **HISTORY OF ENGLAND**

**FROM THE FALL OF WOLSEY TO THE DEATH OF ELIZABETH.**

---

**VOLUME I.**



# HISTORY OF ENGLAND

FROM

THE FALL OF WOLSEY

TO

THE DEATH OF ELIZABETH.

BY

JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE, M.A.

*LATE FELLOW OF EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD.*



VOLUME I.

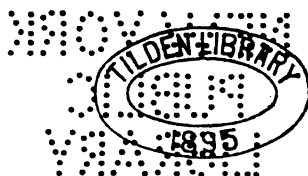
*THE THIRD EDITION, REVISED.*

LONDON:

PARKER, SON, AND BOURN, WEST STRAND.

1862.

*[The right of translation is reserved to the author.]*



LONDON :  
SAVILL AND EDWARDS, PRINTERS, CHANDOS STREET,  
COVENT GARDEN.

# CONTENTS OF VOLUME I.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### *SOCIAL CONDITION OF ENGLAND IN THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.*

	PAGE
Stationary character of Mediæval Civilization ...	2
Population of England in the Sixteenth Century...	3
Slowness of the Rate of Increase ... ..	4
Encouragement of Manufactures ... ..	5
The 'Great Sin' of Idleness ... ..	6
Decay of Towns ... ..	8
Laws of Landlord and Tenant ... ..	10
The Feudal System ... ..	11
Regiments of Labour ... ..	13
Distribution of Property... ..	14
Sumptuary Laws ... ..	15
Their Value as morally declaratory... ..	16
Wages and Prices ... ..	20
State Interference ... ..	26
General Prosperity of Labour ... ..	28
Labour and Capital ... ..	30
The Rights of Property ... ..	31
The Commercial Spirit ... ..	33
Interference with the Rights of Property in Defence of the Poor ... ..	34
Prosperity of the People ... ..	36
Incomes and Duties of the Higher Classes ... ..	38
Cost of the Royal Establishment ... ..	39



	PAGE
The Country Gentlemen and the Clergy ... ..	40
Country Houses in England ... ..	42
Habits of the People ... ..	44
The 'Glory of Hospitality' ... ..	45
Habits of Country Gentlemen ... ..	46
The Clergy and the Laity ... ..	47
Education... ..	48
Organization of Trade ... ..	50
The London Companies ... ..	51
Organization of Trade ... ..	52
Education of the Poor ... ..	54
Illustrative Statutes ... ..	55
The Handloom Weavers... ..	57
Organization of Manufacturers ... ..	58
The System decays ... ..	59
The Change ... ..	61
Military Training ... ..	62
English Archery ... ..	65
Military Training ... ..	66
Games and Amusements ... ..	67
Rise of the English Drama ... ..	69
A Masque at Greenwich... ..	75
English Poor Laws ... ..	76
Neglect of Duty by the Religious Houses ... ..	77
English Poor Laws ... ..	78
Organization of Charity... ..	79
Act of 1531 ... ..	81
Concluding Summary ... ..	90

## CHAPTER II.

### *THE LAST YEARS OF THE ADMINISTRATION OF WOLSEY.*

	PAGE
Struggles between Clergy and Laity ... ..	93
The Monasteries in the 15th Century ... ..	95
The Warnings ... ..	96
Intended Reformation by Wolsey ... ..	100
The one Resident Bishop ... ..	102
General Condition of the Church ... ..	104
The Supplication of the Beggars ... ..	105
Divorce of Catherine of Arragon ... ..	108
The Succession... ..	109
Recollections of the Wars of the Roses ... ..	111
Possible Claimants for the Crown ... ..	113
Legitimacy of the Princess Mary questioned ...	116
Marriage of Henry and Catherine... ..	117
Character of Catherine ... ..	121
Henry's own Feelings ... ..	123
Letter of Henry ... ..	125
The Spanish Alliance ... ..	127
Policy of Wolsey ... ..	129
Wolsey's Scheme of Church Reform ... ..	131
Wolsey will save Europe and the World ... ..	133
The 'Divorce' submitted to the Pope ... ..	135
The Papal Jurisdiction on its Trial ... ..	139
Difficulties of the Pope's Position ... ..	141
Death of De Lautrec ... ..	145
Conduct of Charles... ..	147
Wolsey proposes to retire ... ..	149
Proposals of Campeggio ... ..	151
Attitude of Catherine ... ..	153
Public Acknowledgment of Anne Boleyn ... ..	155
Premature Intrigues ... ..	157

	PAGE
The Great Council ... ..	159
The Pope's Promise... ..	161
Failure of Wolsey's Policy ... ..	163
Temper of England... ..	165
The Crisis ... ..	166
The Fall of Wolsey ... ..	167
The Third Estate ... ..	170
Persecution ... ..	172
Parties in England ... ..	174
Early Character of Henry VIII. ... ..	175
Early History of Anne Boleyn ... ..	181

### CHAPTER III.

#### *THE PARLIAMENT OF 1529.*

The Consistory Courts ... ..	193
The Discipline of the Clergy ... ..	197
Temper of London ... ..	200
Meeting of Parliament ... ..	205
Speech of Sir Thomas More ... ..	206
Liberties of the House of Commons ... ..	209
Petition to the Crown ... ..	210
The Petition is referred to the Bishops ... ..	223
Reply of the Bishops ... ..	226
Character of the Defence... ..	245
Proceedings in Parliament ... ..	247
Probate and Mortuary Act ... ..	247
Clergy Discipline Act ... ..	248
Residence and Pluralities Act... ..	249
Opposition in the House of Lords... ..	250
The Bills are passed... ..	251
Humiliation of the Bishops ... ..	252
Prorogation of Parliament ... ..	253

	PAGE
Inhibition issued by the Pope ... ..	255
Appeal from the Pope to Christendom ... ..	256
Charles V. at Bologna ... ..	257
Clement the Seventh ... ..	259
The European Powers and the Papacy ... ..	260
Mission of the Earl of Wiltshire to the Emperor ...	262
Attitude of Clement ... ..	264
The Opinions of the Universities ... ..	267
Bribery and Intimidation ... ..	268
Conduct of the Lutherans ... ..	270
The University of Paris ... ..	271
Letter of Reginald Pole ... ..	276
Oxford and Cambridge ... ..	278
The King's Remedy... ..	281
Submission of Oxford ... ..	282
Similar Proceedings at Cambridge ... ..	282
A Sunday at Windsor ... ..	284
Results of the Collection of Opinions ... ..	288
The King's Book ... ..	289

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### *CHURCH AND STATE.*

Change in the Position of the Clergy ... ..	292
The Statutes of Provisors ... ..	293
The Clergy in the Premunire ... ..	297
They are Fined ... ..	299
The King must be called Head of the Church ...	300
Resistance of the Clergy ... ..	302
They are compelled to submit ... ..	304
Attempt to Poison the Bishop of Rochester ...	307
Poisoning declared High Treason ... ..	308
Punishment of the Poisoner ... ..	309
General Excitement in the Country ... ..	311

	PAGE
Act against the Gipsies ... ..	315
John Scott the Edinburgh Prophet ... ..	316
Story of the Nun of Kent ... ..	317
The Opinions of the Universities read in Parliament	332
The Address of the Lords to the Pope... ..	333
The King and Queen Catherine separate ... ..	339
The Party of Insurrection ... ..	341
Perils of the Nation ... ..	342
Levy of the Fine upon the Clergy ... ..	344
Scene at St. Paul's ... ..	345
Convocation and the Body of Tracy ... ..	349
Benefit of Clergy ... ..	350
Reform of the Court of Arches ... ..	353
Evasion of the Mortmain Act ... ..	356
Payment of Annates ... ..	357
Petition of the Clergy against the See of Rome ...	359
The Annates Act passed conditionally ... ..	362
The Convocation surrender their right of independent legislation ... ..	363
Conclusion of the Legislative Revolution ... ..	366
Effects of the Change ... ..	366
Sir Thomas More resigns the Seals ... ..	367
Protest and Death of Archbishop Warham ... ..	369

## CHAPTER V.

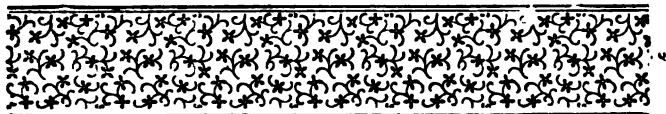
### *MARRIAGE OF HENRY AND ANNE BOLEYN.*

Liberty of Opinion ... ..	371
General Espionage ... ..	372
Informations forwarded to the Government ... ..	373
The Greenwich Observants ... ..	375
Father Peto's Sermon ... ..	377
Religious Orders in England ... ..	382

	PAGE
Position of Parties in Europe ... ..	383
Meeting of the Kings ... ..	389
The Interview at Calais ... ..	394
Henry returns to England ... ..	404
Vatican Diplomacy ... ..	407
Interview between the Emperor and Pope ... ..	409
The Bologna Conference ... ..	413
The King marries ... ..	418
Recapitulation ... ..	419
Papal Brief and Menace of Excommunication ... ..	422
Intrigues of Charles at Paris ... ..	427
Francis inclines to the Pope ... ..	428
Isolation of England ... ..	430
Meeting of Parliament ... ..	431
Economic Legislation ... ..	432
Act of Apparel ... ..	433
Act of Appeals ... ..	434
Double Aspect of this Act ... ..	442
The Divorce Question before Convocation ... ..	447
Cranmer applies for Licence to proceed with the Cause ... ..	449
Terms of the Application ... ..	449
The King's Reply ... ..	451
The Meaning of that Reply ... ..	453
The Court at Dunstable ... ..	454
Cranmer's Sentence ... ..	456
Preparations for the Coronation of Anne ... ..	459
Scene upon the Thames ... ..	460
Pageant in the City ... ..	461
The Procession ... ..	462
The Appearance of the Queen ... ..	463
Westminster Abbey ... ..	467
The King's Letter to the Emperor ... ..	469
The Emperor's Reply ... ..	472
Prospects in England ... ..	473
The Princess Dowager ... ..	475
Royal Proclamation ... ..	476

	PAGE
Symptoms of Disaffection in the Northern Counties	477
Queen Catherine and the Deputation of the Council	478
The Title of Princess Dowager ... ..	479
Catherine's Protest ... ..	483
Letter of Archbishop Cranmer to the English Ambassador in Germany ... ..	486
Martyrdom of Frith and Hewett ... ..	487
Retribution ... ..	488

---



## CHAPTER I.

### SOCIAL CONDITION OF ENGLAND IN THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

**I**N periods like the present, when knowledge is every day extending, and the habits and thoughts of mankind are perpetually changing under the influence of new discoveries, it is no easy matter to throw ourselves back into a time in which for centuries the European world grew upon a single type, in which the forms of the father's thoughts were the forms of the son's, and the late descendant was occupied in treading into paths the footprints of his distant ancestors. So absolutely has change become the law of our present condition, that it is identified with energy and moral health; to cease to change is to lose place in the great race; and to pass away from off the earth with the same convictions which we found when we entered it, is to have missed the best object for which we now seem to exist. CH. I.

It has been, however, with the race of men as it has been with the planet which they inhabit. As we look back over history, we see times of change and progress alternating with other times when life and thought have settled into permanent forms; when mankind, as if by common



## 2 *Stationary Character of Mediæval Civilization.*

CH. I. consent, have ceased to seek for increase of knowledge, and, contented with what they possess, have endeavoured to make use of it for purposes of moral cultivation. Such was the condition of the Greeks through many ages before the Persian war; such was that of the Romans till the world revenged itself upon its conquerors by the introduction among them of the habits of the conquered; and such again became the condition of Europe when the Northern nations grafted the religion and the laws of the Western empire on their own hardy natures, and shaped out that wonderful spiritual and political organization which remained unshaken for a thousand years.

The aspirant after sanctity in the fifteenth century of the Christian era found a model which he could imitate in detail in the saint of the fifth. The gentleman at the court of Edward IV. or Charles of Burgundy could imagine no nobler type of heroism than he found in the stories of King Arthur's knights. The forms of life had become more elaborate—the surface of it more polished—but the life itself remained essentially the same; it was the development of the same conception of human excellence; just as the last orders of Gothic architecture were the development of the first, from which the idea had worked its way till the force of it was exhausted.

A condition of things differing alike both outwardly and inwardly from that into which a happier fortune has introduced ourselves, is ne-

cessarily obscure to us. In the alteration of our own character, we have lost the key which would interpret the characters of our fathers, and the great men even of our own English history before the Reformation seem to us almost like the fossil skeletons of another order of beings. Some broad conclusions as to what they were are at least possible to us, however; and we are able to determine, with tolerable certainty, the social condition of the people of this country, such as it was before the movements of the sixteenth century, and during the process of those movements.

The extent of the population can only be rudely conjectured. A rough census was taken at the time of the Armada, when it was found to be something under five millions; but anterior to this I can find no authority on which I can rely with any sort of confidence. It is my impression, however, from a number of reasons—each in itself insignificant, but which taken together leave little doubt upon my mind—that it had attained that number by a growth so slow as to be scarcely perceptible, and had nearly approached to it many generations before. Simon Fish, in *The Supplication of Beggars*,\* says that the number of households in England in 1531 was 520,000. His calculation is of the most random kind; for he rates the number of parishes at 52,000, with ten households on an average in each parish. A mistake so preposterous respecting the number of parishes shows the great igno-

CH. I.

The inhabitants of England and Wales perhaps numbered something under five millions,

---

\* Printed in FOXE, vol. iv. p. 659, Townsend's edition.

CH. I. rance of educated men upon the subject. The ten  
 — households in each parish may, probably (in some  
 parts of the country), have been a correct compu-  
 tation; but this tells us little with respect to the  
 aggregate numbers, for the households were very  
 large—the farmers, and the gentlemen also, usually  
 having all the persons whom they employed re-  
 siding under their own roof. Neither from this,  
 therefore, nor from any other positive statement  
 which I have seen, can I gather any conclusion  
 that may be depended upon. But when we remem-  
 ber the exceeding slowness with which the popu-  
 lation multiplied in a time in which we can accu-  
 rately measure it—that is to say, from 1588 to the  
 opening of the last century—under circumstances  
 in every way more favourable to an increase, I  
 think we may assume that the increase was not so  
 great between 1500 and 1588, and that, previous  
 to 1500, it did not more than keep pace with the  
 waste from civil and foreign war. The causes,  
 indeed, were wholly wanting which lead to a rapid  
 growth of numbers. Numbers now increase with  
 the increase of employment and with the facilities  
 which are provided by the modern system of  
 labour for the establishment of independent  
 households. At present, any able-bodied unskilled  
 labourer earns, as soon as he has arrived at man's  
 estate, as large an amount of wages as he will earn  
 at any subsequent time; and having no connexion  
 with his employer beyond the receiving the due  
 amount of weekly money from him, and thinking  
 himself as well able to marry as he is likely to be,  
 he takes a wife, and is usually the father of a

But the  
 calculation  
 is very un-  
 certain.

Tendency  
 of the po-  
 pulation to  
 remain sta-  
 tionary,

family before he is thirty. Before the Reformation, not only were early marriages determinately discouraged, but the opportunity for them did not exist. A labourer living in a cottage by himself was a rare exception to the rule; and the work of the field was performed generally, as it now is in the large farms in America and Australia, by servants who lived in the families of the squire or the farmer, and who, while in that position, commonly remained single, and married only when by prudence they had saved a sufficient sum to enable them to enter some other position.

CH. I.

Owing to the habits of the people.

Checked by circumstances of this kind, population would necessarily remain almost stationary, and a tendency to an increase was not of itself regarded by the statesmen of the day as any matter for congratulation or as any evidence of national prosperity. Not an increase of population, which would facilitate production and beat down wages by competition, but the increase of the commonwealth, the sound and healthy maintenance of the population already existing, were the chief objects which the government proposed to itself; and although Henry VIII. carefully nursed his manufactures, there is sufficient proof in the grounds alleged for the measures to which he resorted, that there was little redundancy of occupation.

In a statute, for instance, for the encouragement of the linen manufactures, it is said\* that—‘The King’s Highness, calling to his most

Statute for the encouragement of the linen trade,

---

\* 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 4.

CH. I.

For the better employment of the people,

blessed remembrance the great number of idle people daily increasing throughout this his Realm, supposeth that one great cause thereof is by the continued bringing into the same the great number of wares and merchandize made, and brought out and from, the parts beyond the sea into this his Realm, ready wrought by manual occupation; amongst the which wares one kind of merchandize in great quantity, which is linen cloth of divers sorts made in divers countries beyond the sea, is daily conveyed into this Realm; which great quantity of linen cloth so brought is consumed and spent within the same; by reason whereof not only the said strange countries where the said linen cloth is made, by the policy and industry of making and vending the same are greatly enriched; and a marvellous great number of their people, men, women, and children, are set on work and occupation, and kept from idleness, to the great furtherance and advancement of their commonwealth; but also contrarywise the inhabitants and subjects of this Realm, for lack of like policy and industry, are compelled to buy all or most part of the linen cloth consumed in the same, amounting to inestimable sums of money. And also the people of this Realm, as well men as women, which should and might be set on work, by exercise of like policy and craft of spinning, weaving, and making of cloth, lies now in idleness and otiosity, to the high displeasure of Almighty God, great diminution of the King's people, and extreme ruin, decay, and impoverishment of this Realm. Therefore, for

reformation of these things, the King's most Royal Majesty intending, like a most virtuous Prince, to provide remedy in the premises; nothing so much coveting as the increase of the Commonwealth of this his Realm, with also the virtuous exercise of his most loving subjects and people, and to avoid that most abominable sin of idleness out of the Realm, hath, by the advice and consent of his Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, ordained and enacted that every person occupying land for tillage, shall for every sixty acres which he hath under the plough, sow one quarter of an acre in flax or hemp.'

CH. I.

And the avoidance of the sin of idleness.

This Act was designed immediately to keep the wives and children of the poor in work in their own houses;\* but it leaves no doubt that manufactures in England had not of themselves that tendency to self-development which would encourage an enlarging population. The woollen manufactures similarly appear, from the many statutes upon them, to have been vigorous at a fixed level, but to have shown no tendency to rise beyond that level. With a fixed market and a fixed demand, production continued uniform.

Tendency of production to remain stationary.

A few years subsequent, indeed, to the pass-

---

\* Bishop Latimer, in a sermon at Paul's Cross, suggested another purpose which this act might answer. One of his audience, writing to the Mayor of Plymouth, after describing the exceedingly disrespectful language in which he spoke of the high church dignitaries, continues, 'The king,' quoth he,

'made a marvellous good act of parliament that certain men should sow every of them two acres of hemp; but it were all too little were it so much more to hang the thieves that be in England.'—*Suppression of the Monasteries*, Camden Society's publications, p. 38.

CH. I. ing of the Act which I have quoted, a very curious complaint is entered in the statute book, from the surface of which we should gather, that so far from increasing, manufactures had alarmingly declined. The fact mentioned may bear another meaning, and a meaning far more favourable to the state of the country; although, if such a phenomenon were to occur at the present time, it could admit of but one interpretation. In the 18th and 19th of the 32nd of Henry VIII., all the important towns in England, from the Tweed to the Land's End, are stated, one by one, to have fallen into serious decay. Usually when we meet with language of this kind, we suppose it to mean nothing more than an awakening to the consciousness of evils which had long existed, and which had escaped notice only because no one was alive to them. In the present instance, however, the language was too strong and too detailed to allow of this explanation; and the great body of the English towns undoubtedly were declining in wealth and in the number of their inhabitants. 'Divers and many beautiful houses of habitation,' these statutes say, 'built in tyme past within their walls and liberties, now are fallen down and decayed, and at this day remain unre-edified, and do lie as desolate and vacant grounds, many of them nigh adjoining to the High-streets, replenished with much uncleanness and filth, with pits, sellars, and vaults lying open and uncovered, to the great perill and danger of the inhabitants and other the King's subjects passing by the same; and some houses

A. D. 1540.  
General  
decay of  
towns ;

be very weak and feeble, ready to fall down, and therefore dangerous to pass by, to the great decay and hinderance of the said boroughs and towns.\*

At present, the decay of a town implies the decay of the trade of the town; and the decay of all towns simultaneously would imply a general collapse of the trade of the whole country. Walled towns, however, before the Reformation, existed for other purposes than as the centre points of industry: they existed for the protection of property and life: and although it is not unlikely that the agitation of the Reformation itself did to some degree interrupt the occupation of the people, yet I believe that the true account of the phenomenon which then so much disturbed the parliament, is, that one of their purposes was no longer required; the towns flagged for a time because the country had become secure. The woollen manufacture in Worcestershire was spreading into the open country,† and, doubtless, in other counties as well; and the ‘beautiful houses’ which had fallen into decay, were those which, in the old times of insecurity, had been occupied by wealthy merchants and tradesmen, who were now enabled, by a strong and settled government, to dispense with the shelter of locked gates and fortified walls, and remove their residences to more convenient situations. It was, in fact, the first symptom of the impending social revolution. Two years before the passing of this

Not caused, however, by decay of trade.

Security of the country districts under the government of the Tudors.

---

\* 32 Hen. VIII. cap. 18.

† 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 18.



CH. I. Act, the magnificent Hengrave Hall, in Suffolk,  
 London merchants buy lands, had been completed by Sir Thomas Kitson, 'mercator of London,'\* and Sir Thomas Kitson was but one of many of the rising merchants who were now able to root themselves on the land by the side of the Norman nobility, first to rival, and then slowly to displace them.

But conform to the habits of the nobles and country gentlemen. This mighty change, however, was long in silent progress before it began to tell on the institutions of the country. When city burghers bought estates, the law insisted jealously on their accepting with them all the feudal obligations. Attempts to use the land as 'a commodity' were, as we shall presently see, angrily repressed; while, again, in the majority of instances, such persons endeavoured, as they do at present, to cover the recent origin of their families by adopting the manners of the nobles, instead of transferring the habits of the towns to the parks and chases of the English counties. The old English organization maintained its full activity; and the duties of property continued to be for another century more considered than its rights.

Turning, then, to the tenure of land—for if we would understand the condition of the people, it is to this point that our first attention must be directed—we find that through the many complicated varieties of it there was one broad principle which bore equally upon every class, that the land of England must provide for the defence of England. The feudal system, though practi-

---

\* *Antiquities of Hengrave*, by Sir T. GAGE.

cally modified, was still the organizing principle of the nation, and the owner of land was bound to military service for his country whenever occasion required. Further, the land was to be so administered, that the accustomed number of families supported by it should not be diminished, and that the State should suffer no injury from the carelessness or selfishness of the owners.\* Land never was private property in that personal sense of property in which we speak of a thing as our own, with which we may do as we please; and in the administration of estates, as indeed in the administration of all property whatsoever, duty to the State was at all times supposed to override private interest or inclination. Even tradesmen, who took advantage of the fluctuations of the market, were rebuked by parliament for 'their greedy and covetous minds,' 'as more regarding their own singular lucre and profit than the commonweal of the Realm;† and although in an altered world, neither industry nor enterprise will thrive except under the stimulus of self-interest, we may admire the confidence which in another age expected every man to prefer the advantage of the community to his own. All land was held upon a strictly military principle. It was the representative of authority, and the holder or the owner took rank in the army of the State according to the nature of his connexion with it. It was first broadly divided among the

CH. I.

Laws of  
feudal  
tenureOperating  
as restric-  
tions upon  
selfishness.The mili-  
tary organi-  
zation of  
society.

---

\* See especially 2 Hen. VII. capp. 16 and 19.

† 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 9.

CH. 1. great nobility holding immediately under the crown, who, above and beyond the ownership of their private estates, were the Lords of the Fee throughout their presidency, and possessed in right of it the services of knights and gentlemen who held their manors under them, and who followed their standard in war. Under the lords of manors, again, small freeholds and copyholds were held of various extent, often forty shilling and twenty shilling value, tenanted by peasant occupiers, who thus, on their own land, lived as free Englishmen, maintaining by their own free labour themselves and their families. There was thus a descending scale of owners, each of whom possessed his separate right, which the law guarded and none might violate; yet no one of whom, again, was independent of an authority higher than himself; and the entire body of the English free possessors of the soil was interpenetrated by a coherent organization which converted them into a perpetually subsisting army of soldiers. The extent of land which was held by the petty freeholders was very large, and the possession of it was jealously treasured; the private estates of the nobles and gentlemen were either cultivated by their own servants, or let out, as at present, to free tenants; or (in earlier times) were occupied by villains, a class who, without being bondmen, were expected to furnish further services than those of the field, services which were limited by the law, and recognised by an outward ceremony, a solemn oath and promise from the villain to his lord. Villanage, in the reign of Henry VIII.,

Descending  
scale of  
landed pro-  
priators.

had practically ceased. The name of it last appears upon the statute book in the early years of the reign of Richard II., when the disputes between villains and their liege lords on their relative rights had furnished matter for cumbrous lawsuits, and by general consent the relation had merged of itself into a more liberal form. Thus serfdom had merged or was rapidly merging into free servitude; but it did not so merge that labouring men, if they pleased, were allowed to live in idleness. Every man was regimented somewhere; and although the peasantry, when at full age, were allowed, under restrictions, their own choice of masters, yet the restrictions both on masters and servants were so severe as to prevent either from taking advantage of the necessities of the other, or from terminating through caprice or levity, or for any insufficient reason, a connexion presumed to be permanent.\*

Mutual interdependence of orders.

Through all these arrangements a single aim is visible, that every man in England should have his definite place and definite duty assigned to him, and that no human being should be at liberty to lead at his own pleasure an unaccountable existence. The discipline of an army was transferred to the details of social life, and it issued in a chivalrous perception of the meaning of the word duty, and in the old characteristic spirit of English loyalty.

Organization of labour.

From the regulations with respect to land, a coarser advantage was also derived, of a kind

---

\* See especially the 4th of the 5th of Elizabeth.

## CH. I.

Respective  
advantages  
of large  
and small  
estates.

which at the present time will be effectively appreciated. It is a common matter of dispute whether landed estates should be large or small; whether it is better that the land should be divided among small proprietors, cultivating their own ground, or that it should follow its present tendency, and be shared by a limited and constantly diminishing number of wealthy landlords. The advocates for a peasant proprietary tell us truly, that a landed monopoly is dangerous; that the possession of a spot of ground, though it be but a few acres, is the best security for loyalty, giving the state a pledge for its owner, and creating in the body of the nation a free, vigorous, and manly spirit. The advocates for the large estates tell us, that the masses are too ill-educated to be trusted with independence; that without authority over them, these small proprietors become wasteful, careless, improvident; that the free spirit becomes a democratic and dangerous spirit; and finally, that the resources of the land cannot properly be brought out by men without capital to cultivate it. Either theory is plausible.

The difficulty of deciding between the two systems, and the feudal solution of that difficulty.

The advocates of both can support their arguments with an appeal to experience; and the verdict of fact has not as yet been pronounced emphatically.

The problem will be resolved in the future history of this country. It was also nobly and skilfully resolved in the past. The knights and nobles retained the authority and power which was attached to the lordships of the fees. They retained extensive estates in their own hands or in the occupation of their immediate tenants; but

the large proportion of the lands was granted out by them to smaller owners, and the expenditure of their own incomes in the wages and maintenance of their vast retinues left but a small margin for indulgence in luxuries. The necessities of their position obliged them to regard their property rather as a revenue to be administered in trust, than as 'a fortune' to be expended in indulgence. Before the Reformation, while the differences of social degree were enormous, the differences in habits of life were comparatively slight, and the practice of men in these things was curiously the reverse of our own. Dress, which now scarcely suffices to distinguish the master from his servant, was then the symbol of rank, prescribed by statute to the various orders of society as strictly as the regimental uniform to officers and privates; diet also was prescribed, and with equal strictness; but the diet of the nobleman was ordered down to a level which was then within the reach of the poorest labourer. In 1336, the following law was enacted by the Parliament of Edward III. :\* 'Whereas, heretofore through the excessive and over-many sorts of costly meats which the people of this Realm have used more than elsewhere, many mischiefs have happened to the people of this Realm—for the great men by these excesses have been sore grieved; and the lesser people, who only endeavour to imitate the great ones in such sort of meats, are much impoverished, whereby they are not able to aid

CH. I.

The income from land & revenue to be administered as a trust.

Law of Edward III. restricting sensual indulgence.

---

\* 10 Ed. III. cap. 3.

CH. I. themselves, nor their liege lord, in time of need, as they ought; and many other evils have happened, as well to their souls as their bodies—our Lord the King, desiring the common profit as well of the great men as of the common people of his Realm, and considering the evils, grievances, and mischiefs aforesaid, by the common assent of the prelates, earls, barons, and other nobles of his said Realm, and of the commons of the same Realm, hath ordained and established that no man, of what estate or condition soever he be, shall cause himself to be served, in his house or elsewhere, at dinner, meal, or supper, or at any other time, with more than two courses, and each mess of two sorts of victuals at the utmost, be it of flesh or fish, with the common sorts of pottage, without sauce or any other sorts of victuals. And if any man choose to have sauce for his mess, he may, provided it be not made at great cost; and if fish or flesh be to be mixed therein, it shall be of two sorts only at the utmost, either fish or flesh, and shall stand instead of a mess, except only on the principal feasts of the year, on which days every man may be served with three courses at the utmost, after the manner aforesaid.'

Rank confers honour, but not the privilege of larger bodily enjoyment.

Possible value of sumptuary laws, although they cannot be enforced.

Sumptuary laws are among the exploded fallacies which we have outgrown, and we smile at the un wisdom which could expect to regulate private habits and manners by statute. Yet some statutes may be of moral authority when they cannot be actually enforced, and may have been regarded, even at the time at which they were issued, rather as an authoritative declaration

of what wise and good men considered to be right, than as laws to which obedience could be compelled. This act, at any rate, witnesses to what was then thought to be right by 'the great persons' of the English realm; and when great persons will submit themselves of their free will to regulations which restrict their private indulgence, they are in little danger of disloyalty from those whom fortune has placed below them.

Such is one aspect of these old arrangements; it is unnecessary to say that with these, as with all other institutions created and worked by human beings, the picture admits of being reversed. When by the accident of birth men are placed in a position of authority, no care in their training will prevent it from falling often to singularly unfit persons. The command of a permanent military force was a temptation to ambition, to avarice, or hatred, to the indulgence of private piques and jealousies, to political discontent on private and personal grounds. A combination of three or four of the leading nobles was sufficient, when an incapable prince sate on the throne, to effect a revolution; and the rival claims of the houses of York and Lancaster to the crown, took the form of a war unequalled in history for its fierce and determined malignancy, the whole nation tearing itself in pieces in a quarrel in which no principle was at stake, and no national object was to be gained. A more terrible misfortune never befel either this or any other country, and it was made possible only in

Unfavourable aspects of the feudal system.

Danger of the abuse of power.



CH. I. virtue of that loyalty with which the people followed the standard, through good and evil, of their feudal superiors. It is still a question, however, whether the good or the evil of the system predominated; and the answer to such question is the more difficult because we have no criterion by which, in these matters, degrees of good and evil admit of being measured. Arising out of the character of the nation, it reflected this character in all its peculiarities; and there is something truly noble in the coherence of society upon principles of fidelity. Fidelity of man to man is among the rarest excellences of humanity, and we can tolerate large evils which arise out of such a cause. Under the feudal system men were held together by oaths, free acknowledgments, and reciprocal obligations, entered into by all ranks, high and low, binding servants to their masters, as well as nobles to their kings; and in the frequent forms of the language in which the oaths were sworn we cannot choose but see that we have lost something in exchanging these ties for the harsher connecting links of mutual self-interest.

Yet fidelity  
a nobler  
bond of co-  
herence  
than inter-  
est.

Oath of the  
freeman.

‘When a freeman shall do fealty to his lord,’ the statute says, ‘he shall hold his right hand upon the book, and shall say thus:—Hear you, my lord, that I shall be to you both faithful and true, and shall owe my faith to you for the land that I hold, and lawfully shall do such customs and services as my duty is to you, at the times assigned, so help me God and all his saints.’

‘The villain,’ also, ‘when he shall do fealty

to his lord, shall hold his right hand over the book, and shall say:—Hear you, my lord, that I from this day forth unto you shall be true and faithful, and shall owe you fealty for the land which I hold of you in villanage; and that no evil or damage will I see concerning you, but I will defend and warn you to my power. So help me God and all his saints.’\*

CH. I.

Oath of the villain.

Again, in the distribution of the produce of land, men dealt fairly and justly with each other; and in the material condition of the bulk of the people there is a fair evidence that the system worked efficiently and well. It worked well for the support of a sturdy high-hearted race, sound in body and fierce in spirit, and furnished with thews and sinews which, under the stimulus of those ‘great shins of beef,’† their common diet, were the wonder of the age. ‘What comyn folke in all this world,’ says a state paper in

Physical strength of the English people.

\* *Statutes of the Realm*, vol. i. (edit. 1817), pp. 227–8.

† ‘The artificers and husbandmen make most account of such meat as they may soonest come by and have it quickest ready. Their food consisteth principally in beef, and such meat as the butcher selleth, that is to say, mutton, veal, lamb, pork, whereof the one findeth great store in the markets adjoining; besides souse, brawn, bacon, fruit, pies of fruit, fowls of sundry sorts, as the other wanteth it not at home by his own provision, which is at the best hand and commonly least charge. In feasting, this

latter sort—I mean the husbandmen—do exceed after their manner, especially at bridals and such odd meetings, where it is incredible to tell what meat is consumed and spent.’—HARRISON’s *Description of England*, p. 282.

The Spanish nobles who came into England with Philip were astonished at the diet which they found among the poor.

‘These English,’ said one of them, ‘have their houses made of sticks and dirt, but they fare commonly so well as the king.’—*Ibid.* p. 313.

CH. I. 1515,\* 'may compare with the comyns of England in riches, freedom, liberty, welfare, and all prosperity? What comyn folke is so mighty, so strong in the felde, as the comyns of England?' The relative numbers of the French and English armies which fought at Cressy and Agincourt may have been exaggerated, but no allowance for exaggeration will affect the greatness of those exploits; and in stories of authentic actions under Henry VIII., where the accuracy of the account is undeniable, no disparity of force made Englishmen shrink from enemies wherever they could meet them. Again and again a few thousands of them carried dismay into the heart of France. Four hundred adventurers, vagabond apprentices, from London,† who formed a volunteer corps in the Calais garrison, were for years the terror of Normandy. In the very frolic of conscious power they fought and plundered, without pay, without reward, except what they could win for themselves; and when they fell at last they fell only when surrounded by six times their number, and were cut to pieces in careless desperation. Invariably, by friend and enemy alike, the English are described as the fiercest people in all Europe (the English wild beasts, Benvenuto Cellini calls them); and this great physical power they owed to the profuse abundance in which they lived, and to the soldier's training in which every man of them was bred from childhood.

European  
estimate of  
them.

\* *State Papers*, Hen. VIII. vol. ii. p. 10.

† HALL, p. 646.

The state of the working classes can, however, be more certainly determined by a comparison of their wages with the prices of food. Both were regulated, so far as regulation was possible, by act of parliament, and we have therefore data of the clearest kind by which to judge. The majority of agricultural labourers lived, as I have said, in the houses of their employers; this, however, was not the case with all, and if we can satisfy ourselves as to the rate at which those among the poor were able to live who had cottages of their own, we may be assured that the rest did not live worse at their masters' tables.

Wheat, the price of which necessarily varied, averaged in the middle of the fourteenth century tenpence the bushel;\* barley averaging at the same time three shillings the quarter. With wheat the fluctuation was excessive; a table of its possible variations describes it as ranging from eighteenpence the quarter to twenty shillings; the average, however, being six and eightpence.† When the price was above this sum, the merchants might import to bring it down;‡ when it was below this price the farmers were allowed to export to the foreign markets.§ The same scale, with a scarcely appreciable tendency to rise, continued to hold until the disturbance in the value of the currency. In the twelve years from 1551 to 1562, although once before harvest wheat rose to the extraordinary price of forty-five shillings a quarter,

Prices of  
agricultural  
produce.

Average  
price of  
wheat, six  
and eight-  
pence a  
quarter.

\* 25 Ed. III. cap. 1.

† *Statutes of the Realm*,  
vol. i. p. 199.

‡ 3 Ed. IV. cap. 2.

§ 10 Hen. VI. cap. 2.

CH. I. it fell immediately after to five shillings and four.\* Six and eightpence continued to be considered in parliament as the average;† and on the whole it seems to have been maintained for that time with little variation.‡

Beef and pork were a halfpenny a pound—mutton was three farthings. They were fixed at these prices by the 3rd of the 24th of Hen. VIII. But the act was unpopular both with buyers and with sellers. The old practice had been to sell in the gross, and under that arrangement the rates had been generally lower. Stow says,|| ‘It was this year enacted that butchers should sell their beef and mutton by weight—beef for a halfpenny the pound, and mutton for three farthings; which being devised for the great commodity of the realm (as it was thought), hath proved far otherwise: for at that time fat oxen

Average price of meat, as fixed by statute, from a halfpenny to three farthings the pound.

\* Stow's *Chronicle*.

† *Statutes of Philip and Mary*.

‡ From 1565 to 1575 there was a rapid and violent rise in the prices of all kinds of grain. Wheat stood at four and five times its earlier rates; and in 1576, when Harrison wrote, was entirely beyond the reach of the labouring classes. ‘The poor in some shires,’ he says, ‘are enforced to content themselves with rye or barley, yea, and in time of dearth many with bread made either of peas, beans, or oats, or of all together and some acorns among, of which scourge the poorest do soonest taste, sith they are least able to provide themselves of better. I will not

say that this extremity is oft so well seen in time of plenty as of dearth, but if I should I could easily bring my trial. For, albeit that there be much more ground eared now almost in every place than hath been of late years, yet such a price of corn continues in each town and market, that the artificer and poor labouring man is not able to reach to it, but is driven to content himself with beans, peas, oats, tares, and lentils.’—HARRISON, p. 283. The condition of the labourer was at this period deteriorating rapidly. The causes will be described in the progress of this history.

|| *Chronicle*, p. 568.

were sold for six and twenty shillings and eightpence the piece; fat wethers for three shillings and fourpence the piece; fat calves at a like price; and fat lambs for twelvence. The butchers of London sold penny pieces of beef for the relief of the poor—every piece two pound and a half, sometimes three pound for a penny; and thirteen and sometimes fourteen of these pieces for twelvence; mutton eightpence the quarter, and an hundred weight of beef for four shillings and eightpence.’ The act was repealed in consequence of the complaints against it,\* but the prices never fell again to what they had been, although beef sold in the gross could still be had for a halfpenny a pound in 1570.† Other articles of food were in the same proportion. The best

The act fixing the price of meat unpopular alike with buyers and sellers.

\* 33 Hen. VIII. cap. 11. The change in the prices of such articles commenced in the beginning of the reign of Edward VI., and continued till the close of the century. A discussion upon the subject, written in 1581 by Mr. Edward Stafford, and containing the clearest detailed account of the alteration, is printed in the *Harleian Miscellany*, vol. ix. p. 139, &c.

† Leland, *Itin.*, vol. vi. p. 17. In large households beef used to be salted in great quantities for winter consumption. The art of fattening cattle in the stall was imperfectly understood, and the loss of substance in the destruction of fibre by salt was less than in the falling off of flesh on the failure of fresh grass. The *Northumbumberland Household Book* describes the storing of salted

provision for the earl's establishment at Michaelmas; and men now living can remember the array of salting tubs in old-fashioned country houses. So long as pigs, poultry, and other articles of food, however, remained cheap and abundant, the salt diet could not, as Hume imagines, have been carried to an extent injurious to health; and fresh meat, beef as well as mutton, was undoubtedly sold in all markets the whole year round in the reign of Henry VIII., and sold at a uniform price, which it could not have been if there had been so much difficulty in procuring it. Latimer (*Letters*, p. 412), writing to Cromwell on Christmas Eve, 1538, speaks of his winter stock of 'beeves' and muttons as a thing of course.

CH. I. pig or goose in a country market could be bought for fourpence; a good capon for threepence or fourpence; a chicken for a penny; a hen for twopence.\*

Strong beer  
a penny per  
gallon.

Strong beer, such as we now buy for eighteen-pence a gallon, was then a penny a gallon;† and

\* *STAFFORD'S Discourse on the State of the Realm*. It is to be understood, however, that these rates applied only to articles of ordinary consumption. Capons fattened for the dinners of the London companies were sometimes provided at a shilling apiece. Fresh fish was also extravagantly dear, and when two days a week were observed strictly as fasting days, it becomes a curious question to know how the supply was kept up. The inland counties were dependent entirely on ponds and rivers. London was provided either from the Thames or from the coast of Sussex. An officer of the Fishmongers' Company resided at each of the Cinque Ports, whose business it was to buy the fish wholesale from the boats and to forward it on horseback. Three hundred horses were kept for this service at Rye alone. And when an adventurous fisherman, taking advantage of a fair wind, sailed up the Thames with his catch and sold it first hand at London Bridge, the innovation was considered dangerous, and the Mayor of Rye petitioned against it.

Salmon, sturgeon, porpoise, roach, dace, flounders, eels, &c., were caught in considerable quantities in the Thames, below London Bridge, and further up, pike and trout. The fishermen had

great nets that stretched all across Limehouse-reach four fathoms deep.

Fresh fish, however, remained the luxury of the rich, and the poor were left to the salt cod, ling and herring brought in annually by the Iceland fleet.

Fresh herrings sold for five or six a penny in the time of Henry VIII., and were never cheaper. Fresh salmon five and six shillings apiece. Roach, dace, and flounders from two to four shillings a hundred. Pike and barbel varied with their length. The barbel a foot long sold for fivepence, and twopence was added for each additional inch: a pike a foot long sold for sixteen pence, and increased a penny an inch.—*Guilāhall MSS. Journals* 12, 13, 14, 15.

\* 'When the brewer buyeth a quarter of malt for two shillings, then he shall sell a gallon of the best ale for two farthings; when he buyeth a quarter malt for four shillings, the gallon shall be four farthings, and so forth . . . and that he sell a quart of ale upon his table for a farthing.'—*Assize of Brewers*: from a MS. in Balliol College, Oxford.

By an order of the Lord Mayor and Council of the City of London, in September, 1529, the price of a kilderkin of single beer was fixed at a shilling, the

table-beer less than a halfpenny. French and German wines were eightpence the gallon. Spanish and Portuguese wines a shilling. This was the highest price at which the best wines might be sold; and if there was any fault in quality or quantity, the dealers forfeited four times the amount.\* Rent, another important consideration, cannot be fixed so accurately, for parliament did not interfere with it. Here, however, we are not without very tolerable information. 'My father,' says Latimer,† 'was a yeoman, and

CH. I.

Wine eightpence to a shilling per gallon.

Latimer's account of the scale of rents before the Reformation.

kilderkin of double beer at two shillings; but this included the cask; and the London brewers replied with a remonstrance, saying that the casks were often destroyed or made away with, and that an allowance had to be made for bad debts. 'Your beseechers,' they said, 'have many city debtors, for many of them which have taken much beer into their houses suddenly goeth to the sanctuary, some keep their houses—some purchase the king's protection, and some, when they die, be reckoned poor, and of no value, and many of your said beseechers be for the most part against such debtors remediless and suffer great losses.'

They offered to supply their customers with sixteen gallon casks of single beer for eleven pence, and the same quantity of double beer for a shilling, the cask included. And this offer was accepted.

The corporation, however, returned two years after to their original order. *Guildhall Re-*

*cords*, MS. Journal 13, pp. 210, 236.

\* 28 Hen. VIII. cap. 14.

The prices assessed, being a maximum, applied to the best wines of each class. In 1531, the mayor and corporation 'did straitly charge and command that all such persons as sold wines by retail within the city and liberties of the same, should from henceforth sell two gallons of the best red wine for eightpence, and not above; the gallon of the best white wine for eightpence, and not above; the pottle, quart, and pint after the same rate, upon pain of imprisonment.'

The quality of the wine sold was looked into from time to time, and when found tainted, or unwholesome, 'according to the antient customs of the city,' the heads of the vessels were broken up, and the wines in them put forth open into the kennels, in example of all other offenders. *Guildhall MS. Journals* 12 and 13.

† *Sermons*, p. 101.



CH. I. had no lands of his own; only he had a *farm of three or four pounds by the year* at the uttermost, and hereupon he tilled so much as kept half-a-dozen men. He had walk for a hundred sheep, and my mother milked thirty kine. He was able, and did find the king a harness with himself and his horse. I remember that I buckled on his harness when he went to Blackheath field. He kept me to school, or else I had not been able to have preached before the King's Majesty now. He married my sisters with five pounds, or twenty nobles, each, having brought them up in godliness and fear of God. He kept hospitality for his poor neighbours, and some alms he gave to the poor; and all this he did of the said farm.' If 'three or four pounds at the uttermost' was the rent of a farm yielding such results, the rent of labourers' cottages is not likely to have been considerable.\*

The penny in the reign of Henry VIII. equal in terms of bread, beef, and beer, to the present shilling.

Some uncertainty is unavoidable in all calculations of the present nature; yet, after making the utmost allowances for errors, we may conclude from such a table of prices that a penny, in terms of the labourer's necessities, must have been nearly equal in the reign of Henry VIII. to the present shilling. For a penny, at the time of which I write, the labourer could buy as much bread, beef, beer, and wine—he could do as much towards finding lodging for himself and his family—as the

\* See HARRISON, p. 318. At the beginning of the century farms let for four pounds a year, which in 1576 had been raised to forty, fifty, or a hundred. The price of produce kept pace with the rent. The large farmers prospered; the poor forfeited their tenures.

labourer of the nineteenth century can for a shilling. I do not see that this admits of question. Turning, then, to the table of wages, it will be easy to ascertain his position. By the 3rd of the 6th of Henry VIII. it was enacted that master carpenters, masons, bricklayers, tylers, plumbers, glaziers, joiners, and other employers of such skilled workmen, should give to each of their journeymen, if no meat or drink was allowed, sixpence a day for the half year, fivepence a day for the other half; or fivepence-halfpenny for the yearly average. The common labourers were to receive fourpence a day for half the year, for the remaining half, threepence.\* In the harvest

Average  
wages of  
artisans  
fivepence-  
halfpenny  
a day.

\* The wages were fixed at a maximum, showing that labour was scarce, and that its natural tendency was towards a higher rate of remuneration. Persons not possessed of other means of subsistence were punishable if they refused to work at the statutable rate of payment; and a clause in the act of Hen. VIII. directed that where the practice had been to give lower wages, lower wages should be taken. This provision was owing to a difference in the value of money in different parts of England. The price of bread at Stratford, for instance, was permanently twenty-five per cent. below the price in London. (*Assize of Bread in England: Balliol MS.*) The statute, therefore, may be taken as a guide sufficiently conclusive as to the practical scale. It is of course uncertain how far work was constant. The ascending tendency of wages is an evidence,

so far as it goes, in the labourer's favour; and the proportion between the wages of the household farm servant and those of the day labourer, which furnishes a further guide, was much the same as at present. By the same statute of Henry VIII. the common servant of husbandry, who was boarded and lodged at his master's house, received 16s. 8d. a year in money, with 4s. for his clothes; while the wages of the out-door labourer, supposing his work constant, would have been 5l. a year. Among ourselves, on an average of different counties, the labourer's wages are 25l. to 30l. a year, supposing his work constant. The farm servant, unless in the neighbourhood of large towns, receives about 6l., or from that to 8l.

Where meat and drink was allowed it was calculated at 2d. a day, or 1s. 2d. a week. In

CH. I. months they were allowed to work by the piece, and might earn considerably more;\* so that, in fact (and this was the rate at which their wages were usually estimated), the day labourer, if in full employment, received on an average fourpence a day for the whole year. Allowing a deduction of one day in a fortnight for a saint's day or a holiday, he received, therefore, steadily and regularly, if well conducted, an equivalent of something near to twenty shillings a week, the wages at present paid in English colonies: and this is far from being a full account of his advantages. Except in rare instances, the agricultural labourer held land in connexion with his house, while in most parishes, if not in all, there were large ranges of common and unenclosed forest land, which furnished his fuel to him gratis, where pigs might range, and ducks and geese; where, if he could afford a cow, he was in no danger of being unable to feed it; and so important was this privilege considered, that when the commons began to be largely enclosed, parliament insisted that the working man should not be without some piece of ground on which he could employ his own and his family's industry.†

Average wages of agricultural labourers fourpence a day.

Other advantages of the labouring classes.

the household of the Earl of Northumberland the allowance was 2½*d.* Here, again, we observe an approach to modern proportions. The estimated cost of the board and lodging of a man servant in an English gentleman's family is now about 25*l.* a year.

\* Mowers, for instance, were

paid 8*d.* a day.—*Privy Purse Expenses of Henry VIII.*

† In 1581 the agricultural labourer, as he now exists, was only beginning to appear. 'There be such in the realm,' says Stafford, 'as live only by the labour of their hands and the profit which they can make upon the commons.' — STAFFORD'S

By the 7th of the 31st of Elizabeth, it was ordered that no cottage should be built for residence without four acres of land at lowest being attached to it for the sole use of the occupants of such cottage. CH. I.

It will, perhaps, be supposed that such comparative prosperity of labour was the result of the condition of the market in which it was sold, that the demand for labour was large and the supply limited, and that the state of England in the sixteenth century was analogous to that of Australia or Canada at the present time. And so long as we confine our view to the question of wages alone, it is undoubted that legislation was in favour of the employer. The Wages Act of Henry VIII. was unpopular with the labourers, and was held to deprive them of an opportunity of making better terms for themselves.\* But we

Causes of  
the prosper-  
ity of  
labour,

*Discourse.* This novel class had been called into being by the general raising of rents, and the wholesale evictions of the smaller tenantry which followed the Reformation. The progress of the causes which led to the change can be traced from the beginning of the century. Harrison says he knew old men who, comparing things present with things past, spoke of two things grown to be very grievous—to wit, the enhancing of rents, and the daily oppression of copyholders, whose lords seek to bring their poor tenants almost into plain servitude and misery, daily devising new means, and seeking up all the old, how to cut them shorter and shorter; doubling, trebling, and now and then seven times

increasing their fines; driving them also for every trifle to lose and forfeit their tenures, by whom the greatest part of the realm doth stand and is maintained, to the end they may fleece them yet more: which is a lamentable hearing.—*Description of England*, p. 318.

\* HALL, p. 581.

Nor was the act in fact observed even in London itself, or towards workmen employed by the Government. In 1538, the Corporation of London, 'for certain reasonable and necessary considerations,' assessed the wages of common labourers at 7d. and 8d. the day, classing them with carpenters and masons.—*Guildhall MSS. Journal* 14, fol. 10. Labourers employed on Govern-

CH. I. shall fall into extreme error if we translate into  
 — the language of modern political economy the  
 social features of a state of things which in no  
 way corresponded to our own. There was this  
 essential difference, that labour was not looked  
 upon as a market commodity; the government  
 (whether wisely or not, I do not presume to  
 determine) attempting to portion out the rights  
 of the various classes of society by the rule, not  
 of economy, but of equity. Statesmen did not  
 care for the accumulation of capital; they desired  
 to see the physical well-being of all classes of the  
 commonwealth maintained at the highest degree  
 which the producing power of the country  
 admitted; and population and production remain-  
 ing stationary, they were able to do it. This  
 was their object, and they were supported in it  
 by a powerful and efficient majority of the nation.  
 On the one side parliament interfered to protect  
 employers against their labourers; but it was  
 equally determined that employers should not be  
 allowed to abuse their opportunities; and this di-

Not wholly  
 lying in the  
 condition of  
 the labour  
 market,

But a re-  
 sult of the  
 care of the  
 State.

ment works in the reign of Hen. VIII. never received less than 6d. a day, and frequently more. — *Chronicle of Calais*, p. 197, &c. Sixpence a day is the usual sum entered as the wages of a day's labour in the innumerable lists of accounts in the Record Office. And 6d. a day again was the lowest pay of the common soldier, not only on exceptional service in the field, but when regularly employed in garrison duty. Those who doubt

whether this was really the practice, may easily satisfy themselves by referring to the accounts of the expenses of Berwick, or of Dover, Deal, or Walmer Castles, to be found in the Record Office in great numbers. The daily wages of the soldier are among the very best criteria for determining the average value of the unskilled labourer's work. No government gives higher wages than it is compelled to give by the market rate.

rectly appears from the 4th of the 5th of Elizabeth, by which, on the most trifling appearance of a depreciation in the currency, it was declared that the labouring man could no longer live on the wages assigned to him by the act of Henry; and a sliding scale was instituted by which, for the future, wages should be adjusted to the price of food.\*

The same conclusion may be gathered also, indirectly, from other acts, interfering imperiously with the rights of property where a disposition showed itself to exercise them selfishly. The city merchants, as I have said, were becoming landowners; and some of them attempted to apply the rules of trade to the management of landed estates. While wages were ruled so high, it answered better as a speculation to convert arable land into pasture; but the law immediately stepped in to prevent a proceeding which it regarded as petty treason to the commonwealth. Self-protection is the first law of life; and the country relying for its defence on an able-bodied population, evenly distributed, ready at any moment to be called into action, either against foreign invasion or civil disturbance, it could not permit the owners of land to pursue for their own benefit a course of action which threatened to weaken its garrisons. It is not often that we are able to test the wisdom of legislation by specific results so clearly as in the present instance. The first attempts of

Legislative interference with the management of property.

---

\* The wages of the day labourer in London, under this act of Elizabeth, were fixed at 9d. the day, and this, after the restoration of the depreciated currency.—*Guildhall MSS. Journal* 18, fol. 157, &c.

CH. I. the kind which I have described were made in the  
 ——— Isle of Wight, early in the reign of Henry VII. Lying so directly exposed to attacks from France, the Isle of Wight was a place which it was peculiarly important to keep in a state of defence, and the following act was therefore the consequence:—

Depopulation of the Isle of Wight occasioned by the system of large farms.

‘Forasmuch as it is to the surety of the Realm of England that the Isle of Wight, in the county of Southampton, be well inhabited with English people, for the defence as well of our antient enemies of the Realm of France as of other parties; the which Isle is late decayed of people by reason that many towns and villages have been let down, and the fields dyked and made pasture for beasts and cattle, and also many dwelling-places, farms, and farmholds have of late time been used to be taken into one man’s hold and hands, that of old time were wont to be in many several persons’ holds and hands, and many several households kept in them; and thereby much people multiplied, and the same Isle thereby well inhabited, which now, by the occasion aforesaid, is desolate and not inhabited, but occupied with beasts and cattle, so that if hasty remedy be not provided, that Isle cannot long be kept and defended, but open and ready to the hands of the king’s enemies, which God forbid. For remedy hereof, it is ordained and enacted that no manner of person, of what estate, degree, or condition soever, shall take any several farms more than one, whereof the yearly value shall not exceed the sum of ten marks; and if any

several leases afore this time have been made to any person or persons of divers and sundry farmholds, whereof the yearly value shall exceed that sum, then the said person or persons shall choose one farmhold at his pleasure, and the remnant of his leases shall be utterly void.\*

CH. I.

The farms again subdivided.

An act, tyrannical in form, was singularly justified by its consequences. The farms were rebuilt, the lands reploughed, the island repeopled; and in 1546, when a French army of sixty thousand men attempted to effect a landing at St. Helen's, they were defeated and driven off by the militia of the island and a few levies transported from Hampshire and the adjoining counties.† The money-making spirit, however, lay too deep to be checked so readily. The trading classes were growing rich under the strong rule of the Tudors. Increasing numbers of them were buying or renting land; and the symptoms complained of broke out in the following reign in many parts of England. They could not choose but break out indeed; for they were the outward marks of a vital change, which was undermining the feudal constitution, and would by and bye revolutionize and destroy it. Such symptoms it was impossible to extinguish; but the government wrestled long and powerfully to hold down the new spirit; and they fought against it successfully, till the old order of things had finished its work, and the time was come for it to depart.

Historical justification of this policy.

Introduction of the commercial spirit into the management of land.

\* 4 Hen. VII. cap. 16. By the same parliament these provisions were extended to the rest of England. 4 Hen. VII. cap. 19.

† HALL, p. 863; and see vol. iv. of this work, chap. xxii.



## 34 *Interference with the Rights of Property*

CH. I. By the 1st of the 7th of Henry VIII., the laws of feudal tenure were put in force against the landed traders. Wherever lands were converted from tillage to pasture, the lords of the fee had authority to seize half of all profits until the farm-buildings were reconstructed. If the immediate lord did not do his duty, the lord next above him was to do it; and the evil still increasing, the act, twenty years later, was extended further, and the king had power to seize.\* Nor was this all. Sheep-farming had become an integral branch of business; and falling into the hands of men who understood each other, it had been made a monopoly, affecting seriously the prices of wool and mutton.† Stronger measures were therefore now taken, and the class to which the offenders belonged was especially pointed out by parliament.

\* 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 22.

† There is a cause of difficulty 'peculiar to England, the increase of pasture, by which sheep may be now said to devour men and unpeople not only villages but towns. For wherever it is found that the sheep yield a softer and richer wool than ordinary, there the nobility and gentry, and even those holy men the abbots, not contented with the old rents which their farms yielded, nor thinking it enough that they, living at their ease, do no good to the public, resolve to do it hurt instead of good. They stop the course of agriculture . . . One shepherd can look after a flock which will stock an extent of ground that would require many hands if it were ploughed and

reaped. And this likewise in many places raises the price of corn. The price of wool is also risen . . . since, though sheep cannot be called a monopoly, because they are not engrossed by one person; yet they are in so few hands, and these are so rich, that as they are not prest to sell them sooner than they have a mind to it, so they never do it till they have raised the price as high as possible.'—Sir THOMAS MORE's *Utopia*, Burnet's Translation, pp. 17–19.

See, also, a petition to the crown, describing the extent and effects of the enclosing system, which I have printed in a note, p. 93, of the third volume of this work.

‘Whereas,’ says the 13th of the 25th of Henry VIII., ‘divers and sundry persons of the king’s subjects of this Realm, to whom God of his goodness hath disposed great plenty and abundance of moveable substance, now of late, within few years, have daily studied, practised, and invented ways and means how they might accumulate and gather together into few hands, as well great multitude of farms as great plenty of cattle, and in especial, sheep, putting such lands as they can get to pasture and not to tillage; whereby they have not only pulled down churches and towns and enhanced the old rates of the rents of the possessions of this Realm, or else brought it to such excessive fines that no poor man is able to meddle with it, but also have raised and enhanced the prices of all manner of corn, cattle, wool, pigs, geese, hens, chickens, eggs, and such other commodities, almost double above the prices which hath been accustomed, by reason whereof a marvelous multitude of the poor people of this realm be not able to provide meat, drink, and clothes necessary for themselves, their wives, and children, but be so discouraged with misery and poverty, that they fall daily to theft, robbery, and other inconveniences, or pitifully die for hunger and cold; and it is thought by the king’s humble and loving subjects, that one of the greatest occasions that moveth those greedy and covetous people so to accumulate and keep in their hands such great portions and parts of the lands of this Realm from the occupying of the poor husbandmen, and so to use it in pasture and not in tillage, is the great

CH. I.

Evil of the  
excess of  
land em-  
ployed in  
pasture

Prices of  
provision  
enhanced  
by a mono-  
poly, and  
consequent  
sufferings  
of the peo-  
ple.

Labour not  
a ‘commo-  
dity.’

CH. I. profit that cometh of sheep which be now come  
 into a few persons' hands, in respect of the whole  
 number of the king's subjects; it is hereby  
 enacted, that no person shall have or keep on  
 lands not their own inheritance more than 2000  
 sheep; that no person shall occupy more than  
 two farms; and that the 19th of the 4th of  
 Henry VII., and those other acts obliging the  
 lords of the fees to do their duty, shall be re-  
 enacted and enforced.\*

The state  
 interferes.

Labour left  
 alone un-  
 able to  
 struggle  
 with capi-  
 tal.

By these measures the money-making spirit  
 was for a time driven back, and the country  
 resumed its natural course. I am not concerned  
 to defend the economic wisdom of such proceed-  
 ings; but they prove, I think, conclusively, that  
 the labouring classes owed their advantages not  
 to the condition of the labour market, but to  
 the care of the state; and that when the state  
 relaxed its supervision, or failed to enforce its  
 regulations, the labourers being left to the market  
 chances, sank instantly in the unequal struggle  
 with capital.

The government, however, remained strong  
 enough to hold its ground (except during the dis-  
 creditable interlude of the reign of Edward VI.)

\* I find scattered among the  
*State Papers* many loose memo-  
 randa, apparently of privy coun-  
 cillors, written on the backs of  
 letters, or on such loose scraps as  
 might be at hand. The follow-  
 ing fragment on the present sub-  
 ject is curious. I do not recog-  
 nise the hand:—

'Mem. That an act may be  
 made that merchants shall employ

their goods continually in the  
 traffic of merchandise, and not in  
 the purchasing of lands; and that  
 craftsmen, also, shall continually  
 use their crafts in cities and  
 towns, and not leave the same  
 and take farms in the country;  
 and that no merchant shall here-  
 after purchase above 40*l.* lands  
 by the year.'—*Cotton MS.* Titus,  
 b. i. 160.

for the first three quarters of the century; and until that time the working classes of this country remained in a condition more than prosperous. They enjoyed an abundance far beyond what in general falls to the lot of that order in long-settled countries; incomparably beyond what the same class were enjoying at that very time in Germany or France. The laws secured them; and that the laws were put in force we have the direct evidence of successive acts of the legislature justifying the general policy by its success: and we have also the indirect evidence of the contented loyalty of the great body of the people at a time when, if they had been discontented, they held in their own hands the means of asserting what the law acknowledged to be their right. The government had no power to compel submission to injustice, as was proved by the fate of an attempt to levy a 'benevolence' by force, in 1525. The people resisted with a determination against which the crown commissioners were unable to contend, and the scheme ended with an acknowledgment of fault by Henry, who retired with a good grace from an impossible position. If the peasantry had been suffering under any real grievances we should not have failed to have heard of them when the religious rebellions furnished so fair an opportunity to press those grievances forward. Complaint was loud enough when complaint was just, under the Somerset protectorate.\*

Evidence of  
the general  
content of  
the people.

---

\* When the enclosing system was carried on with greatest activity and provoked insurrection. In expressing a sympathy with

## CH. I.

Incomes  
and duties  
of the  
higher  
classes.

The incomes of the great nobles cannot be determined, for they varied probably as much as they vary now. Under Henry IV. the average income of an earl was estimated at 2000*l.* a year.\* Under Henry VIII. the great Duke of Buckingham, the wealthiest English peer, had 6000*l.*† And the income of the Archbishop of Canterbury was rated at the same amount.‡ But the establishments of such men were enormous; their ordinary retinues in time of peace consisting of many hundred persons; and in war, when the duties of a nobleman called him to the field, although in theory his followers were paid by the crown, yet the grants of parliament were on so small a scale that the theory was seldom converted into fact, and a large share of the expenses was paid often out of private purses. The Duke of Norfolk, in the Scotch war of 1523, declared (not complaining of it, but merely as a reason why he

the social policy of the Tudor government, I have exposed myself to a charge of opposing the received and ascertained conclusions of political economy. I disclaim entirely an intention so foolish; but I believe that the science of political economy came into being with the state of things to which alone it is applicable. It ought to be evident that principles which answer admirably when a manufacturing system capable of indefinite expansion multiplies employment at home—when the soil of England is but a fraction of its empire, and the sea is a highway to emigration—would have produced far different effects, in a condition of things

which habit had petrified into form, when manufactures could not provide work for one additional hand, when the first colony was yet unthought of, and where those who were thrown out of the occupation to which they had been bred could find no other. The tenants evicted, the labourers thrown out of employ, when the tillage lands were converted into pastures, had scarcely an alternative offered them except to beg, to rob, or to starve.

\* *Lansdowne MS.* No. I. fol. 26.

† GIUSTINIANI'S *Letters from the Court of Henry VIII.*

‡ *Ibid.*

should receive support) that he had spent all his private means upon the army; and in the sequel of this history we shall find repeated instances of knights and gentlemen voluntarily ruining themselves in the service of their country. The people, not universally, but generally, were animated by a true spirit of sacrifice; by a true conviction that they were bound to think first of England, and only next of themselves; and unless we can bring ourselves to understand this, we shall never understand what England was under the reigns of the Plantagenets and Tudors. The expenses of the court under Henry VII. were a little over 14,000*l.* a year, out of which were defrayed the whole cost of the king's establishment, the expenses of entertaining foreign ambassadors, the wages and maintenance of the yeomen of the guard, the retinues of servants, and all necessary outlay not incurred for public business. Under Henry VIII., of whose extravagance we have heard so much, and whose court was the most magnificent in the world, these expenses were 19,894*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.*,\* a small sum when compared with the present cost of the royal establishment, even if we adopt the relative estimate of twelve to one, and suppose it equal to 240,000*l.* a year of our money. But indeed it was not equal to 240,000*l.*; for, although the proportion held in articles of common consumption, articles of luxury were very dear indeed.†

CH. I.

Spirit of self-sacrifice.

Expenses of the royal household.

\* 22 Hen. VIII. cap. 18.

† Under Hen. VI. the household expenses were 23,000*l.* a year. Cf. *Proceedings and Or-*

*dinances of the Privy Council*, vol. vi. p. 35. The particulars of the expenses of the household of Hen. VIII. are in an MS. in

## CH. I.

Incomes  
and duties  
of the coun-  
try gentle-  
men.

Passing down from the king and his nobles, to the body of the people, we find that the income qualifying a country gentleman to be justice of the peace was 20*l.* a year,\* and if he did his duty, his office was no sinecure. We remember Justice Shallow and his clerk Davy, with his novel theory of magisterial law; and Shallow's broad features have so English a cast about them, that we may believe there were many such, and that the duty was not always very excellently done. But the Justice Shallows were not allowed to repose upon their dignity. The justice of the peace was required not only to take cognizance of open offences, but to keep surveillance over all persons within his district, and over himself in his own turn there was a surveillance no less sharp, and penalties for neglect prompt and peremptory.† Four times a year he was to make proclamation of his duty, and exhort all persons to complain against him who had occasion.

Twenty pounds a year, and heavy duties to do for it, represented the condition of the squire of the parish.‡ By the 2nd of the 2nd of Henry V.,

the Rolls House. They cover the entire outlay except the personal expenditure of the king, and the sum total amounts to 14,365*l.* 10*s.* 7*d.* This would leave above 5000*l.* a year for the privy purse, not, perhaps, sufficient to cover Henry's gambling extravagances in his early life. Curious particulars of his excesses in this matter will be found in a publication wrongly called *The Privy Purse Expenses of Henry the Eighth*. It is a diary of

general payments, as much for purposes of state as for the king himself. The high play was confined for the most part to Christmas or other times of festivity, when the statutes against unlawful games were dispensed with for all classes.

\* 18 Hen. VI. cap. 11.

† 4 Hen. VII. cap. 12.

‡ During the quarter sessions time they were allowed 4*s.* a day.—Ric. II. xii. 10.

'the wages' of a parish priest were limited to 5*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, except in cases where there was special licence from the bishop, when they might be raised as high as 6*l.* Priests were probably something better off under Henry VIII., but the statute remained in force, and marks an approach at least to their ordinary salary.\* The priest had enough, being unmarried, to supply him in

CH. I.

Salaries of  
the parish  
clergy.

---

\* The rudeness of the furniture in English country houses has been dwelt upon with much emphasis by Hume and others. An authentic inventory of the goods and chattels in a parsonage in Kent proves that there has been much exaggeration in this matter. It is from an MS. in the Rolls House.

*The Inventory of the Goods and Cates of Rich<sup>d</sup>. Master, Clerk, Parson of Aldington, being in his Parsonage on the 20th Day of April, in the 25th Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King Henry VIII.*

*Plate.*

Silver spoons, twelve.

*In the Hall.*

Two tables and two forms.

Item, a painted cloth hanging at the upper part of the hall.

Item, a green banker hung on the bench in the hall.

Item, a laver of laton.

*In the Parlour.*

A hanging of old red and green saye.

Item, a banker of woven carpet of divers colours.

Item, two cushions.

Item, one table, two forms, one cupboard, one chair.

Item, two painted pictures and a picture of the names of kings of England pinned on the said hanging.

*In the Chamber on the North Side of the said Parlour.*

A painted hanging.

Item, a bedstedyll with a feather bed, one bolster, two pillows, one blanket, one roulett of rough tapestry, a testner of green and red saye.

Item, two forms.

Item, one jack to set a basin on.

*In the Chamber over the Parlour.*

Two bedsteads.

Item, another testner of painted cloth.

Item, a painted cloth.

Item, two forms.



CH. I. comfort with the necessaries of life. The squire  
 ————— had enough to provide moderate abundance for

*At the Stairs' Hed beside the Parson's Bedchamber.*

One table, two trestylls, four beehives.

*In the Parson's Lodging-chamber.*

A bedstedyll and a feather bed, two blankets, one payr of sheets, one coverlet of tapestry lined with canvas, one bolster, one pillow with a pillocote.

Item, one gown of violet cloth lined with red saye.

Item, a gown of black cloth, furred with lamb.

Item, two hoods of violet cloth, whereof one is lined with green sarsenet.

Item, one jerkyn of tawny camlet.

Item, a jerkyn of cloth furred with white.

Item, a jacket of cloth furred.

Item, a sheet to put in cloth.

Item, one press.

Item, a leather mail.

Item, one table, two forms, four chairs, two trestylls.

Item, a tester of painted cloth.

Item, a pair of hangings of green saye, with two pictures thereupon.

Item, one cupboard, two chests.

Item, a little flock bed, with a bolster and a coverlet.

Item, one cushion, one mantell, one towel, and, by estimation, a pound of wax candles.

Item, Greek books covered with boards, 42.

Item, small books covered with boards, 33.

Item, books covered with leather and parchment, 38.

*In the said Chest in the said Chamber.*

Three pieces of red saye and green.

Item, one tyke for a bolster, two tykes for pillows.

Item, a typpet of cloth.

Item, diaper napkins, 4, diaper towels, 2.

Item, four pairs of sheets, and one shete, two tablecloths.

*In the other Chest in the same Chamber.*

One typpet of sarsenett.

Item, two cotes belonging to the crosse of Underhill, whereupon hang thirty-three pieces of money, rings, and other things, and three crystal stones closed in silver.

*In the Study.*

Two old boxes, a wicker hamper full of papers.

*In the Chamber behind the Chimney.*

One seam and a half of old malt.

Item, a trap for rats.

Item, a board of three yards length.

himself and his family. Neither priest nor squire was able to establish any steep difference in out- CH. I.

---

*In the Chamber next adjoining westwards.*

One bedstedyll, one flock bed, one bolster.

One form, two shelf boards, one little table, two trestylls, two awgyes, one nett, called a stalker, a well rope, five quarters of hemp.

*In the Butlery.*

Three basins of pewter, five candlesticks, one ewer of lateen, one chafing dish, two platters, one dish, one salter, three podingers [? porringer], a saltseller of pewter, seven kilderkyns, three keelers, one form, five shelves, one byn, one table, one glasse bottell.

*In the Priest's Chamber.*

One bedstedyll, one feather bed, two forms, one press.

*In the Woman's Keeping.*

Two tablecloths, two pairs of sheets.

*In the Servant's Chamber.*

One painted hanging, a bedstedyll, one feather bed, a press, and a shelf.

*In the Kitchen.*

Eight bacon flitches, a little brewing lead, three brass pots, three kettles, one posnett, one frying-pan, a dripping-pan, a great pan, two trivetts, a chopping knife, a skimmer, one fire rake, a pothanger, one pothooke, one andiron, three spits, one gridiron, one firepan, a coal rake of iron, two botts [? butts], three wooden platters, six boldishes, three forms, two stools, seven platters, two pewter dishes, four saucers, a covering of a salt-seller, a podynger, seven tubbs, a caldron, two syffs, a capon cope, a mustard quern, a ladder, two pails, one beehive.

*In the Mill-house.*

Seven butts, two cheeses, an old sheet, an old brass pan, three podyngers, a pewter dish.

*In the Boulting-house.*

One brass pan, one quern, a boulting hutch, a boulting tub, three little tubbys, two keelers, a tolvett, two boulders, one tonnell.

*In the Larder.*

One sieve, one bacon trough, a cheese press, one little tub, eight shelves, one graper for a well.

*Wood.*

Of tall wood ten load, of ash wood a load and a half.

*Poultry.*

Nine hens, eight capons, one cock, sixteen young chickens, three old geese, seventeen goslings, four ducks.

CH. I. ward advantages between himself and the commons among whom he lived.

The habits of all classes were open, free, and liberal. There are two expressions corresponding one to the other, which we frequently meet with in old writings, and which are used as a kind of index, marking whether the condition of things was or was not what it ought to be. We read of Merry Eng-  
land.

*Cattle.*

Five young hoggs, two red kyne, one red heifer two years old, one bay gelding lame of spavins, one old grey mare having a mare colt.

*In the Entries.*

Two tubbs, one trough, one ring to bear water and towel, a chest to keep cornes.

*In the same House.*

Five seams of lime.

*In the Woman's Chamber.*

One bedstedyll of hempen yarn, by estimation 20lbs.

*Without the House.*

Of tyles, , of bricks, , seven planks, three rafters, one ladder.

*In the Gate-house.*

One form, a leather sack, three bushels of wheat.

*In the Still beside the Gate.*

Two old road saddles, one bridle, a horse-cloth.

*In the Barn next the Gate.*

Of wheat unthrashed, by estimation, thirty quarters, of barley unthrashed, by estimation, five quarters.

*In the Cartlage.*

One weene with two whyles, one dung-cart without whyles, two shodwhyles, two yokes, one sledge.

*In the Barn next the Church.*

Of oats unthrashed, by estimation, one quarter.

*In the Garden-house.*

Of oats, by estimation, three seams four bushels.

*In the Court.*

Two racks, one ladder.

things were not going well with it. We hear of CH. 1.  
 'the glory of hospitality,' England's pre-eminent  
 boast,—by the rules of which all tables, from the  
 table of the twenty-shilling freeholder to the table  
 in the baron's hall and abbey refectory, were open  
 at the dinner hour to all comers, without stint or  
 reserve, or question asked.\* to every man, ac- The open  
 cording to his degree, who chose to ask for it, hand.  
 there was free fare and free lodging; bread, beef,  
 and beer for his dinner; for his lodging, perhaps,  
 only a mat of rushes in a spare corner of the hall,  
 with a billet of wood for a pillow,† but freely  
 offered and freely taken, the guest probably faring  
 much as his host fared, neither worse nor better.  
 There was little fear of an abuse of such licence,  
 for suspicious characters had no leave to wander  
 at pleasure; and for any man found at large, and  
 unable to give a sufficient account of himself,  
 there were the ever-ready parish stocks or town  
 gaol. The 'glory of hospitality' lasted far down  
 into Elizabeth's time; and then, as Camden says,  
 'came in great bravery of building, to the mar-  
 vellous beautifying of the realm, but to the decay'  
 of what he valued more.

In such frank style the people lived, hating  
 three things with all their hearts: idleness, want,  
 and cowardice; and for the rest, carrying their  
 hearts high, and having their hands full. The‡

---

\* Two hundred poor were fed daily at the house of Thomas Cromwell. This fact is perfectly authenticated. Stowe the historian, who did not like Cromwell, reports it as an eye witness.—See STOWE'S *Survey of London*.  
 † HARRISON'S *Description of Britain*.  
 ‡ The Earl and Countess of Northumberland breakfasted to-

CH. I. hour of rising, winter and summer, was four o'clock, with breakfast at five, after which the labourers went to work and the gentlemen to business, of which they had no little. In the country every unknown face was challenged and examined—if the account given was insufficient, he was brought before the justice; if the village shopkeeper sold bad wares, if the village cobbler made 'unhonest' shoes, if servants and masters quarrelled, all was to be looked to by the justice; there was no fear lest time should hang heavy with him. At twelve he dined; after dinner he went hunting, or to his farm, or to what he pleased.\* It was a life unrefined, perhaps, but coloured with a broad, rosy, English health.

Duties of  
the justices  
of the  
peace.

gether alone at seven. The meal consisted of a quart of ale, a quart of wine, and a chine of beef: a loaf of bread is not mentioned, but we hope it may be presumed. On fast days the beef was exchanged for a dish of sprats or herrings, fresh or salt.—*North-umberland Household Book*, quoted by Hume.

\* Some notion of the style of living sometimes witnessed in England in the old times may be gathered from the details of a feast given at the installation of George Neville, brother of Warwick the King Maker, when made Archbishop of York.

The number of persons present including servants was about 3500.

The provisions were as follow—

Wheat, 300 quarters.

Ale, 300 tuns.

Wine, 104 tuns.

Ipcoras, 1 pipe.

Oxen, 80.

Wild bulls, 6.

Muttons, 1004.

Veal, 300.

Porkers, 300.

Geese, 3000.

Capons, 2300.

Pigs, 2000.

Peacocks, 100.

Cranes, 200.

Kids, 200.

Chickens, 2000.

Pigeons, 4000.

Conies, 4000.

Bitterns, 204.

Mallards and teals, 4000.

Heronshaws, 4000.

Fesants, 200.

Partridges, 500.

Woodcocks, 400.

Plovers, 400.

Curlews, 100.

Quails, 100.

Egrets, 1000.

Of the education of noblemen and gentlemen we have contradictory accounts, as might be expected. The universities were well filled, by the sons of yeomen chiefly. The cost of supporting them at the colleges was little, and wealthy men took a pride in helping forward any boys of promise.\* It seems clear also, as the Reformation drew nearer, while the clergy were sinking lower and lower, a marked change for the better became perceptible in a portion at least of the laity. The more old-fashioned of the higher ranks were slow in moving; for as late as the reign of Edward VI.† there were peers of parliament unable to read; but on the whole, the invention of printing, and the general ferment which was commencing all over the world, had produced marked effects in all classes. Henry VIII. himself spoke four languages, and was well read in theology and history; and the high accomplishments of More and Sir T. Elliott, of Wyatt and Cromwell, were but the extreme expression of a temper which was rapidly spreading, and which gave occasion, among other things, to the following reflection in Erasmus. ‘Oh, strange vicissitudes of human things,’ exclaims he. ‘Heretofore the heart of learning was among such as professed religion. Now, while

CH. I.

Progress of education among the laity.

Invention of printing and spread of cultivation.

Rees, 200.  
Harts, bucks, and roes, 400 and odd.  
Pasties of venison, cold, 4000.  
Pasties of venison, hot, 1506.  
Dishes of jelly, pasted, 1000.  
Plain dishes of jelly, 4000.  
Cold tarts, baked, 4000.  
Cold custards, 4000.

Custards, hot, 2000.  
Pikes, 300.  
Breasts, 300.  
Seals, 8.  
Porpoises, 4.

\* LATIMER'S *Sermons*, p. 64.

† *Statutes of the Realm*,  
1 Ed. VI. cap. 12.

CH. I. they for the most part give themselves up, *ventri luxui pecunieque*, the love of learning is gone from them to secular princes, the court and the

A contrast. nobility. May we not justly be ashamed of ourselves? The feasts of priests and divines are drowned in wine, are filled with scurrilous jests, sound with intemperate noise and tumult, flow with spiteful slanders and defamation of others; while at princes' tables modest disputations are held concerning things which make for learning and piety.'

Education  
of the sons  
of gentle-  
men.

A letter to Thomas Cromwell from his son's tutor will not be without interest on this subject; Cromwell was likely to have been unusually careful in his children's training, and we need not suppose that all boys were brought up as prudently. Sir Peter Carew, for instance, being a boy at about the same time, and giving trouble at the High School at Exeter, was led home to his father's house at Ottery, coupled between two foxhounds.\* Yet the education of Gregory Cromwell is probably not far above what many young men of the middle and higher ranks were beginning to receive. Henry Dowes was the tutor's name, beyond which fact I know nothing of him. His letter is as follows:—

Letter to  
Cromwell  
from his  
son's tutor.

'After that it pleased your mastership to give me in charge, not only to give diligent attendance upon Master Gregory, but also to instruct him with good letters, honest manners, pastyme of instruments, and such other qualities as should be for him meet and convenient, pleaseth it you to

---

\* HOOKER'S *Life of Sir Peter Carew*.

understand that for the accomplishment thereof CH. I.  
 I have endeavoured myself by all ways possible  
 to excogitate how I might most profit him. In  
 which behalf, through his diligence, the success  
 is such as I trust shall be to your good contenta-  
 tion and pleasure, and to his no small profit.  
 But for cause the summer was spent in the ser-  
 vice of the wild gods, [and] it is so much to be  
 regarded after what fashion youth is brought  
 up, in which time that that is learned for the  
 most part will not be wholly forgotten in the  
 older years, I think it my duty to ascertain your  
 mastership how he spendeth his time. And first  
 after he hath heard mass he taketh a lecture of  
 a dialogue of Erasmus' *Colloquies*, called *Pietas*  
*Puerilis*, wherein is described a very picture of  
 one that should be virtuously brought up; and  
 for cause it is so necessary for him, I do not only  
 cause him to read it over, but also to practise the  
 precepts of the same. After this he exerciseth  
 his hand in writing one or two hours, and readeth  
 upon Fabyan's *Chronicle* as long. The residue  
 of the day he doth spend upon the lute and vir-  
 ginals. When he rideth, as he doth very oft, I  
 tell him by the way some history of the Romans  
 or the Greeks, which I cause him to rehearse  
 again in a tale. For his recreation he useth to  
 hawk and hunt and shoot in his long bow, which  
 frameth and succeedeth so well with him that he  
 seemeth to be thereunto given by nature.\*

What boys  
 learnt in  
 the six-  
 teenth cen-  
 tury.

\* In a subsequent letter he is described as learning French, etymology, casting of accounts, playing at weapons, and other such exercises.—ELLIS, third series, vol. i. p. 342-3.



---

CH. I.

I have spoken of the organization of the country population, I have now to speak of that of the towns, of the trading classes and manufacturing classes, the regulations respecting which are no less remarkable and no less illustrative of the national character. If the tendency of trade to assume at last a form of mere self-interest be irresistible, if political economy represent the laws to which in the end it is forced to submit itself, the nation spared no efforts, either of art or policy, to defer to the last moment the unwelcome conclusion.

London  
trading  
companies.

The names and shadows linger about London of certain ancient societies, the members of which may still occasionally be seen in quaint gilt barges pursuing their own difficult way among the swarming steamers; when on certain days, the traditions concerning which are fast dying out of memory, the Fishmongers' Company, the Goldsmiths' Company, the Mercers' Company, make procession down the river for civic feastings at Greenwich or Blackwall. The stately tokens of ancient honour still belong to them, and the remnants of ancient wealth and patronage and power. Their charters may be read by curious antiquaries, and the bills of fare of their ancient entertainments. But for what purpose they were called into being, what there was in these associations of common trades to surround with gilded insignia, and how they came to be possessed of broad lands and church preferments, few people now care to think or to inquire. Trade and traders have no dignity any more in the eyes

of any one, except what money lends to them; CH. I.  
 and these outward symbols scarcely rouse even  
 a passing feeling of curiosity. And yet these  
 companies were once something more than The mean-  
ing of their  
institu-  
tions.  
 names. They are all which now remain of a vast  
 organization which once penetrated the entire  
 trading life of England—an organization set on  
 foot to realize that most necessary, if most diffi-  
 cult, condition of commercial excellence under  
 which man should deal faithfully with his brother,  
 and all wares offered for sale, of whatever kind,  
 should honestly be what they pretend to be.\*  
 I spoke of the military principle which directed  
 the distribution and the arrangements of land.  
 The analogy will best explain a state of things  
 in which every occupation was treated as the  
 division of an army; regiments being quartered  
 in every town, each with its own self-elected Discipline  
of trade.  
 officers, whose duty was to exercise author-  
 ity over all persons professing the business to  
 which they belonged; who were to see that no  
 person undertook to supply articles which he  
 had not been educated to manufacture; who  
 were to determine the prices at which such  
 articles ought justly to be sold; above all, who  
 were to take care that the common people really  
 bought at shops and stalls what they supposed

\* It has been objected that in-  
 asmuch as the Statute Book gives  
 evidence of extensive practices of  
 adulteration, the guild system was  
 useless, nay, it has been even said  
 that it was the cause of the evil.  
*Cessante causâ cessat effectus*;  
 —when the companies lost their

authority, the adulteration ought  
 to have ceased, which in the face  
 of recent exposures will be scarce-  
 ly maintained. It would be as  
 reasonable to say that the police  
 are useless because we have still  
 burglars and pickpockets among  
 us.

CH. I. themselves to be buying; that cloth put up for sale was true cloth, of true texture and full weight: that leather was sound and well tanned; wine pure, measures honest; flour unmixed with devil's dust;—who were generally to look to it that in all contracts between man and man for the supply of man's necessities, what we call honesty of dealing should be truly and faithfully observed.\* An organization for this purpose did once really exist in England,† really trying to do the work which it was intended to do, as half the pages of our early statutes witness. In London, as the metropolis, a central council sate for every branch of trade, and this council was in communication with

Efforts to  
compel  
honest  
dealing.

Metropoli-  
tan and  
provincial  
councils.

\* Throughout the old legislation, morality went along with politics and economics, and formed the life and spirit of them. The fruiterers in the streets were prohibited from selling plums and apples, because the apprentices played dice with them for their wares, or because the temptation induced children and servants to steal money to buy. When Parliament came to be held regularly in London, an order of Council fixed the rates which the hotel-keeper might charge for dinners. Messes were served for four at twopence per head; the bill of fare providing bread, fish, salt and fresh, two courses of meat, ale, with fire and candles. And the care of the Government did not cease with their meals, and in an anxiety that neither the burgesses nor their servants should be led into sin, stringent orders were issued

against street-walkers coming near their quarters.—*Guildhall MSS. Journals* 12 and 15.

The sanitary regulations for the city are peculiarly interesting. The scavengers, constables and officers of the wards were ordered, 'on pain of death,' to see all streets and yards kept clear of dung and rubbish and all other filthy and corrupt things. Carts went round every Monday, Wednesday, and Saturday, to carry off the litter from the houses, and on each of those days twelve buckets of water were drawn for 'every person,' and used in cleaning their rooms and passages.

Particular pains were taken to keep the Thames clean, and at the mouth of every sewer or watercourse there was a strong iron grating two feet deep.—*Guildhall MSS. Journal* 15.

† And not in England alone, but throughout Europe.

the Chancellor and the Crown. It was composed of the highest and most respectable members of the profession, and its office was to determine prices, fix wages, arrange the rules of apprenticeship, and discuss all details connected with the business on which legislation might be required. Further, this council received the reports of the searchers—high officers taken from their own body, whose business was to inspect, in company with the lord mayor or some other city dignitary, the shops of the respective traders; to receive complaints, and to examine into them. In each provincial town local councils sate in connexion with the municipal authorities, who fulfilled in these places the same duties; and their reports being forwarded to the central body, and considered by them, representations on all necessary matters were then made to the privy council; and by the privy council, if requisite, were submitted to parliament. If these representations were judged to require legislative interference, the statutes which were passed in consequence were returned through the Chancellor to the mayors of the various towns and cities, by whom they were proclaimed as law. No person was allowed to open a trade or to commence a manufacture, either in London or the provinces, unless he had first served his apprenticeship; unless he could prove to the satisfaction of the authorities that he was competent in his craft; and unless he submitted as a matter of course to their supervision. The legislature had undertaken not to let that in-

CH. I.

---

The searchers and their duties.

CH. I. dispensable task go wholly unattempted, of distributing the various functions of society by the rule of capacity; of compelling every man to do his duty in an honest following of his proper calling, securing to him that he in his turn should not be injured by his neighbour's misdoings.

The right  
to labour.

Compul-  
sory educa-  
tion of the  
children of  
the poor.

The state further promising for itself that all able-bodied men should be found in work,\* and not allowing any man to work at a business for which he was unfit, insisted as its natural right that children should not be allowed to grow up in idleness, to be returned at mature age upon its hands. Every child, so far as possible, was to be trained up in some business or calling,† idleness 'being the mother of all sin,' and the essential duty of every man being to provide honestly for himself and his family. The educative theory, for such it was, was simple but effective: it was based on the single principle that, next to the knowledge of a man's duty to God, and as a means towards doing that duty, the first condition of a worthy life was the ability to maintain it in independence. Varieties of inapplicable knowledge might be good, but they were not essential; such knowledge might be left to the leisure of after years, or it might be dispensed with without vital injury. Ability to labour could not be dispensed with, and this, therefore, the state felt it to be its own duty to see provided; so reaching, I cannot but think, the heart of the whole matter. The children of those who could afford

\* 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 25.

† Ibid.

the small entrance fees were apprenticed to trades, CH. I.  
the rest were apprenticed to agriculture; and if  
children were found growing up idle, and their fathers or their friends failed to prove that they were able to secure them an ultimate maintenance, the mayors in towns and the magistrates in the country had authority to take possession of such children, and apprentice them as they saw fit, that when they grew up 'they might not be driven' by want or incapacity 'to dishonest courses.'\*

The apprenticeship system.

Such is an outline of the organization of English society under the Plantagenets and Tudors. A detail of the working of the trade laws would be beyond my present purpose. It is obvious that such laws could be enforced only under circumstances when production and population remained (as I said before) nearly stationary; and it would be madness to attempt to apply them to the changed condition of the present. It would be well if some competent person would make these laws the subject of a special treatise. I will run the risk, however, of wearying the reader with two or three illustrative statutes, which I have chosen, not as being more significant than many others, but as specimens merely of the discipline under which, for centuries, the trade and manufactures of England contrived to move; showing on one side the good which the system effected, on the other the inevitable evils under which it finally sank.

The sixteenth century not an available model for the nineteenth.

---

\* 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 25.

## CH. I.

The first which I shall quote concerns simply the sale of specific goods and the means by which tradesmen were prevented from enhancing prices. The Act is the 6th of the 24th of Henry VIII., and concerns the sale of wines, the statute prices of which I have already mentioned.

Act concerning the sale of wines.

‘Because,’ says this Act, ‘that divers merchants inhabiting within the city of London have of late not only presumed to bargain and sell in gross to divers of the king’s subjects great quantities of wines of Gascony, Guienne, and French wines, some for five pounds per tonne, some for more and some for less, and so after the rate of excessive prices contrary to the effect of a good and laudable statute lately made in this present parliament; that is to say, contrary to and above the prices thereof set by the Right Honourable the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treasurer, Lord President of the King’s most honourable Council, Lord Privy Seal, and the two Chief Justices of either bench, whereby they be fallen into the penalties limited by the said statute; as by due proof made by examination taken is well known—but also having in their hands great abundance of wine, by them acquired and bought to be sold, obstinately and maliciously, since their said attemptate and defaults proved, have refused to bargain and sell to many of the king’s subjects any of their said wines remaining and being in their hands; purposing and intending thereby their own singular and unreasonable lucre and profits, to have larger and higher prices of their said wines, to be set according to their insatiable appetites and minds;

Covetous persons having wines for sale,

Yet waiting for a rise of price, and therefore refusing to sell,

it is therefore ordained and enacted, by authority of this present parliament, that every merchant now having, or which shall hereafter have, wines to be sold, and refusing to sell or deliver, or not selling and delivering any of the said wines for ready money therefore to be paid, according to the price or prices thereof being set, shall forfeit and lose the value of the wine so required to be bought.

Held guilty of misdemeanour.

. . . . For due execution of which provision, and for the relief of the king's subjects, it shall be lawful to all and singular justices of the peace, mayors, bailiffs, and other head officers in shires, cities, boroughs, towns, &c., at the request of any person to whom the said merchant or merchants have refused to sell, to enter into the cellars and other places where such wines shall lie or be, and to sell and deliver the same wine or wines desired to be bought to the person or persons requiring to buy the same; taking of the buyer of the wine so sold to the use and satisfaction of the proprietor aforesaid, according to the prices determined by the law.'

The civil functionaries may seize all such wines, and sell them at statute price.

The next which I select is the eleventh of the second and third of Philip and Mary; and falling in the midst of the smoke of the Smithfield fires, and the cruelties of that melancholy time, it shines like a fair gleam of humanity, which will not lose anything of its lustre because the evils against which it contends have in our times, also, furnished matter for sorrow and calamity—calamity which we unhappily have been unable even to attempt to remedy. It is termed 'An Act touching Weavers,' and runs:



## CH. I.

Act touch-  
ing wea-  
vera,  
2 and 3 of  
Philip and  
Mary, c. 11.

Monopoly  
of looms by  
capitalists.

Sufferings  
of the  
workmen.

The mono-  
poly prohi-  
bited.

‘Forasmuch as the weavers of this realm have, as well at this present parliament as at divers other times, complained that the rich and wealthy clothiers do in many ways oppress them—some by setting up and keeping in their houses divers looms, and keeping and maintaining them by journeymen and persons unskilful, to the decay of a great number of artificers which were brought up in the said science of weaving, with their families and their households—some by engrossing of looms into their hands and possession, and letting them out at such unreasonable rents, as the poor artificers are not able to maintain themselves, much less to maintain their wives, families, and children—some also by giving much less wages and hire for weaving and workmanship than in times past they did, whereby they are enforced utterly to forsake their art and occupation wherein they have been brought up; It is, therefore, for remedy of the premises, and for the avoiding of a great number of inconveniences which may grow if in time it be not foreseen, ordained and enacted by authority of this present parliament, that no person using the feat or mystery of cloth-making, and dwelling out of a city, borough, market-town, or corporate town, shall keep, or retain, or have in his or their houses or possession, any more than one woollen loom at a time; nor shall by any means, directly or indirectly, receive or take any manner of profit, gain, or commodity, by letting or setting any loom, or any house wherein any loom is or shall be used or occupied, which shall be together by

him set or let, upon pain of forfeiture for every week that any person shall do the contrary to the tenor and true meaning hereof, twenty shillings.' CH. I.

A provision then follows, limiting weavers living in towns to two looms—the plain intention being to prevent the cloth manufacture from falling into the power of large capitalists employing ‘hands;’ and to enable as many persons as possible to earn all in their own homes their own separate independent living. I suppose that the parliament was aware that by pursuing this policy the cost of production was something increased; that cloth was thus made dearer than it would have been if trade had been left to follow its own course. It considered, however, that the loss was compensated to the nation by retaining its people in the condition not of ‘hands,’ but of men; by rendering them independent of masters, who only sought to make their own advantage at the expense of labour; and enabling them to continue to maintain themselves in manly freedom.

Human beings not to be treated as ‘hands.’

The weak point of all such provisions did not lie, I think, in the economic aspect of them, but in a far deeper difficulty. The details of trade legislation, it is obvious, could only be determined by persons professionally conversant with those details; and the indispensable condition of success with such legislation is, that it be conducted under the highest sense of the obligations of honesty.

Inherent weakness of the system of interference.

No laws are of any service which are above the working level of public morality; and the deeper they are carried down into life, the larger become the opportunities of evasion. That the system

No system can be worked which is above the level of common morality.

CH. I. succeeded for centuries is evident from the organization of the companies remaining so long in its vitality; but the efficiency of this organization for the maintenance of fair dealing could exist only so long as the companies themselves—their wardens and their other officials, who alone, *quisque in suâ arte*, were competent to judge what was right and what was wrong—could be trusted, at the same time being interested parties, to give a disinterested judgment. The largeness of the power inevitably committed to the councils was at once a temptation and an opportunity to abuse those powers; and slowly through the statute book we find the traces of the poison as it crept in and in. Already in the 24th of Henry VIII., we meet with complaints in the leather trade of the fraudulent conduct of the searchers, whose duty was to affix their seal upon leather ascertained to be sound, before it was exposed for sale, ‘which mark or print, for corruption and lucre, is commonly set and put by such as take upon them the search and sealing, as well upon leather insufficiently tanned, as upon leather well tanned, to the great deceit of the buyers thereof.’ About the same time, the ‘craft wardens’ of the various fellowships, ‘out of sinister mind and purpose,’ were levying excessive fees on the admission of apprentices; and when parliament interfered to bring them to order, they ‘compassed and practised by cautill and subtle means to delude the good and wholesome statutes passed for remedy.’\* The old proverb, *Quis*

Frauds of  
searchers.

Oppression  
of appren-  
tices.

---

\* 22 Hen. VIII. cap. 4; 28 Hen. VIII. cap. 5.

*custodiat custodes*, had begun to verify itself, and the symptom was a fatal one. These evils, for the first half of the century, remained within compass; but as we pass on we find them increasing steadily. In the 7th and the 8th of Elizabeth, there are indications of the truck system; and towards her later years, the multiplying statutes and growing complaints and difficulties show plainly that the companies had lost their healthy vitality, and, with other relics of feudalism, were fast taking themselves away. There were no longer tradesmen to be found in sufficient numbers who were possessed of the necessary probity; and it is impossible not to connect such a phenomenon with the deep melancholy which in those years settled down on Elizabeth herself.

CH. I.

Decline and  
fall of trad-  
ing virtue.

For, indeed, a change was coming upon the world, the meaning and direction of which even still is hidden from us, a change from era to era. The paths trodden by the footsteps of ages were broken up; old things were passing away, and the faith and the life of ten centuries were dissolving like a dream. Chivalry was dying; the abbey and the castle were soon together to crumble into ruins; and all the forms, desires, beliefs, convictions of the old world were passing away, never to return. A new continent had risen up beyond the western sea. The floor of heaven, inlaid with stars, had sunk back into an infinite abyss of immeasurable space; and the firm earth itself, unfixed from its foundations, was seen to be but a small atom in the awful vastness

CH. I. of the universe. In the fabric of habit in which they had so laboriously built for themselves, mankind were to remain no longer.

And now it is all gone—like an unsubstantial pageant faded; and between us and the old English there lies a gulf of mystery which the prose of the historian will never adequately bridge. They cannot come to us, and our imagination can but feebly penetrate to them. Only among the aisles of the cathedral, only as we gaze upon their silent figures sleeping on their tombs, some faint conceptions float before us of what these men were when they were alive; and perhaps in the sound of church bells, that peculiar creation of mediæval age, which falls upon the ear like the echo of a vanished world.

Purpose of  
this book.

The transition out of this old state is what in this book I have undertaken to relate. As yet there were uneasy workings below the surface; but the crust was unbroken, and the nation remained outwardly unchanged as it had been for centuries. I have still some few features to add to my description.

Every Eng-  
lishman a  
trained  
soldier.

Nothing, I think, proves more surely the mutual confidence which held together the government and the people, than the fact that all classes were armed. Every man, as I have already said, was a soldier; and every man was ready equipped at all times with the arms which corresponded to his rank. By the great statute of Winchester,\* which was repeated and expanded

---

\* *Statut. Winton.* 13 Edw. I. cap. 6.

on many occasions in the after reigns, it was enacted, 'That every man have harness in his house to keep the peace after the antient assise—that is to say, every man between fifteen years of age and sixty years shall be assessed and sworn to armour according to the quantity of his lands and goods—that is, to wit, for fifteen pounds lands and forty marks goods, a hauberke, a helmet of iron, a sword, a dagger, and a horse. For ten pounds of lands and twenty marks goods, a hauberke, a helmet, a sword, and a dagger. For five pounds lands, a doublet, a helmet of iron, a sword, and a dagger. For forty shillings lands, a sword, a bow and arrows, and a dagger. And all others that may shall have bows and arrows. Review of armour shall be made every year two times, by two constables for every hundred and franchise thereunto appointed; and the constables shall present, to justices assigned for that purpose, such defaults as they do find.'

CH. I.  
Statute of  
Winches-  
ter.

As the archery was more developed, and the bow became the peculiar weapon of the English, regular practice was ordered, and shooting became at once the drill and the amusement of the people. Every hamlet had its pair of butts; and on Sundays and holidays\* all able-bodied men were required to appear in the field, to employ their leisure hours 'as valyant Englishmen ought to do,' 'utterly leaving the play at the bowls, quoits, dice, kails, and other unthrifty games;' magistrates, mayors, and bailiffs being

Practice in  
archery en-  
joined by  
statute.

---

\* 12 Rich. II. cap. 6: 11 Hen. IV. cap. 4.

CH. I. responsible for their obedience, under penalty, if these officers neglected their duty, of a fine of twenty shillings for each offence. On the same days, the tilt-yard at the Hall or Castle was thrown open, and the young men of rank amused themselves with similar exercises. Fighting, or mock fighting—and the imitation was not unlike the reality—was at once the highest enjoyment and the noblest accomplishment of all ranks in the state; and over that most terrible of human occupations they had flung the enchanted halo of chivalry, decorating it with all the fairest graces, and consecrating it with the most heroic aspirations.

The chivalry, with much else, was often perhaps something ideal. In the wars of the Roses it had turned into mere savage ferocity; and in forty years of carnage the fighting propensities had glutted themselves. A reaction followed, and in the early years of Henry VIII. the statutes were growing obsolete, and the 'unlawful games' rising again into favour. The younger nobles, or some among them, were shrinking from the tilt-yard, and were backward on occasions even when required for war. Lord Surrey, when waiting on the Border, expecting the Duke of Albany to invade the northern counties, in 1523, complained of the growing 'slowness' of the young lords 'to be at such journeys,'\* and of their 'inclination to dancing, carding, and dicing.'

The statute  
falls into  
abeyance.

The people had followed the example, and were

---

\* ELLIS'S *Original Letters*, first series, vol. i. p. 226.

falling out of archery practice, exchanging it for similar amusements. Henry VIII., in his earlier days an Englishman after the old type, set himself resolutely to oppose these downward tendencies, and to brace again the slackened sinews of the nation. In his own person he was the best rider, the best lance, and the best archer in England; and while a boy he was dreaming of fresh Agincourts, and even of fresh crusades. In 1511, when he had been king only three years, parliament re-enacted the Winchester statute, with new and remarkable provisions; and twice subsequently in the course of his reign he returned back upon the subject, insisting upon it with increasing stringency. The language of the Act of 1511 is not a little striking. 'The King's Highness,' so the words run, 'calling to his gracious remembrance that by the feats and exercise of the subjects of his realm in shooting in long bows, there had continually grown and been within the same great numbers and multitudes of good archers, which hath not only defended the realm and the subjects thereof against the cruel malice and dangers of their enemies in times heretofore past, but also, with little numbers and puissance in regard of their opposites, have done many notable acts and discomfitures of war against the infidels and others; and furthermore reduced divers regions and countries to their due obeysance, to the great honour, fame, and surety of this realm and subjects, and to the terrible dread and fear of all strange nations, anything to attempt or do to the hurt or damage of

It is re-enacted with more stringent provisions under Henry VIII.



CH. I. them : Yet nevertheless that archery and shooting in long bows is but little used, but daily does minish and decay, and abate more and more; for that much part of the commonalty and poor people of this realm, whereby of old time the great number and substance of archers had grown and multiplied, be not of power nor ability to buy them long bows of yew to exercise shooting in the same, and to sustain the continual charge thereof; and also because, by means and occasions of customable usage of tennis play, bowles, claish, and other unlawful games, prohibited by many good and beneficent statutes, much impoverishment hath ensued : Wherefore, the King's Highness, of his great wisdom and providence, and also for zeal to the public weal, surety, and defence of this his realm, and the antient fame in this behalf to be revived, by the assent of his Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and his Commons

Every English lay-man, except the judges of the bench and barons of the exchequer, shall practise shooting,

From the age of seven years and upwards.

in this present parliament assembled, hath enacted and established that the statute of Winchester for archers be put in due execution; and over that, that every man being the king's subject, not lame, decrepit, or maimed, being within the age of sixty years, except spiritual men, justices of the one bench and of the other, justices of the assize, and barons of the exchequer, do use and exercise shooting in long bows, and also do have a bow and arrows ready continually in his house, to use himself in shooting. And that every man having a man child or men children in his house, shall provide for all such, being of the age of seven years and above, and till they shall come to the

age of seventeen years, a bow and two shafts, to learn them and bring them up in shooting; and after such young men shall come to the age of seventeen years, every of them shall provide and have a bow and four arrows continually for himself, at his proper costs and charges, or else of the gift and provision of his friends, and shall use the same as afore is rehearsed.' Other provisions are added, designed to suppress the games complained of, and to place the bows more within the reach of the poor, by cheapening the prices of them.

The same statute\* (and if this be a proof that it had imperfectly succeeded, it is a proof also of Henry's confidence in the general attachment of his subjects) was re-enacted thirty years later, at the crisis of the Reformation, when the northern counties were fermenting in a half-suppressed rebellion, and the catholics at home and abroad were intriguing to bring about a revolution. In this subsequent edition of it† some particulars are added which demand notice. In the directions to the villages for the maintaining each 'a pair of buttes,' it is ordered that no person above the age of twenty-four shall shoot with the light flight arrow at a distance under two hundred and twenty yards. Up to two hundred and twenty yards, therefore, the heavy war arrow was used,

Every village shall provide a pair of buttes.

\* It has been stated again and again that the policy of Henry the Eighth was to make the crown despotic by destroying the remnants of the feudal power of the nobility. How is such a theory to be reconciled with statutes the only object of which was the

arming and training of the country population, whose natural leaders were the peers, knights, and gentlemen? We have heard too much of this random declamation.

† 33 Hen. VIII. cap. 9.

CH. I. and this is to be taken as the effective range for fighting purposes of the old archery.\* No mea-

The social advantages which resulted from the arming of the people.

asures could have been invented more effective than this vigorous arming to repress the self-seeking tendencies in the mercantile classes which I have mentioned as beginning to show themselves. Capital supported by force may make its own terms with labour; but capital lying between a king on one side resolved to prevent oppression, and a people on the other side in full condition to resist, felt even prudence dictate moderation, and reserved itself for a more convenient season.

Looking, therefore, at the state of England as a whole, I cannot doubt that under Henry the body of the people were prosperous, well-fed, loyal, and contented. In all points of material comfort they were as well off as they had ever been before; better off than they have ever been in later times.

- 
- \* From my experience of modern archery I found difficulty in believing that these figures were accurately given. Few living men could send the lightest arrow 220 yards, even with the greatest elevation, and for effective use it must be delivered nearly point blank. A passage in HOLINSHED'S *Description of Britain*, however, prevents me from doubting that the words of the statute are correct. In his own time, he says that the strength of the English archers had so notoriously declined that the French soldiers were in the

habit of disrespectfully turning their backs, at long range, 'bidding them shoot,' whereas, says Holinshed, 'had the archers been what they were wont to be, these fellows would have had their breeches nailed unto their buttocks.' In an order for bowstaves, in the reign of Henry the Eighth, I find this direction: 'Each bowstave ought to be *three fingers thick* and squared, and *seven feet long*; to be got up well polished and without knots.' — Butler to Bullinger: *Zurich Letters*.

Their amusements, as prescribed by statute, consisted in training themselves as soldiers. In the prohibitions of the statutes we see also what their amusements were inclined to be. But besides 'the bowles and the claish,' field sports, fishing, shooting, hunting, were the delight of every one, and although the forest laws were terrible, they served only to enhance the excitement by danger. Then, as now, no English peasant could be convinced that there was any moral crime in appropriating the wild game. It was an offence against statute law, but no offence against natural law; and it was rather a trial of skill between the noble who sought to monopolize a right which seemed to be common to all, and those who would succeed, if they could, in securing their own share of it. The Robin Hood ballads reflect the popular feeling and breathe the warm genial spirit of the old greenwood adventurers. If deer-stealing was a sin, it was more than compensated by the risk of the penalty to which those who failed submitted, when no other choice was left. They did not always submit, as the old northern poem shows of *Adam Bell, Clym of the Clough, and William of Cloudislee*, with its most immoral moral; yet I suppose there was never pedant who could resist the spell of those ringing lines, or refuse with all his heart to wish the rogues success, and confusion to the honest men.

CH. I.

The forest laws, and the English view of them.

But the English peasantry had pleasures of less ambiguous propriety, and less likely to mislead our sympathies. The chroniclers have given

English taste for the drama.

CH. I. us many accounts of the masques and plays which were acted in the court, or in the castles of the noblemen. Such pageants were but the most splendid expression of a taste which was national and universal. As in ancient Greece, generations before the rise of the great dramas of Athens, itinerant companies wandered from village to village, carrying their stage furniture in their little carts, and acted in their booths and tents the grand stories of the mythology; so in Eng-  
The mys-  
tery plays.land the mystery players haunted the wakes and fairs, and in barns or taverns, taprooms, or in the farmhouse kitchen, played at saints and angels, and transacted on their petty stage the drama of the Christian faith. To us, who can measure the effect of such scenes only by the impression which they would now produce upon ourselves, these exhibitions can seem but unspeakably profane; they were not profane when tendered in simplicity, and received as they were given. They were no more profane than those quaint monastic illuminations which formed the germ of Italian art; and as out of the illuminations arose those paintings which remain unapproached and unapproachable in their excellence, so out of the mystery plays arose the English drama, represented in its final completeness by the creations of a poet who, it now begins to be supposed, stands alone among mankind. We allow ourselves to think of Shakspeare or of Raphael or of Phidias, as having accomplished their work by the power of their own individual genius; but greatness like theirs is never more than the highest degree of

an excellence which prevails widely round it, and forms the environment in which it grows. No single mind in single contact with the facts of nature could have created out of itself a Pallas, a Madonna, or a Lear; such vast conceptions are the growth of ages, the creations of a nation's spirit; and artist and poet, filled full with the power of that spirit, have but given them form, and nothing more than form. Nor would the form itself have been attainable by any isolated talent. No genius can dispense with experience; the aberrations of power, unguided or ill-guided, are ever in proportion to its intensity, and life is not long enough to recover from inevitable mistakes. Noble conceptions already existing, and a noble school of execution which will launch mind and hand at once upon their true courses, are indispensable to transcendent excellence; and Shakspeare's plays were as much the offspring of the long generations who had pioneered his road for him, as the discoveries of Newton were the offspring of those of Copernicus.

No great general ever arose out of a nation of cowards; no great statesman or philosopher out of a nation of fools; no great artist out of a nation of materialists; no great dramatist except when the drama was the passion of the people.

Acting was the especial amusement of the English, from the palace to the village green. It was the result and expression of their power over themselves, and power over circumstances. They were troubled with no subjective speculations; no social problems vexed them with which they

All great nations are dramatic, because life is simple to them.

CH. I. were unable to deal; and in the exuberance of vigour and spirits they were able, in the strict and literal sense of the word, to play with the

Progress of the art. materials of life. The mystery plays came first; next the popular legends; and then the great

The Warwickshire hamlets.

figures of English history came out upon the stage, or stories from Greek and Roman writers; or sometimes it was an extemporized allegory. Shakspeare himself has left us many pictures of the village drama. Doubtless he had seen many a Bottom in the old Warwickshire hamlets; many a Sir Nathaniel playing 'Alissander,' and finding himself 'a little o'erparted.' He had been with Snug the joiner, Quince the carpenter, and Flute the bellows-mender, when a boy we will not question, and acted with them, and written their parts for them; had gone up with them in the winter's evenings to the Lucy's Hall before the sad trouble with the deer-stealing; and afterwards, when he came to London and found his way into great society, he had not failed to see

Polonius.

Polonius burlesquing Cæsar on the stage, as in his proper person Polonius burlesqued Sir William Cecil. The strolling players in *Hamlet* might be met at every country wake or festival; it was the direction in which the especial genius of the people delighted to revel. As I desire in this chapter not only to relate what were the habits of the people, but to illustrate them also, within such compass as I can allow myself, I shall transcribe out of Hall\* a description of a

---

\* Page 735, quarto edition.

play which was acted by the boys of St. Paul's School, in 1527, at Greenwich, adding some particulars, not mentioned by Hall, from another source.\* It is a good instance of the fantastic splendour with which exhibitions of this kind were got up, and it possesses also a melancholy interest of another kind, as showing how little the wisest among us can foresee our own actions, or assure ourselves that the convictions of to-day will alike be the convictions of to-morrow. The occasion was the despatch of a French embassy to England, when Europe was outraged by the Duke of Bourbon's capture of Rome, when the children of Francis I. were prisoners in Spain, and Henry, with the full energy of his fiery nature, was flinging himself into a quarrel with Charles V. as the champion of the Holy See.

At the conclusion of a magnificent supper 'the king led the ambassadors into the great chamber of disguising; and in the end of the same chamber was a fountain, and on one side was a hawthorne tree, all of silk, with white flowers, and on the other side was a mulberry tree full of fair berries, all of silk. On the top of the hawthorne were the arms of England, compassed with the collar of the order† of St. Michael, and in the top of the mulberry tree stood the arms of France within a garter. The fountain was all of white marble, graven and chased; the bases of the

Scene at  
Greenwich  
in 1527.

---

\* The Personages, Dresses, and Properties of a Mystery Play, acted at Greenwich, by command of Henry VIII. *Rolls House MS.*

† Hall says 'collar of the *garter* of St. Michael,' which, however, I venture to correct.



CH. I. same were balls of gold, supported by ramping  
beasts wound in leaves of gold. In the first work  
were gargoyles of gold, fiercely faced with spouts  
running. The second receipt of this fountain was  
environed with winged serpents, all of gold, which  
griped it; and on the summit of the same was a  
fair lady, out of whose breasts ran abundantly  
water of marvellous delicious savour. About  
this fountain were benches of rosemary, fretted in  
braydes laid on gold, all the sides set with roses,  
on branches as they were growing about this  
fountain. On the benches sate eight fair ladies  
in strange attire, and so richly apparelled in cloth  
of gold, embroidered and cut over silver, that I  
cannot express the cunning workmanship thereof.

November,  
A.D. 1527.

Then when the king and queen were set, there  
was played before them, by children, in the Latin  
tongue, a manner of tragedy, the effect whereof  
was that the pope was in captivity and the church  
brought under foot. Whereupon St. Peter ap-  
peared and put the cardinal (Wolsey) in authority  
to bring the pope to his liberty, and to set up the  
church again. And so the cardinal made inter-  
cession with the kings of England and France  
that they took part together, and by their means  
the pope was delivered. Then in came the French  
king's children, and complained to the cardinal  
how the emperour kept them as hostages, and  
would not come to reasonable point with their  
father, whereupon they desired the cardinal to  
help for their deliverance; which wrought so with  
the king his master and the French king that he  
brought the emperour to a peace, and caused the

two young princes to be delivered.' So far Hall CH. I.  
relates the scene, but there was more in the play  
than he remembered or cared to notice, and I am  
able to complete this curious picture of a pageant  
once really and truly a living spectacle in the old  
palace at Greenwich, by an inventory of the dresses  
worn by the boys and a list of the *dramatis per-*  
*sonæ.*

The school-boys of St. Paul's were taken The boys of  
St. Paul's  
School.  
down the river with the master in six boats, at  
the cost of a shilling a boat—the cost of the  
dresses and the other expenses amounting in all  
to sixty-one shillings.

The characters were—

An orator in apparel of cloth of gold.

Religio, Ecclesia, Veritas, like three widows, November,  
1527.  
in garments of silk, and suits of lawn and cyprus.

Heresy and False Interpretation, like sisters  
of Bohemia, apparelled in silk of divers colours.

The heretic Luther, like a party friar, in rus-  
set damask and black taffety.

Luther's wife, like a frow of Spiers in Almayn,  
in red silk.

Peter, Paul, and James, in habits of white  
sarsnet, and three red mantles, and lace of silver  
and damask, and pelisses of scarlet.

A Cardinal in his apparel.

Two Sergeants in rich apparel.

The Dolphin and his brother in coats of velvet  
embroidered with gold, and capes of satin bound  
with velvet.

A Messenger in tinsel satin.

Six men in gowns of grey sarsnet.

CH. I.  

---

Six women in gowns of crimson velvet.  
 War, in rich cloth of gold and feathers, armed.  
 Three Almeyns, in apparel all cut and holed  
 in silk.  
 Lady Peace in lady's apparel white and rich.  
 Lady Quietness and Dame Tranquillity richly  
 beseen in lady's apparel.

November,  
 1530.

It is a strange world. This was in November, 1527. In November, 1530, but three brief years after, Wolsey lay dying in misery, a disgraced man, at Leicester Abbey; 'the Pope's Holiness' was fast becoming in English eyes plain Bishop of Rome, held guilty towards this realm of unnumbered enormities, and all England was sweeping with immeasurable velocity towards the heretic Luther. So history repeats the lesson to us, not to boast ourselves of the morrow, for we know not what a day may bring forth.

Before I conclude this survey, it remains for me to say something of the position of the poor, and of the measures which were taken for the solution of that most difficult of all problems, the distinguishing the truly deserving from the worthless and the vagabond. The subject is one to which in the progress of this work I shall have more than one occasion to return; but inasmuch as a sentimental opinion prevails that an increase of poverty and the consequent enactment of poor-laws was the result of the suppression of the religious houses, and that adequate relief had been previously furnished by these establishments, it is necessary to say a few words for the removal

The dissolution of the monasteries not the cause of pauperism.

of an impression which is as near as possible the reverse of the truth. I do not doubt that for many centuries these houses fulfilled honestly the intentions with which they were established; but as early as the reign of Richard II. it was found necessary to provide some other means for the support of the aged and impotent; the monasteries not only having then begun to neglect their duty; but by the appropriation of benefices having actually deprived the parishes of their local and independent means of charity.\* Licences to beg were at that time granted to deserving persons; and it is noticeable that this measure was in a few years followed by the petition to Henry IV. for the secularization of ecclesiastical property.† Thus early in our history had the regular clergy forgotten the nature of their mission, and the object for which the administration of the nation's charities had been committed to them. Thus early, while their houses were the nurseries of dishonest mendicancy,‡ they had surrendered to lay compassion, those who ought to have been their especial care. I shall unhappily have occasion hereafter to illustrate these matters in detail. I mention them in this place only in order to dissipate at once a foolish dream. At the opening of the sixteenth century, before the suppression of the monasteries had suggested itself in a practical form, pauperism was a state question of

CH. I.

Growth of  
it in Eng-  
land.

---

\* Rich. II. 12, cap. 7, 8, 9; Rich. II. 15, cap. 6.

† *Lunsdowne MSS.* 1, fol. 26.

‡ *Injunctions to the Monasteries: BURNET's Collect.* pp. 77-8.

CH. I. great difficulty, and as such I have at present to consider it.

The sin of idleness.

For the able-bodied vagrant, it is well known that the old English laws had no mercy. When wages are low, and population has outgrown the work which can be provided for it, idleness may be involuntary and innocent; at a time when all industrious men could maintain themselves in comfort and prosperity, 'when a fair day's wages for a fair day's work' was really and truly the law of the land, it was presumed that if strong capable men preferred to wander about the country, and live upon the labour of others, mendicancy was not the only crime of which they were likely to be guilty; while idleness itself was justly looked upon as a high offence, and misdemeanour. The penalty of God's laws against idleness, as expressed in the system of nature, was starvation; and it was held intolerable that any man should be allowed to escape a divine judgment by begging under false pretences, and robbing others of their honest earnings.

Severe acts against vagrancy a necessary correlation of hospitality.

In a country also the boast of which was its open-handed hospitality, it was necessary to take care that hospitality was not brought to discredit by abuse; and when every door was freely opened to a request for a meal or a night's lodging, there was an imperative duty to keep a strict eye on whatever persons were on the move. We shall therefore be prepared to find 'sturdy and valiant beggars' treated with summary justice as criminals of a high order; the right of a government so to treat them being proportioned to the facili-

ties with which the honestly disposed can maintain themselves. CH. 1.

It might have been expected, on the other hand, that when wages were so high, and work so constant, labourers would have been left to themselves to make provision against sickness and old age. To modern ways of thinking on these subjects, there would have seemed no hardship in so leaving them; and their sufferings, if they had suffered, would have appeared but as a deserved retribution. This, however, was not the temper of earlier times. Charity has ever been the especial virtue of Catholic States, and the aged and the impotent were always held to be the legitimate objects of it. Men who had worked hard while they were able to work were treated like decayed soldiers, as the discharged pensionaries of society; they were held entitled to wear out their age (under restrictions) at the expense of others; and so readily did society acquiesce in this aspect of its obligations, that on the failure of the monasteries to do their duty, it was still sufficient to leave such persons to voluntary liberality, and legislation had to interfere only to direct such liberality into its legitimate channels. In the 23rd of Edw. III. cap. 7, a prohibition was issued against giving alms to 'valiant beggars,' and this proving inadequate, and charity being still given indiscriminately, in the twelfth year of Richard II. the system of licences was introduced, and a pair of stocks was erected by order in every town or village, to 'justify' persons begging unpermitted. The monasteries growing more

Age and  
impotence  
recognised  
as giving a  
claim upon  
society.

The justifi-  
cation of  
'valiant  
beggars.'

CH. I. and more careless, the number of paupers continued to multiply, and this method received successive expansions, till at length, when the Reformation was concluded, it terminated, after many changes of form, in the famous Act of Elizabeth. We can thus trace our poor law in the whole course of its growth, and into two stages through which it passed I must enter with some minuteness. The 12th of the 22nd of Henry VIII., and the 25th of the 27th, are so remarkable in their tone, and so rich in their detail, as to furnish a complete exposition of English thought at that time upon the subject; while the second of these two acts, and probably the first also, has a further interest for us, as being the composition of Henry himself, and the most finished which he has left to us.\*

Acts of  
Hen. VIII.

Act of 1531.  
Complaint  
of the in-  
crease of  
vagrancy.

‘Whereas,’ says the former of these two Acts, ‘in all places throughout this realm of England, vagabonds and beggars have of long time increased, and daily do increase in great and excessive numbers, by the occasion of idleness, mother and root of all vices; whereby hath insurged and sprung, and daily insurgeth and springeth, continual thefts, murders, and other heinous offences and great enormities, to the high displeasure of God, the inquietation and damage of the king’s people, and to the marvellous disturbance of the common weal of this realm; and whereas, strait statutes and ordinances have been before

---

\* Letter of Thomas Dorset to the Mayor of Plymouth: *Suppression of the Monasteries*, p. 36.

this time devised and made, as well by the king our sovereign lord, as also by divers his most noble progenitors, kings of England, for the most necessary and due reformation of the premises; yet that notwithstanding, the said number of vagabonds and beggars be not seen in any part to be diminished, but rather daily augmented and increased into great routs or companies, as evidently and manifestly it doth and may appear:

Be it therefore enacted by the king our sovereign lord, and by the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons, in this present parliament assembled, that the justices of the peace of all and singular the shires of England within the limits of their commission, and all other justices of the peace, mayors, sheriffs, bailiffs, and other officers of every city, borough, or franchise, shall from time to time, as often as need shall require, make diligent search and inquiry of all aged, poor, and impotent persons, which live, or of necessity be compelled to live by alms of the charity of the people; and such search made, the said officers, every of them within the limits of their authorities, shall have power, at their discretions, to enable to beg within such limits as they shall appoint, such of the said impotent persons as they shall think convenient; and to give in commandment to every such impotent beggar (by them enabled) that none of them shall beg without the limits so appointed to them. And further, they shall deliver to every such person so enabled a letter containing the name of that person, witnessing that he is

Justices of the peace shall make search in all parishes and districts for the discovery and classifying of the deserving poor.

Licences to beg shall be granted to them.



**CH. I.** authorized to beg, and the limits within which he is appointed to beg, the same letter to be sealed with the seal of the hundred, rape, wapentake, city, or borough, and subscribed with the name of one of the said justices or officers aforesaid.

Punish-  
ment of  
persons  
begging be-  
yond the  
limits ap-  
pointed  
them.

And if any such impotent person do beg in any other place than within such limits, then the justices of the peace, and all other the king's officers and ministers, shall by their discretions punish all such persons by imprisonment in the stocks, by the space of two days and two nights, giving them only bread and water.'

Punish-  
ment of  
persons  
begging  
without  
licence.

Further, 'If any such impotent person be found begging without a licence, at the discretion of the justices of the peace, he shall be stripped naked from the middle upwards, and whipped within the town in which he be found, or within some other town, as it shall seem good. Or if it be not convenient so to punish him, he shall be set in the stocks by the space of three days and three nights.'

Such were the restrictions under which impotency was allowed support. Though not in itself treated as an offence, and though its right to maintenance by society was not denied, it was not indulged, as we may see, with unnecessary encouragement. The Act then proceeds to deal with the genuine vagrant.

Sturdy and  
valiant  
beggars to  
be whipped  
at the cart's  
tail,

'And be it further enacted, that if any person or persons, being whole and mighty in body and able to labour, be taken in begging in any part of this realm; and if any man or woman, being whole and mighty in body, having no land, nor

master, nor using any lawful merchandry, craft, CH 1.  
or mystery whereby he might get his living, be

vagrant, and can give none account how he doth lawfully get his living, then it shall be lawful to the constables and all other king's officers, ministers, and subjects of every town, parish, and hamlet, to arrest the said vagabonds and idle persons, and bring them to any justice of the peace of the same shire or liberty, or else to the high constable of the hundred; and the justice of the peace, high constable, or other officer, shall cause such idle person so to him brought, to be had to the next market town or other place, and there to be tied to the end of a cart, naked, and be beaten with whips throughout the same town till his body be bloody by reason of such whipping; and after such punishment of whipping had, the person so punished shall be enjoined upon his oath to return forthwith without delay, in the next and straight way, to the place where he was born, or where he last dwelled before the same punishment, by the space of three years; and then put himself to labour like a true man ought to do; and after that done, every such person so punished and ordered shall have a letter, sealed with the seal of the hundred, rape, or wapentake, witnessing that he hath been punished according to this estatute, and containing the day and place of his punishment, and the place whereunto he is limited to go, and by what time he is limited to come thither: for that within that time, showing the said letter, he may lawfully beg by the way, and otherwise not; and if he do not

And to return to their parishes, where they shall be put to labour.

CH. I. accomplish the order to him appointed by the said letter, then to be eftsoons taken and whipped; and so often as there be fault found in him, to be whipped till he has his body put to labour for his living, or otherwise truly get his living, so long as he is able to do so.'

Penalties  
against ma-  
gistrates  
neglecting  
their duty.

Then follow the penalties against the justices of the peace, constables, and all officers who neglect to arrest such persons; and a singularly curious catalogue is added of certain forms of 'sturdy mendicancy,' which, if unspecified, might have been passed over as exempt, but to which Henry had no intention of conceding further licence. It seems as if, in framing the Act, he had Simon Fish's petition before him, and was commencing at last the rough remedy of the cart's-tail, which Fish had dared to recommend for a very obdurate evil.\* The friars of the mendicant orders were tolerated for a few years longer; but many other spiritual persons may have suffered seriously under the provisions of the present statute.

Scholars of  
Oxford and  
Cambridge  
begging  
without  
licence to  
be whip-  
ped,

'Be it further enacted,' the Act continues, 'that scholars of the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, that go about begging, not being au-

\* 'Divers of your noble predecessors, kings of this realm, have given lands to monasteries, to give a certain sum of money yearly to the poor people, whereof for the ancienty of the time they never give one penny. Wherefore, if your Grace will build to your poor bedemen a sure hospital that shall never

fail, take from them these things. . . Tie the holy idle thieves to the cart to be whipped, naked, till they fall to labour, that they, by their importunate begging take not away the alms that the good charitable people would give unto us sore, impotent, miserable people, your bedemen.'—FISH'S *Supplication*: FOXE, vol. iv. p. 664.

thorized under the seal of the said universities, by the commissary, chancellor, or vice-chancellor of the same; and that all and singular shipmen pretending losses of their ships and goods, going about the country begging without sufficient authority, shall be punished and ordered in manner and form as is above rehearsed of strong beggars; and that all proctors and pardoners, and all other idle persons going about in counties or abiding in any town, city, or borough, some of them using divers subtle, crafty, and unlawful games and plays, and some of them feigning themselves to have knowledge in physick, physnamye, and palmistry, or other crafty science, whereby they bear the people in hand that they can tell their destinies, dreams, and fortunes, and such other like fantastical imaginations, to the great deceit of the king's subjects, shall, upon examination had before two justices of the peace, if by provable witness they be found guilty of such deceits, be punished by whipping at two days together, after the manner before rehearsed. And if they eftsoons offend in the same or any like offence, to be scourged two days, and the third day to be put upon the pillory, from nine o'clock till eleven the forenoon of the same day, and to have the right ear cut off; and if they offend the third time, to have like punishment with whipping and the pillory, and to have the other ear cut off.'

CH. I.

Likewise  
proctors,  
pardoners,  
and prophesiers.On the  
second offence, the  
right ear to  
be cut off—  
with two  
whippings.  
On the  
third offence, the  
left ear  
also; with  
more whipping.

It would scarcely have been expected that this Act would have failed for want of severity in its penalties; yet five years later, for this and for

CH. I. some other reasons, it was thought desirable to expand the provisions of it, enhancing the penalties at the same time to a degree which has given a bloody name in the history of English law to the statutes of Henry VIII. Of this expanded statute\* we have positive evidence, as I said, that Henry was himself the author. The merit of it, or the guilt of it—if guilt there be—originated with him alone. The early clauses contain practical amendments of an undoubtedly salutary kind. The Act of 1531 had been defective in that no specified means had been assigned for finding vagrants in labour, which, with men of broken character, was not immediately easy. The smaller monasteries having been suppressed in the interval, and sufficient funds being thus placed at the disposal of the government, public works† were set on foot throughout the kingdom, and this difficulty was obviated.

Amended  
statute  
drawn by  
Hen. VIII.

Private  
charity re-  
stricted and  
organised.

Another important alteration was a restriction upon private charity. Private persons were forbidden, under heavy penalties, to give money to beggars, whether deserving or undeserving. The poor of each parish might call at houses within the boundaries for broken meats; but this was the limit of personal almsgiving; and the money which men might be disposed to offer was to be collected by the churchwardens on Sundays and holidays in the churches. The parish priest was

\* 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 25.

† Roads, harbours, embankments, fortifications at Dover and at Berwick, &c.—STYKE'S

*Memorials*, vol. i. p. 326 and 419; and see vol. iii. of this work, pp. 254-257.

to keep an account of receipts and of expenditure, and relief was administered with some approach to modern formalities. A further excellent but severe enactment empowered the parish officers to take up all idle children above the age of five years, 'and appoint them to masters of husbandry or other craft or labour to be taught;' and if any child should refuse the service to which he was appointed, or run away 'without cause reasonable being shown for it,' he might be publicly whipped with rods, at the discretion of the justice of the peace before whom he was brought.

Compulsory training of the children of the poor.

So far, no complaint can be urged against these provisions: they display only that severe but true humanity, which, in offering fair and liberal maintenance for all who will consent to be honest, insists, not unjustly, that its offer shall be accepted, and that the resources of charity shall not be trifled away. On the clause, however, which gave to the Act its especial and distinguishing character, there will be large difference of opinion. 'The sturdy vagabond' who by the earlier statute was condemned on his second offence to lose the whole or a part of his right ear, was condemned by the amended Act, if found a third time offending, with the mark upon him of his mutilation, 'to suffer pains and execution of death, as a felon and as an enemy of the commonwealth.' So the letter stands. For an able-bodied man to be caught a third time begging was held a crime deserving death, and the sentence was intended, on fit occasions, to be executed. The poor man's advantages, which I

Able-bodied vagrants caught begging a third time to suffer death as felons.

CH. I. have estimated at so high a rate, were not purchased without drawbacks. He might not change his master at his will, or wander from place to place. He might not keep his children at his home unless he could answer for their time. If out of employment, preferring to be idle, he might be demanded for work by any master of the 'craft' to which he belonged, and compelled to work whether he would or no. If caught begging once, being neither aged nor infirm, he was whipped at the cart's tail. If caught a second time, his ear was slit, or bored through with a hot iron. If caught a third time, being thereby proved to be of no use upon this earth, but to live upon it only to his own hurt and to that of others, he suffered death as a felon. So the law of England remained for sixty years. First drawn by Henry, it continued unrepealed through the reigns of Edward and of Mary, subsisting, therefore, with the deliberate approval of both the great parties between whom the country was divided. Reconsidered under Elizabeth, the same law was again formally passed; and it was, therefore, the expressed conviction of the English nation, that it was better for a man not to live at all than to live a profitless and worthless life. The vagabond was a sore spot upon the commonwealth, to be healed by wholesome discipline if the gangrene was not incurable; to be cut away with the knife if the milder treatment of the cart-whip failed to be of profit.\*

---

\* It is to be remembered that | one side by the sanctuary sys-  
the criminal law was checked on | tem, on the other by the prac-

A measure so extreme in its severity was CH. I.  
 partly dictated by policy. The state of the country was critical; and the danger from questionable persons traversing it unexamined and uncontrolled was greater than at ordinary times. But in point of justice as well as of prudence, it harmonized with the iron temper of the age, and it answered well for the government of a fierce and powerful people, in whose hearts lay an intense hatred of rascality, and among whom no one need have lapsed into evil courses except by deliberate preference for them. The moral substance of the English must have been strong indeed when it admitted of such hardy treatment; but on the whole, the people were ruled as they preferred to be ruled; and if wisdom may be tested by success, the manner in which they passed the great crisis of the Reformation is the best justification of their princes. The era was great throughout Europe. The Italians of the age of Michael Angelo; the Spaniards who were the contemporaries of Cortez; the Germans who shook off the pope at the call of Luther; and the splendid chivalry of Francis I. of France, were no common men. But they were all brought face to face with the same trials, and none met them as the English met them. The English alone never lost their

The unsettled state of the country a possible cause for measures of so extreme severity,

Yet, on the whole, they were justified by success.

tice of benefit of clergy. Habit was too strong for legislation, and these privileges continued to protect criminals long after they were abolished by statute. There is abundant evidence that the execution of justice was as lax in practice as it was severe

in theory. See vol. iii. of this work, pp. 406-425, where the subject is discussed at length. In a note at p. 407 of that volume will be found an account of the legend that 72,000 criminals were executed in the reign of Henry VIII.



CH. I. self-possession; and if they owed something to  
 ——— fortune in their escape from anarchy, they owed  
 more to the strong hand and steady purpose of  
 their rulers.

To conclude this chapter then.

Concluding  
 summary.

In the brief review of the system under which  
 England was governed, we have seen a state of  
 things in which the principles of political economy  
 were, consciously or unconsciously, contradicted;  
 where an attempt, more or less successful, was  
 made to bring the production and distribution of  
 wealth under the moral rule of right and wrong;  
 and where those laws of supply and demand, which  
 we are now taught to regard as immutable ordi-  
 nances of nature, were absorbed or superseded by  
 a higher code. It is necessary for me to repeat  
 that I am not holding up the sixteenth century  
 as a model which the nineteenth might safely  
 follow. The population has become too large,  
 employment has become too complicated and  
 fluctuating, to admit of external control; while, in  
 default of control, the relapse upon self-interest  
 as the one motive principle is certain to ensue,  
 and when it ensues is absolute in its operations.  
 But as, even with us, these so-called ordinances of  
 nature in time of war consent to be suspended, and  
 duty to his country becomes with every good citizen  
 a higher motive of action than the advantages  
 which he may gain in an enemy's market; so it is  
 not uncheering to look back upon a time when  
 the nation was in a normal condition of militancy  
 against social injustice; when the government  
 was enabled by happy circumstances to pursue

into detail a single and serious aim at the well-being—well-being in its widest sense—of all members of the commonwealth. The world, indeed, was not made particularly pleasant. Of liberty, in the modern sense of the word, of the supposed right of every man 'to do what he will with his own' or with himself, there was no idea. To the question, if ever it was asked, May I not do what I will with my own? there was the brief answer, No man may do what is wrong, either with that which is his own or with that which is another's. Workmen were not allowed to take advantage of the scantiness of the labour market to exact extravagant wages. Capitalists were not allowed to drive the labourers from their holdings, and destroy their healthy independence. The antagonism of interests was absorbed into a relation of which equity was something more than the theoretic principle, and employers and employed were alike amenable to a law which both were compelled to obey. The working man of modern times has bought the extension of his liberty at the price of his material comfort. The higher classes have gained in luxury what they have lost in power. It is not for the historian to balance advantages. His duty is with the facts.

CH. I.

Concluding  
summary.





## CHAPTER II.

### THE LAST YEARS OF THE ADMINISTRATION OF WOLSEY.

#### CH. 2.

Victory of  
the clergy  
in the ele-  
venth and  
twelfth  
centuries.

The reac-  
tion and its  
causes.

**T**IMES were changed in England since the second Henry walked barefoot through the streets of Canterbury, and knelt while the monks flogged him on the pavement in the Chapter-house, doing penance for Becket's murder. The clergy had won the battle in the twelfth century because they deserved to win it. They were not free from fault and weakness, but they felt the meaning of their profession. Their hearts were in their vows, their authority was exercised more justly, more nobly, than the authority of the crown; and therefore, with inevitable justice, the crown was compelled to stoop before them. The victory was great; but, like many victories, it was fatal to the conquerors. It filled them full with the vanity of power; they forgot their duties in their privileges; and when, a century later, the conflict recommenced, the altering issue proved the altering nature of the conditions under which it was fought. The laity were sustained in vigour by the practical obligations of life; the clergy sunk under the influence of a waning religion, the administration of the forms of which had become

their sole occupation; and as character forsook them, the Mortmain Act,\* the Acts of Premunire, and the repeatedly recurring Statutes of Provisors mark the successive defeats that drove them back from the high post of command which character alone had earned for them. If the Black Prince had lived, or if Richard II. had inherited the temper of the Plantagenets, the ecclesiastical system would have been spared the misfortune of a longer reprieve. Its worst abuses would have then terminated, and the reformation of *doctrine* in the sixteenth century would have been left to fight its independent way unsupported by the moral corruption of the church from which it received its most powerful impetus. The nation was ready for sweeping remedies. The people felt little loyalty to the pope, as the language of the Statutes of Provisors† conclusively proves, and they were prepared to risk the sacrilege of confiscating the estates of the religious houses—a complete measure of secularization being then, as I have already said,‡ the expressed desire of the House of Commons.§ With an Edward III. on the throne such a measure would very likely have been executed, and the course of English history would have been changed. It was ordered otherwise, and doubtless wisely. The church was allowed a hundred and fifty more years to fill full

CH. 2.

Gradual reconquest by the civil authority.

Proposed dissolution of the monasteries in the fifteenth century.

\* 27 Ed. III. stat. 1; 38 Ed. III. stat. 2; 16 Rich. cap. 5.

† 25 Ed. III. stat. 4; stat. 5, cap. 22; 13 Rich. II. stat. 2, cap. 2; 2 Hen. IV. cap. 3; 9 Hen. IV. cap. 8.

‡ See p. 66.

§ *Lansdowne MS.* 1, fol. 26; Stow's *Chron.* ed. 1630, p. 338.

CH. 2. the measure of her offences, that she might fall  
 — only when time had laid bare the root of her degeneracy, and that faith and manners might be changed together.

The history of the time is too imperfect to justify a positive conclusion. It is possible, however, that the success of the revolution effected by Henry IV. was due in part to a reaction in the church's favour; and it is certain that this prince, if he did not owe his crown to the support of the church, determined to conciliate it. He confirmed the Statutes of Provisors,\* but he allowed them to sink into disuse. He forbade the further mootings of the confiscation project; and to him is due the first permission of the bishops to send heretics to the stake.† If English tradition is to be trusted, the clergy still felt insecure; and the French wars of Henry V. are said to have been undertaken, as we all know from Shakspeare, at the persuasion of Archbishop Chichele, who desired to distract his attention from reverting to dangerous subjects. Whether this be true or not, no prince of the house of Lancaster betrayed a wish to renew the quarrel with the church. The battle of Agincourt, the conquest and re-conquest of France, called off the attention of the people; while the rise of the Lollards, and the intrusion of speculative questions, the agitation of which has ever been the chief aversion of English statesmen, contributed to change the current; and the reforming spirit must have lulled before the outbreak

Leanings of the House of Lancaster towards the church.

Lull in the reforming spirit.

\* 2 Hen. IV. cap. 3; 9 Hen. IV. cap. 8.

† 2 Hen. IV. cap. 15.

of the wars of the Roses, or one of the two parties in so desperate a struggle would have scarcely failed to have availed themselves of it. Edward IV. is said to have been lenient towards heresy; but his toleration, if it was more than imaginary, was tacit only; he never ventured to avow it. It is more likely that in the inveterate frenzy of those years men had no leisure to remember that heresy existed. CH. 2.

The clergy were thus left undisturbed to go their own course to its natural end. The storm had passed over them without breaking; and they did not dream that it would again gather. The immunity which they enjoyed from the general sufferings of the civil war contributed to deceive them; and without anxiety for the consequences, and forgetting the significant warning which they had received, they sank steadily into that condition which is inevitable from the constitution of human nature, among men without faith, wealthy, powerful, and luxuriously fed, yet condemned to celibacy, and cut off from the common duties and common pleasures of ordinary life. On the return of a settled government, they were startled for a moment in their security; the conduct of some among them had become so unbearable, that even Henry VII., who inherited the Lancastrian sympathies, was compelled to notice it; and the following brief act was passed by his first parliament, proving by the very terms in which it is couched the existing nature of church discipline. The clergy are left undisturbed.

‘For the more sure and likely reformation,’ it runs, ‘of priests, clerks, and religious men, cul- The trials of their position.

‘For the more sure and likely reformation,’ it runs, ‘of priests, clerks, and religious men, cul- Complaints of clerical irregularities.

CH. 2. pable, or by their demerits openly noised of incontinent living in their bodies, contrary to their order, be it enacted, ordained, and established, that it be lawful to all archbishops and bishops, and other ordinaries having episcopal jurisdiction, to punish and chastise such religious men, being within the bounds of their jurisdiction, as shall be convict before them, by lawful proof, of adultery, fornication, incest, or other fleshly incontinency, by committing them to ward and prison, there to remain for such time as shall be thought convenient for the quality of their trespasses.\*

Previous to the passing of this act, therefore, the bishops, who had power to arrest laymen on suspicion of heresy, and detain them in prison untried,† had no power to imprison priests, even though convicted of adultery or incest. The legislature were supported by the Archbishop of Canterbury. Cardinal Morton procured authority from the pope to visit the religious houses, the abominations of which had become notorious;‡ and in a provincial synod held on the 24th of February, 1486, he laid the condition of the secular clergy before the assembled prelates. Many priests, it was stated, spent their time in hawking or hunting, in lounging at taverns, in the

\* 1 Hen. VII. cap. 4. Among the miscellaneous publications of the Record Commission, there is a complaint presented during this reign, by the gentlemen and the farmers of Carnarvonshire, accusing the clergy of systematic seduction of their wives and daughters; and see a

Petition of the Clergy of the Diocese of Bangor, vol. iii. of this work, p. 372, note.

† 2 Hen. IV. cap. 15.

‡ MORTON'S *Register*, MS. Lambeth. See vol. ii. cap. 10, of the second edition of this work for the results of Morton's investigation.

dissolute enjoyment of the world. They wore their hair long like laymen; they were to be seen lounging in the streets with cloak and doublet, sword and dagger. By the scandal of their lives they imperilled the stability of their order.\* A number of the worst offenders, in London especially, were summoned before the synod and admonished;† certain of the more zealous among the learned (*complures docti*) who had preached against clerical abuses were advised to be more cautious, for the avoiding of scandal;‡ but the archbishop, taking the duty upon himself, sent round a circular among the clergy of his province, exhorting them to general amendment.§

\* MORTON'S *Register*; and see WILKINS'S *Concilia*, vol. iii. pp. 618–621.

† Quibus Dominus intimavit qualis infamia super illos in dictâ civitate crescit quod complures eorundem tabernas pandoxatorias, sive caupones indies exerceant ibidem expectando fere per totum diem. Quare Dominus consului et monuit eosdem quod in posterum talia dimittant, et quod dimittant suos longos crines et induantur togis non per totum apertis.

‡ The expression is remarkable. They were not to dwell on the offences of their brethren coram laicis qui semper clericis sunt infesti.—WILKINS, vol. iii. p. 618.

§ Johannes permissione divinâ Cantuar. episcop. totius Angliæ primas cum in præsentî convocatione pie et salubriter consideratum fuit quod nonnulli sacerdotes et alii clerici ejusdem

nostræ provinciæ in sacris ordinibus constituti honestatem clericalem in tantum abjecerint ac in comâ tonsurâque et superindumentis suis quæ in anteriori sui parte totaliter aperta existere dignoscuntur, sic sunt dissoluti et adeo insolescant quod inter eos et alios laicos et sæculares viros nulla vel modica comâ vel habituum sive vestimentorum distinctio esse videatur quo fiet in brevi ut a multis verisimiliter formidatur quod sicut populus ita et sacerdos erit, et nisi celeriori remedio tantæ lasciviæ ecclesiasticarum personarum quanto ocyus obviemus et clericorum mores hujusmodi maturius compescamus, *Ecclesia Anglicana quæ superioribus diebus vitâ famâ et compositis moribus floruisse dignoscitur nostris temporibus quod Deus avertat, præcipitanter ruet*;

Desiring, therefore, to find some remedy for these disorders,



## CH. 2.

But the  
cloud  
passes off.

The clergy  
apparently  
recover  
their  
power.

Yet this little cloud again disappeared. Henry VII. sat too insecurely on his throne to venture on a resolute reform, even if his feelings had inclined him towards it, which they did not. Morton durst not resolutely grapple with the evil. He rebuked and remonstrated; but punishment would have caused a public scandal. He would not invite the inspection of the laity into a disease which, without their assistance, he had not the strength to encounter; and his incipient reformation died away ineffectually in words. The church, to outward appearance, stood more securely than ever. The obnoxious statutes of the Plantagenets were in abeyance, their very existence, as it seemed, was forgotten; and Thomas à Becket never desired more absolute independence for the ecclesiastical order than Archbishop Warham found established when he succeeded to the primacy. He, too, ventured to repeat the experiment of his predecessor. In 1511 he attempted a second visitation of the monasteries, and again exhorted a reform; but his efforts were even slighter than Morton's, and in their results equally without fruit. The maintenance of his order in its political supremacy was of greater moment to him than its moral purity: a decent

lest the blood of those committed to him should be required at his hands, the archbishop decrees and ordains,—

Ne aliquis sacerdos vel clericus in sacris ordinibus constitutus togam gerat nisi clausam a parte anteriori et non totaliter apertam neque utatur ense nec sicâ nec

zonâ aut marcipio deaurato vel auri ornatum habente. Incident etiam omnes et singuli presbyteri et clerici ejusdem nostræ provinciæ coronas et tonsuras gerentes aures patentes ostendendo juxta canonicas sanctiones. —WILKINS, vol. iii. p. 619.

veil was cast over the clerical infirmities, and their vices were forgotten as soon as they ceased to be proclaimed.\* Henry VIII., a mere boy on his accession, was borne away with the prevailing stream; and trained from his childhood by theologians, he entered upon his reign saturated with theological prepossessions. The intensity of his nature recognising no half measures, he was prepared to make them the law of his life; and so zealous was he, that it seemed as if the church had found in him a new Alfred or a Charlemagne.

Unfortunately for the church, institutions may be restored in theory; but theory, be it never so perfect, will not give them back their life; and Henry discovered, at length, that the church of the sixteenth century as little resembled the church of the eleventh, as Leo X. resembled Hildebrand, or Warham resembled St. Anselm.

But they  
recover the  
form only,  
not the life.

If, however, there were no longer saints among the clergy, there could still arise among them a remarkable man; and in Cardinal Wolsey the king found an adviser who was able to retain him longer than would otherwise have been possible in the course which he had entered upon; who, holding a middle place between an English statesman and a catholic of the old order, was essentially a transition minister; and who was qualified, above all men then living, by a combination of talent, honesty, and arrogance, to open questions which could not again be closed when they had escaped the grasp of

Wolsey, the  
transition  
minister.

---

\* See WARHAM's *Register*, MS. Lambeth.

CH. 2. their originator. Under Wolsey's influence Henry made war with Louis of France, in the pope's quarrel, entered the polemic lists with Luther, and persecuted the English protestants. But Wolsey could not blind himself to the true condition of the church. He was too wise to be deceived with outward prosperity; he knew well that there lay before it, in Europe and at home, the alternative of ruin or amendment; and therefore he familiarized Henry with the sense that a reformation was inevitable, and dreaming that it could be effected from within, by the church itself inspired with a wiser spirit, he himself fell the first victim of a convulsion which he had assisted to create, and which he attempted too late to stay.

A. D. 1527.  
May 7th.  
The Duke  
of Bourbon  
takes  
Rome.

His intended measures were approaching maturity, when all Europe was startled by the news that Rome had been stormed by the Imperial army, that the pope was imprisoned, the churches pillaged, the cardinals insulted, and all holiest things polluted and profaned. A spectator, judging only by outward symptoms, would have seen at that strange crisis in Charles V. the worst patron of heresy, and the most dangerous enemy of the Holy See; while the indignation with which the news of these outrages was received at the English court, would have taught him to look on Henry as the one sovereign in Europe on whom that See might calculate most surely for support in its hour of danger. If he could have pierced below the surface, he would have found that the pope's best friend was the prince who held him

prisoner; that Henry was but doubtfully acquiescing in the policy of an unpopular minister; and that the English nation would have looked on with stoical resignation if pope and papacy had been wrecked together. They were not inclined to heresy; but the ecclesiastical system was not the catholic faith; and this system, ruined by prosperity, was fast pressing its excesses to the extreme limit, beyond which it could not be endured. Wolsey talked of reformation, but delayed its coming; and in the mean time, the persons to be reformed showed no fear that it would come at all. The monasteries grew worse and worse. The people were taught only what they could teach themselves. The consistory courts became more oppressive. Pluralities multiplied, and non-residence and profligacy. Favoured parish clergy held as many as eight benefices.\* Bishops accumulated sees, and, unable to attend to all, attended to none. Wolsey himself, the church reformer (so little did he really know what a reformation meant), was at once Archbishop of York, Bishop of Winchester, of Bath, and of Durham, and Abbot of St. Alban's. In Latimer's opinion, even twenty years later, and after no little reform in such matters, there was but one bishop in all England who was ever at his work and ever in his diocese. 'I would ask a strange question,' he said, in an audacious sermon at Paul's Cross, 'Who is the most diligent bishop and prelate in all England, that passeth all the

The monasteries.

The consistory courts. Pluralist clergy.

Pluralist bishops.

Non-resident bishops.

Who was the only resident bishop in England?

---

\* 21 Hen. VIII. cap. 13.

CH. 2. rest in doing of his office?\* I can tell, for I know him who it is; I know him well. But now I think I see you listening and hearkening that I should name him. There is one that passeth all the others, and is the most diligent prelate and preacher in all England. And will ye know who it is? I will tell you. It is the devil. Among all the pack of them that have cure, the devil shall go for my money, for he applieth his business. Therefore, ye unpreaching prelates, learn of the devil to be diligent in your office. If ye will not learn of God, for shame learn of the devil.†

Under such circumstances, we need not be

---

\* ROY'S *Satire against the Clergy*, written about 1528, is so plain-spoken, and goes so directly to the point of the matter, that it is difficult to find a presentable extract. The following lines on the bishops are among the most moderate in the poem:—

‘What are the bishops divines—  
 Yea, they can best skill of wines  
 Better than of divinity;  
 Lawyers are they of experience,  
 And in cases against conscience  
 They are parfet by practice.  
 To forge excommunications,  
 For tythes and decimations  
 Is their continual exercise.  
 As for preaching they take no care,  
 They would rather see a course at a hare;  
 Rather than to make a sermon  
 To follow the chase of wild deer,  
 Passing the time with jolly cheer.  
 Among them all is common  
 To play at the cards and dice;  
 Some of them are nothing nice  
 Both at hazard and momchance;  
 They drink in golden bowls  
 The blood of poor simple souls  
 Perishing for lack of sustenance.  
 Their hungry cures they never teach,  
 Nor will suffer none other to preach,’ &c.

† LATIMER'S *Sermons*, pp. 70, 71.

surprised to find the clergy sunk low in the respect of the English people. Sternly intolerant of each other's faults, the laity were not likely to be indulgent to the vices of men who ought to have set an example of purity; and from time to time, during the first quarter of the century, there were explosions of temper which might have served as a warning if any sense or judgment had been left to profit by it. CH. 2.

In 1514 a London merchant was committed to the Lollards' Tower for refusing to submit to an unjust exaction of mortuary;\* and a few days after was found dead in his cell. An inquest was held upon the body, when a verdict of wilful murder was returned against the chancellor of the Bishop of London; and so intense was the feeling of the city, that the bishop applied to Wolsey for a special jury to be chosen on the trial. 'For assured I am,' he said, 'that if my chancellor be tried by any twelve men in London, they be so maliciously set *in favorem hæreticæ pravitatis*, that they will cast and condemn any clerk, though he were as innocent as Abel.† Fish's famous pamphlet also shows the spirit which was seething; and though we may make some allowance for angry rhetoric, his words have the clear ring of honesty in them; and he spoke of what he had seen and knew. The monks, he tells the king, 'be they that have made a hundred thou-

Murder of  
Hun, and  
irritation of  
the people.

\* A peculiarly hateful form of clerical impost, the priests claiming the last dress worn in life by persons brought to them for burial.

† Fitz James to Wolsey, *FOXE*, vol. iv. p. 196.

CH. 2. sand idle dissolute women in your realm, who would have gotten their living honestly in the sweat of their faces had not their superfluous riches allured them to lust and idleness. These be they that when they have drawn men's wives to such incontinency, spend away their husbands' goods, make the women to run away from their husbands, bringing both man, wife, and children to idleness, theft, and beggary. Yea, who is able to number the great broad bottomless ocean sea full of evils that this mischievous generation may bring upon us if unpunished?"\*

A.D. 1528. Copies of this book were strewed about the London streets; Wolsey issued a prohibition against it, with the effect which such prohibitions usually have. Means were found to bring it under the eyes of Henry himself; and the manner in which it was received by him is full of significance, and betrays that the facts of the age were already telling on his understanding. He was always easy of access and easy of manner; and the story, although it rests on Foxe's authority, has internal marks of authenticity.

Fish's book  
against the  
clergy sub-  
mitted to  
Henry.

'One Master Edmund Moddis, being with the king in talk of religion, and of the new books that were come from beyond the seas, said that if it might please his Highness to pardon him, and such as he would bring to his Grace, he should

---

\* *Supplication of the Beggars*; FOXE, vol. iv. p. 661. The glimpses into the condition of the monasteries which had been obtained in the imperfect visitation of Morton, bear out the pamphleteer too completely. See chapter x. of this work, second edition.

see such a book as it was a marvel to hear of. CH. 2.  
The king demanded who they were? He said  
'Two of your merchants—George Elliot and  
George Robinson.' The king appointed a time  
to speak with them. When they came before  
his presence in a privy closet, he demanded what  
they had to say or to shew him. One of them  
said that there was a book come to their hands  
which they had there to shew his Grace. When  
he saw it he demanded if any of them could read  
it. 'Yea,' said George Elliot, 'if it please your  
Grace to hear it.' 'I thought so,' said the  
king; 'if need were, thou couldst say it without  
book.'

'The whole book being read out, the king made a long pause, and then said, 'If a man should pull down an old stone wall, and should begin at the lower part, the upper part thereof might chance to fall upon his head.' Then he took the book, and put it in his desk, and commanded them, on their allegiance, that they should not tell any man that he had seen it.'\*

Symptoms such as these boded ill for a self-reform of the church, and it was further impelled by the difficulty which it is not easy to believe that Wolsey had forgotten. No measures would be of efficacy which spared the religious houses, and they would be equally useless unless the bishops, as well as the inferior clergy, were comprehended in the scheme of amendment. But neither with monks nor bishops could Wolsey in-

His remark upon it.

Wolsey, intending to reform the church, breaks the law.



СН. 2. 

---

terfere except by a commission from the pope, and the laws were unrepealed which forbade English subjects, under the severest penalties, to accept or exercise within the realm an authority which they had received from the Holy See. Morton had gone beyond the limits of the statute of provisors in receiving powers from Pope Innocent to visit the monasteries. But Morton had stopped short with inquiry and admonition. Wolsey, who was in earnest with the work, had desired and obtained a full commission as legate, but he could only make use of it at his peril. The statute slumbered, but it still existed.\* He was exposing not himself only, but all persons, lay and clerical, who might recognise his legacy to a Premunire; and he knew well that Henry's connivance, or even expressed permission, could not avail him if his conduct was challenged. He could not venture to appeal to parliament. Parliament was the last authority whose jurisdiction a churchman would acknowledge in the concerns of the clergy; and his project must sooner or later have sunk, like those of his two predecessors, under its own internal difficulties, even if the accident had not arisen which brought the dispute to a special issue in its most vital point, and which, fostered by Wolsey for his own purposes, precipitated his ruin.

The king's  
divorce.

---

\* 13 Ric. II. stat. ii. c. 2; 2 Hen. IV. c. 3; 9 Hen. IV. c. 8. Lingard is mistaken in saying that the Crown had power to dispense with these statutes. A dispensing power was indeed granted by the 12th of the 7th of Ric. II. But by the 2nd of the 13th of the same reign, the king is expressly and by name placed under the same prohibitions as all other persons.

It is never more difficult to judge equitably the actions of public men than when private as well as general motives have been allowed to influence them, or when their actions may admit of being represented as resulting from personal inclination, as well as from national policy. In life, as we actually experience it, motives slide one into the other, and the most careful analysis will fail adequately to sift them. In history, from the effort to make our conceptions distinct, we pronounce upon these intricate matters with unhesitating certainty, and we lose sight of truth in the desire to make it truer than itself. The difficulty is further complicated by the different points of view which are chosen by contemporaries and by posterity. Where motives are mixed, men all naturally dwell most on those which approach nearest to themselves: contemporaries whose interests are at stake overlook what is personal in consideration of what is to them of broader moment; posterity, unable to realize political embarrassments which have ceased to concern them, concentrate their attention on such features of the story as touch their own sympathies, and attend exclusively to the private and personal passions of the men and women whose character they are considering.

These natural, and to some extent inevitable tendencies, explain the difference with which the divorce between Henry VIII. and Catherine of Arragon has been regarded by the English nation in the sixteenth and in the nineteenth centuries. In the former, not only did the parliament pro-

CH. 2. fess to desire it, urge it, and further it, but we are told by a contemporary\* that 'all indifferent and discreet persons' judged that it was right and necessary. In the latter, perhaps, there is not one of ourselves who has not been taught to look upon it as an act of enormous wickedness. In the sixteenth century, Queen Catherine was an obstacle to the establishment of the kingdom, an incentive to treasonable hopes. In the nineteenth, she is an outraged and injured wife, the victim of a false husband's fickle appetite. The story is a long and painful one, and on its personal side need not concern us here further than as it illustrates the private character of Henry. Into the public bearing of it I must enter at some length, in order to explain the interest with which the nation threw itself into the question, and to remove the scandal with which, had nothing been at stake beyond the inclinations of a profligate monarch, weary of his queen, the complaisance on such a subject of the lords and commons of England would have coloured the entire complexion of the Reformation.

Uncertainty of the law of succession.

The succession to the throne, although determined in theory by the ordinary law of primogeniture, was nevertheless subject to repeated arbitrary changes. The uncertainty of the rule was acknowledged and deplored by the parliament,† and there was no order of which the nation, with any unity of sentiment, compelled the observance. An opinion prevailed—not, I

---

\* HALL, p. 784.

† 25 Hen. VIII. c. 22.

believe, traceable to statute, but admitted by custom, and having the force of statute in the prejudices of the nation—that no stranger born out of the realm could inherit.\* Although the descent in the female line was not formally denied, no female sovereign had ever, in fact, sat upon the throne.† Even Henry VII. refused to strengthen his title by advancing the claims of his wife: and the uncertainty of the laws of marriage, and the innumerable refinements of the Romish canon law, which affected the legitimacy of children,‡ furnished, in connexion with the further ambiguities of clerical dispensations, per-

CH. 2.

The law of primogeniture repeatedly violated or evaded.

\* 28 Hen. VIII. c. 24. Speech of Sir Ralph Sadler in parliament, *Sadler Papers*, vol. iii. p. 323.

† Nor was the theory distinctly admitted, or the claim of the house of York would have been unquestionable.

‡ 25 Hen. VIII. c. 22. Draft of the Dispensation to be granted to Henry VIII. *Rolls House MS.* It has been asserted by a writer in the *Tablet* that there is no instance in the whole of English history where the ambiguity of the marriage law led to a dispute of title. This was not the opinion of those who remembered the wars of the fifteenth century. 'Recens in quorundam vestrorum animis adhuc est illius cruenti temporis memoria,' said Henry VIII. in a speech in council, 'quod a Ricardo tertio cum avi nostri materni Edwardi quarti statum in controversiam vocasset ejusque

heredes regno atque vitâ privasset illatum est.'—WILKINS'S *Concilia*, vol. iii. p. 714. Richard claimed the crown on the ground that a precontract rendered his brother's marriage invalid, and Henry VII. tacitly allowed the same doubt to continue. The language of the 22nd of the 25th of Hen. VIII. is so clear as to require no additional elucidation; but another distinct evidence of the belief of the time upon the subject is in one of the papers laid before Pope Clement.

'Constat, in ipso regno quam plurima gravissima bella sepe exorta, confingentes ex justis et legitimis nuptiis quorundam Angliæ regum procreatos illegitimos fore propter aliquod consanguinitatis vel affinitatis confictum impedimentum et propterea inhabiles esse ad regni successionem.'—*Rolls House MS.*; WILKINS'S *Concilia*, vol. iii. p. 707.

CH. 2. petual pretexts, whenever pretexts were needed,  
 ————— for a breach of allegiance. So long, indeed, as

Consent of  
parliament  
necessary  
to make  
good the  
sovereign's  
title.

The wars of  
the Roses.

the character of the nation remained essentially military, it could as little tolerate an incapable king as an army in a dangerous campaign can bear with an inefficient commander; and whatever might be the theory of the title, when the sceptre was held by the infirm hand of an Edward II., a Richard II., or a Henry VI., the difficulty resolved itself by force, and it was wrenched by a stronger arm from a grasp too feeble to retain it. The consent of the nation was avowed, even in the authoritative language of a statute,\* as essential to the legitimacy of a sovereign's title; and Sir Thomas More, on examination by the Solicitor-General, declared as his opinion that parliament had power to depose kings if it so pleased.† So many uncertainties on a point so vital had occasioned fearful episodes in English history; the most fearful of them, which had traced its character in blood in the private records of every English family, having been the long struggle of the preceding century, from which the nation was still suffering, and had but recovered sufficiently to be conscious of what it had endured. It had decimated itself for a question which involved no principle and led to no result, and perhaps the history of the world may be searched in vain for any

---

\* 28 Hen. VIII. c. 24.

† *Appendix 2 to the Third Report of the Deputy-Keeper of the Public Records*, p. 241.

parallel to a quarrel at once so desperate and so unmeaning. CH. 2.

This very unmeaning character of the dispute increased the difficulty of ending it. In wars of conquest or of principle, when something definite is at stake, the victory is either won, or it is lost; the conduct of individual men, at all events, is overruled by considerations external to themselves which admit of being weighed and calculated. In a war of succession, where the great families were divided in their allegiance, and supported the rival claimants in evenly balanced numbers, the inveteracy of the conflict increased with its duration, and propagated itself from generation to generation. Every family was in blood feud with its neighbour; and children, as they grew to manhood, inherited the duty of revenging their fathers' deaths.

The struggle suspended, but not extinguished.

No effort of imagination can reproduce to us the state of this country in the fatal years which intervened between the first rising of the Duke of York and the battle of Bosworth; and experience too truly convinced Henry VII. that the war had ceased only from general exhaustion, and not because there was no will to continue it. The first Tudor breathed an atmosphere of suspended insurrection, and only when we remember the probable effect upon his mind of the constant dread of an explosion, can we excuse or understand, in a prince not generally cruel, the execution of the Earl of Warwick. The danger of a bloody revolution may present an act of arbitrary or cowardly tyranny in the light of a public duty.

## CH. 2.

A fresh outbreak the predominating fear with English statesmen.

Fifty years of settled government, however, had not been without their effects. The country had collected itself; the feuds of the families had been chastened, if they had not been subdued; while the increase of wealth and material prosperity had brought out into obvious prominence those advantages of peace which a hot-spirited people, antecedent to experience, had not anticipated, and had not been able to appreciate. They were better fed, better cared for, more justly governed than they had ever been before; and though abundance of unruly tempers remained, yet the wiser portion of the nation, looking back from their new vantage-ground, were able to recognise the past in its true hatefulness. Thenceforward a war of succession was the predominating terror with English statesmen, and the safe establishment of the reigning family bore a degree of importance which it is possible that their fears exaggerated, yet which in fact was the determining principle of their action.

The sons of Henry VIII. die in infancy.

It was therefore with no little anxiety that the council of Henry VIII. perceived his male children, on whom their hopes were centered, either born dead, or dying one after another within a few days of their birth, as if his family were under a blight. When the queen had advanced to an age which precluded hope of further offspring, and the heir presumptive was an infirm girl, the unpromising prospect became yet more alarming. The life of the Princess Mary was precarious, for her health was weak from her childhood. If she lived, her accession would be a temptation to insurrection; if she did

not live, and the king had no other children, a civil war was inevitable. At present such a difficulty would be disposed of by an immediate and simple reference to the collateral branches of the royal family; the crown would descend with even more facility than the property of an intestate to the next of kin. At that time, if the rule had been recognised, it would only have increased the difficulty, for the next heir in blood was James of Scotland; and, gravely as statesmen desired the union of the two countries, in the existing mood of the people, the very stones in London streets, it was said,\* would rise up against a king of Scotland who claimed to enter England as sovereign. Even the parliament itself declared in formal language that they would resist any attempt on the part of the Scottish king 'to the uttermost of their power.'†

CH. 2.

---

 Danger of civil war.

As little, however, as the English would have admitted James's claims, would James himself have acknowledged their right to reject them. He would have pleaded the sacred right of inheritance, refusing utterly the imaginary law which disentitled him: he would have pressed his title with all Scotland to back him, and probably with the open support of France. Centuries of humiliation remained unrevenged, which both France and Scotland had endured at English hands. It was not likely that they would waste an opportunity thrust upon them by Providence. The country might, it is true, have encountered

---

 Danger of invasion from France and Scotland.

---

 \* *Sadler Papers*, vol. iii. p. 323.

† 28 Hen. VIII. c. 24.



CH. 2. this danger, serious as it would have been, if there had been hope that it would itself have agreed to any other choice. England had many times fought successfully against the same odds, and would have cared little for a renewal of the struggle, if united in itself: but the prospect on this side, also, was fatally discouraging. The elements of the old factions were dormant, but still smouldering. Throughout Henry's reign a White Rose agitation had been secretly fermenting; without open success, and without chance of success so long as Henry lived, but formidable in a high degree if opportunity to strike should offer itself. Richard de la Pole, the representative of this party, had been killed at Pavia, but his loss had rather strengthened their cause than weakened it, for by his long exile he was unknown in England; his personal character was without energy; while he made place for the leadership of a far more powerful spirit in the sister of the murdered Earl of Warwick, the Countess of Salisbury, mother of Reginald Pole. This lady had inherited, in no common degree, the fierce nature of the Plantagenets; born to command, she had rallied round her the Courtenays, the Nevilles, and all the powerful kindred of Richard the King Maker, her grandfather. Her Plantagenet descent was purer than the king's; and if Mary died and Henry left no other issue, half England was likely to declare either for one of her sons, or for the Marquis of Exeter, the grandson of Edward IV.\*

Rival English claimants.

The party of the White Rose.

---

\* See vol. iii. of this work, chap. xv.

In 1515, when Giustiniani,\* the Venetian CH. 2.  
ambassador, was at the court, the Dukes of  
Buckingham, of Suffolk, and of Norfolk, were The various  
claimants  
and their  
chances.  
also mentioned to him as having each of them  
hopes of the crown. Buckingham, meddling  
prematurely in the dangerous game, had lost his  
life for it; but in his death he had strength-  
ened the chance of Norfolk, who had married his  
daughter. Suffolk was Henry's brother-in-law;†  
chivalrous, popular, and the ablest soldier of his  
day; and Lady Margaret Lennox, also, daughter  
of the Queen of Scotland by her second marriage,  
would not have wanted supporters, and early  
became an object of intrigue. Indeed, as she  
had been born in England, it was held in parlia-  
ment that she stood next in order to the Princess  
Mary.‡

Many of these claims were likely to be ad-  
vanced if Henry died leaving a daughter to  
succeed him. They would all inevitably be  
advanced if he died childless; and no great  
political sagacity was required to foresee the pro-  
bable fate of the country if such a moment was  
chosen for a French and Scottish invasion. The  
very worst disasters might be too surely looked  
for, and the hope of escape, precarious at the best,  
hung upon the frail thread of a single life. We  
may therefore imagine the dismay with which the  
nation saw this last hope failing them—and

\* *Four Years at the Court  
of Henry the Eighth*, vol. ii.  
pp. 315-16.

Duke of Suffolk, and married to  
Mary Tudor, widow of Louis  
XII.

† Sir Charles Brandon, created

‡ 28 Hen. VIII. c. 24.

CH. 2. failing them even in a manner more dangerous  
 A.D. 1527. than if it had failed by death; for it did but add  
 another doubt, when already there were too many.  
 In order to detach France from Scotland, and  
 secure, if possible, its support for the claims of  
 the princess, it had been proposed to marry the  
 Princess Mary to a son of the French king.  
 The negotiations were conducted through the  
 Bishop of Tarbès,\* and at the first conference the  
 Bishop raised a question in the name of his  
 government, on the validity of the papal dispensa-  
 tion granted by Julius the Second, to legalize the  
 marriage from which she was sprung. The  
 abortive marriage scheme perished in its birth,  
 but the doubt which had been raised could not  
 perish with it. Doubt on such a subject once  
 mooted might not be left unresolved, even if  
 the raising it thus publicly had not itself  
 destroyed the frail chance of an undisputed suc-  
 cession. If the relations of Henry with Queen  
 Catherine had been of a cordial kind, it is pos-  
 sible that he would have been contented with  
 resentment; that he would have refused to re-  
 consider a question which touched his honour and  
 his conscience; and, united with parliament, would  
 have endeavoured to bear down all difficulties  
 with a high hand. This at least he might have  
 himself attempted. Whether the parliament,

The legiti-  
 macy of the  
 Princess  
 Mary called  
 in question.

---

\* The treaty was in progress from Dec. 24, 1526, to March 2, 1527 [LORD HERBERT, pp. 80, 81], and during this time the difficulty was raised. The earliest intimation which I find of an in- tended divorce was in June, 1527, at which time Wolsey was privately consulting the bishops.—*State Papers*, vol. i. p. 189.

with so precarious a future before them, would have consented, is less easy to say. Fortunately or unfortunately, the interests of the nation pointed out another road, which Henry had no unwillingness to enter. CH. 2.

On the death of Prince Arthur, five months after his marriage, Henry VII. and the father of the Princess alike desired that the bond between their families thus broken should be re-united; and, as soon as it became clear that Catherine had not been left pregnant (a point which, tacitly at least, she allowed to be considered uncertain at the time of her husband's decease), it was proposed that she should be transferred, with the inheritance of the crown, to the new heir. A dispensation was reluctantly granted by the pope,\* and reluctantly accepted by the English ministry. The Prince of Wales, who was no more than twelve years old at the time, was under the age at which he could legally sue for such an object; and a portion of the English council, the Archbishop of Canterbury among them, were unsatisfied,† both with the marriage itself, and with the adequacy of the forms observed in a matter of so dubious an import. The betrothal took place at the urgency of Ferdinand. In the year following Henry VII. became suddenly ill; Queen Elizabeth died; and supersti-

Death of  
Prince  
Arthur.

Henry be-  
trothed to  
his widow.

\* It was for some time delayed; and the papal agent was instructed to inform Ferdinand that a marriage which was at variance a jure et laudabilibus moribus could not be permitted nisi maturo consilio et necessitatis causa.—Minute of a brief of Julius the Second, dated March 13, 1504, *Rolls House MS.*

† LORD HERBERT, p. 114.

СН. 2. tion, working on the previous hesitation, misfortune was construed into an indication of the displeasure of Heaven. The intention was renounced, and the prince, as soon as he had completed his fourteenth year, was invited and required to disown, by a formal act, the obligations contracted in his name.\* Again there was a change. The king lived on, the alarm yielded to the temptations of covetousness. Had he restored Catherine to her father he must have restored with her the portion of her dowry which had been already received; he must have relinquished the prospect of the moiety which had

\* LORD HERBERT, p. 117, Kennett's edition. The act itself is printed in BURNET's *Collectanea*, vol. iv. (Nares' edition) pp. 5, 6. It is dated June 27, 1505. Dr. Lingard endeavours to explain away the renunciation as a form. The language of Moryson, however, leaves no doubt either of its causes or its meaning. 'Non multo post sponsalia contrahuntur,' he says, 'Henrico plus minus tredecim annos jam nato. Sed rerum non recte inceptarum successus infeliciores homines non prorsus oscitantes plerumque docet quid recte gestum quid perperam, quid factum superi volunt quid infectum. Nimirum Henricus Septimus nullâ ægritudinis prospectâ causâ repente in deteriorem valetudinem prolapsus est, nec unquam potuit affectum corpus pristinum statum recuperare. Uxor in aliud ex alio malum regina omnium laudatissima non multo post morbo periit. Quid mirum si Rex tot irati numinis indicia admonitus

cœperit cogitare rem male illis succedere qui vellent hoc nomine cum Dei legibus litem instituire ut diutius cum homine amicitiam gerere possent. Quid deinceps egit? Quid aliud quam quod decuit Christianissimum regem? Filium ad se accersiri jubet, accersitur. Adest, adsunt et multi nobilissimi homines. Rex filium regno natum hortatur ut secum una cum doctissimis ac optimis viris cogitavit nefarium esse putare leges Dei leges Dei non esse cum papa volet. Non ita longâ oratione usus filium patri obsequentissimum a sententiâ nullo negotio abduxit. Sponsalia contracta infirmantur, pontificisque auctoritatis beneficio palam renunciatum est. Adest publicus tabellio—fit instrumentum. Rerum gestarum testes rogati sigilla apponunt. Postremo filius patri fidem se illam uxorem nunquam ducturum.'—*Apomaxis* RICARDI MORYSINI. Printed by Berthelet, 1537.

yet to be received. The negotiation was renewed. CH. 2.  
 Henry VII. lived to sign the receipts for the first instalment of the second payment;\* and on his death, notwithstanding much general murmuring,† the young Henry, then a boy of eighteen, proceeded to carry out his father's ultimate intentions. The princess-dowager, notwithstanding what had passed, was still on her side willing;—and the difference of age (she was six years older than Henry) seeming of little moment when both were comparatively young, they were married. For many years all went well; opposition was silenced by the success which seemed to have followed, and the original scruples were forgotten. Though the marriage was dictated by political convenience, Henry was faithful, with but one exception, to his wife's bed—no slight honour to him, if he is measured by the average royal standard in such matters; and, if his sons had lived to grow up around his throne, there is no reason to believe that the peace of his married life would have been interrupted, or that, whatever might have been his private feelings, he would have appeared in the world's eye other than acquiescent in his condition.

But his sons had not lived; years passed on, bringing with them premature births, children born dead, or dying after a few days or hours,‡

His children die.

\* See LINGARD, sixth edition, vol. iv. p. 164.

† HALL, p. 507.

‡ He married Catherine, June 3, 1509. Early in the spring of 1510 she miscarried. — *Four Years at the Court of Henry VIII.* vol. i. p. 83.

Jan. 1, 1511. A prince was born, who died Feb. 22.—HALL.

Nov. 1513. Another prince was born, who died immediately. —LINGARD, vol. iv. p. 290.

Dec. 1514. Badoer, the Venetian ambassador, wrote that the queen had been delivered of

CH. 2. and the disappointment was intense in proportion  
 ————— to the interests which were at issue. The especial  
 penalty denounced against the marriage with a  
 brother's wife\* had been all but literally enforced;  
 and the king found himself growing to middle  
 life and his queen passing beyond it with his  
 prayers unheard, and no hope any longer that  
 they might be heard. The disparity of age also  
 was more perceptible as time went by, while  
 Catherine's constitution was affected by her mis-  
 fortunes, and differences arose on which there is  
 no occasion to dwell in these pages—differences  
 which in themselves reflected no discredit either on  
 the husband or the wife, but which were sufficient  
 to extinguish between two infirm human beings  
 an affection that had rested only upon mutual  
 esteem, but had not assumed the character of love.

Rise of dis-  
 agreement.

a still-born male child, to the great grief of the whole nation.

May 3, 1515. The queen was supposed to be pregnant. If the supposition was right, she must have miscarried.—*Four Years at the Court of Henry VIII.* vol. i. p. 81.

Feb. 18, 1516. The Princess Mary was born.

July 3, 1518. 'The Queen declared herself quick with child,' (Pace to Wolsey: *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 2.) and again miscarried.

These misfortunes we are able to trace accidentally through casual letters, and it is probable that these were not all. Henry's own words upon the subject are very striking:—

'All such issue male as I

have received of the queen died incontinent after they were born, so that I doubt the punishment of God in that behalf. Thus being troubled in waves of a scrupulous conscience, and partly in despair of any issue male by her, it drove me at last to consider the estate of this realm, and the danger it stood in for lack of issue male to succeed me in this imperial dignity.'—CAVENDISH, p. 220.

\* 'If a man shall take his brother's wife it is an unclean thing. He hath uncovered his brother's nakedness. They shall be childless.'—*Leviticus* xx. 21. It ought to be remembered, that if the present law of England be right, the party in favour of the divorce was right.

The circumstances in which Catherine was placed were of a kind which no sensitive woman could have endured without impatience and mortification; but her conduct, however natural, only widened the breach which personal repugnance and radical opposition of character had already made too wide. So far Henry and she were alike that both had imperious tempers, and both were indomitably obstinate; but Henry was hot and impetuous, Catherine was cold and self-contained—Henry saw his duty through his wishes; Catherine, in her strong Castilian austerity, measured her steps by the letter of the law; the more her husband withdrew from her, the more she insisted upon her relation to him as his wife; and continued with fixed purpose and immovable countenance\* to share his table and his bed long after she was aware of his dislike for her.

Characters of Henry and Catherine.

If the validity of so unfortunate a connexion had never been questioned, or if no national interests had been dependent on the continuance or the abolition of it, these discomforts were not too great to have been endured in silence. They were not originally occasioned by any latent inclination on the part of the king for another woman. They had arisen to their worst dimensions before he had ever seen Anne Boleyn, and were produced by causes of a wholly independent kind; and even if it had not been so, when we remember the tenor of his early life we need not think that he would

The motives which influenced Henry.

---

\* *Letters of the Bishop of Bayonne*, LEGRAND, vol. iii.



CH. 2. have been unequal to the restraint which ordinary persons in similar circumstances are able to impose on their caprices. The legates spoke no more than the truth when they wrote to the pope, saying that 'it was mere madness to suppose that the king would act as he was doing merely out of dislike of the queen, or out of inclination for another person; he was not a man whom harsh manners and an unpleasant disposition (*duri mores et injucunda consuetudo*) could so far provoke; nor could any sane man believe him to be so infirm of character that sensual allurements would have led him to dissolve a connexion in which he had passed the flower of youth without stain or blemish, and in which he had borne himself in his trial so reverently and honourably.'\* I consider this entirely true in a sense which no great knowledge of human nature is required to understand. The king's personal dissatisfaction was great: if this had been all, however, it would have been extinguished or endured; but the interests of the nation, imperilled as they were by the maintenance of the marriage, entitled him to regard his position under another aspect. Even if the marriage in itself had never been questioned, he might justly have desired the dissolution of it; and when he recalled the circumstances under which it was contracted, the hesitation of the council, the reluctance of the pope, the alarms and vacillation of his father, we may readily perceive how scruples of conscience

Opinion of  
the legates.

---

\* Legates to the Pope, printed in BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 40.

must have arisen in a soil well prepared to receive them—how the loss of his children must have appeared as a judicial sentence on a violation of the Divine law. The divorce presented itself to him as a moral obligation, when national advantage combined with superstition to encourage what he secretly desired; and if he persuaded himself that those public reasons, without which, in truth and fact, he would not have stirred, were those that alone were influencing him, the self-deceit was of a kind with which the experience of most men will probably have made them too familiar. In those rare cases where inclination coincides with right, we cannot be surprised if mankind should mislead themselves with the belief that the disinterested motives weigh more with them than the personal.

CH. 2.  
The interests of the nation combined with private feeling to persuade a divorce.

A remarkable and very candid account of Henry's feelings is furnished by himself in one of the many papers of instructions\* which he forwarded to his secretary at Rome. Hypocrisy was not among his faults, and in detailing the arguments which were to be laid before the pope he has exhibited a more complete revelation of what was passing in himself—and indirectly of his own nature in its strength and weakness—than he perhaps imagined while he wrote. The despatch is long and perplexed; the style that of a man who saw his end clearly, and was vexed with the intricate and dishonest trifling with which his way was impeded, and

Henry's own account of himself.

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 117.

CH. 2. which nevertheless he was struggling to tolerate. The secretary was to say, 'that the King's Highness having above all other things his intent and mind ever founded upon such respect unto Almighty God as to a Christian and catholic prince doth appertain, knowing the fragility and uncertainty of all earthly things, and how displeasing unto God, how much dangerous to the soul, how dishonourable and damageable to the world it were to prefer vain and transitory things unto those that be perfect and certain, hath in this cause, doubt, and matter of matrimony, whereupon depend so high and manifold consequences of greatest importance, always cast from his conceit the darkness and blundering confusion of falsity, and specially hath had and put before his eyes the light and shining brightness of truth; upon which foundation as a most sure base for perpetual tranquillity of his conscience his Highness hath expressly resolved and determined with himself to build and establish all his acts, deeds, and cogitations touching this matter; without God did build the house, in vain they laboured that went about to build it; and all actions grounded upon that immovable fundament of truth, must needs therein be firm, sound, whole, perfect, and worthy of a Christian man; which if truth were put apart, they could not for the same reason be but evil, vain, slipper, uncertain, and in nowise permanent or endurable.' He then laboured to urge

He seems to desire straightforward dealing both in himself and all parties concerned.

on the pope the duty of straightforward dealing; and dwelt in words which have a sad interest for us (when we consider the manner in which the

subject of them has been dealt with) on the judgment bar, not of God only, but of human posterity, at which his conduct would be ultimately tried.

‘The causes of private persons dark and doubtful be sometimes,’ the king said, ‘pretermitted and passed over as things more meet at some seasons to be dissimuled than by continual strife and plea to nourish controversies. Yet since all people have their eyes coniect upon princes, whose acts and doings not only be observed in the mouths of them that now do live, but also remain in such perpetual memory to our posterity [so that] the evil, if any there be, cannot but appear and come to light, there is no reason for toleration, no place for dissimulation; but [there is reason] more deeply, highly, and profoundly to penetrate and search for the truth, so that the same may vanquish and overcome, and all guilt, craft, and falsehood clearly be extirpate and reject.’

I am anticipating the progress of the story in making these quotations; for the main burden of the despatch concerns a forged document which had been introduced by the Roman lawyers to embarrass the process, and of which I shall by-and-bye have to speak directly; but I have desired to illustrate the spirit in which Henry entered upon the general question—assuredly a more calm and rational one than historians have usually represented it to be. In dealing with the obstacle which had been raised, he displayed a most efficient mastery over himself, although he did not conclude without touching the pith of the matter with telling clearness. The secretary was to

CH. 2. take some opportunity of speaking to the pope privately; and of warning him, 'as of himself,'  
 A.D. 1527. But he was undoubtedly determined to persevere. that there was no hope that the king would give way: he was to 'say plainly to his Holiness that the king's desire and intent *convolare ad secundas nuptias non patitur negativum*; and whatsoever should be found of bull, brief, or otherwise, his Highness found his conscience so inquieted, his succession in such danger, and his most royal person in such perplexity for things unknown and not to be spoken, that other remedy there was not but his Grace to come by one way or other, and specially at his hands, if it might be, to the desired end; and that all concertation to the contrary should be vain and frustrate.'

So peremptory a conviction and so determined a purpose were of no sudden growth, and had been probably maturing in his mind for years, when the gangrene was torn open by the Bishop of Tarbès, and accident precipitated his resolution. The momentous consequences involved, and the reluctance to encounter a probable quarrel with the emperor, might have long kept him silent, except for some extraneous casualty; but the tree being thus rudely shaken, the ripe fruit fell. The capture of Rome occurring almost at the same moment, Wolsey caught the opportunity to break the Spanish alliance; and the prospect of a divorce was grasped at by him as a lever by which to throw the weight of English power and influence into the papal scale, to commit Henry definitely to the catholic cause. Like his acceptance of legatine authority, the expedient was a

Wolsey takes advantage of the capture of Rome, and breaks the alliance with Spain.

desperate one, and if it failed it was ruinous. CH. 2.  
The nation at that time was sincerely attached  
to Spain. The alliance with the house of Bur-  
gundy was of old date; the commercial inter-  
course with Flanders was enormous, Flanders, in  
fact, absorbing all the English exports; and as  
many as 15,000 Flemings were settled in London.  
Charles himself was personally popular; he had  
been the ally of England in the late French war;  
and when in his supposed character of leader of  
the anti-papal party in Europe he allowed a  
Lutheran army to desecrate Rome, he had won the  
sympathy of all the latent discontent which was  
fermenting in the population. France, on the  
other hand, was as cordially hated as Spain was  
beloved. A state of war with France was the  
normal condition of England; and the re-con-  
quest of it the universal dream from the cottage  
to the castle. Henry himself, early in his reign,  
had shared in this delusive ambition; and but  
three years before the sack of Rome, when the  
Duke of Suffolk led an army into Normandy,  
Wolsey's purposed tardiness in sending reinforce-  
ments had alone saved Paris.\*

A.D. 1527.

Unpopu-  
larity of this  
policy.

There could be no doubt, therefore, that a  
breach with the emperor would in a high degree  
be unwelcome to the country. The king, and  
probably such members of the council as were  
aware of his feelings, shrank from offering an open  
affront to the Spanish people, and anxious as  
they were for a settlement of the succession,

---

\* *Letters of the Bishop of Bayonne*, LEGRAND, vol. iii.;  
HALL, 669.

CH. 2. perhaps trusted that advantage might be taken  
 A.D. 1527. of some political contingency for a private arrangement; that Catherine might be induced by Charles himself to retire privately, and sacrifice herself, of her free will, to the interests of the two countries. This, however, is no more than conjecture; I think it probable, because so many English statesmen were in favour at once of the divorce and of the Spanish alliance—two objects which, only on some such hypothesis, were compatible. The fact cannot be ascertained, however, because the divorce itself was not discussed at the council table until Wolsey had induced the king to change his policy by the hope of immediate relief.

Wolsey uses  
 the prospect of the  
 divorce to  
 gain Henry's  
 consent.

Wolsey has revealed to us fully his own objects in a letter to Sir Gregory Cassalis, his agent at Rome. He shared with half Europe in an impression that the emperor's Italian campaigns were designed to further the Reformation; and of this central delusion he formed the keystone of his conduct. 'First condoling with his Holiness,' he wrote, 'on the unhappy position in which, with the college of the most reverend cardinals, he is placed,\* you shall tell him how, day and night, I am revolving by what means or contrivance I may bring comfort to the church of Christ, and raise the fallen state of our most Holy Lord. I care not what it may cost me, whether of expense or trouble; nay, though I have to shed my blood, or give my life for it, assuredly so long as life remains to me for

---

\* They were shut up in the Castle of St. Angelo.

this I will labour. And now let me mention the great and marvellous effects which have been wrought by my instrumentality on the mind of my most excellent master the king, whom I have persuaded to unite himself with his Holiness in heart and soul. I urged innumerable reasons to induce him to part him from the emperor, to whom he clung with much tenacity. The most effective of them all was the constancy with which I assured him of the good-will and affection which were felt for him by his Holiness, and the certainty that his Holiness would furnish proof of his friendship in conceding his said Majesty's requests, in such form as the church's treasure and the authority of the Vicar of Christ shall permit, or so far as that authority extends or may extend. I have undertaken, moreover, for all these things in their utmost latitude, pledging my salvation, my faith, my honour and soul upon them. I have said that his demands shall be granted amply and fully, without scruple, without room or occasion being left for after-retractation; and the King's Majesty, in consequence, believing on these my solemn asseverations that the Pope's Holiness is really and indeed well inclined towards him, accepting what is spoken by me as spoken by the legate of the Apostolic See, and therefore, as in the name of his Holiness, has determined to run the risk which I have pressed upon him; he will spare no labour or expense, he will disregard the wishes of his subjects, and the private interest of his Realm,

CH. 2.

A.D. 1527.

Dec. 6.

Wolsey informs the pope that he has detached Henry from the emperor,

And that in return he has undertaken that the pope will concede the divorce.



CH. 2. to attach himself cordially and constantly to the  
 A.D. 1527. Holy See.\*

Wolsey a  
 sincere ser-  
 vant of the  
 church of  
 Rome.

He was en-  
 titled to  
 suppose  
 that if he  
 succeeded,  
 success  
 would jus-  
 tify him.

The spread  
 of protes-  
 tantism,  
 and the  
 English  
 aversion to  
 it.

These were the words of a man who loved England well, but who loved Rome better; and Wolsey has received but scanty justice from catholic writers, since he sacrificed himself for the catholic cause. His scheme was bold and well laid, being weak only in that it was confessedly in contradiction to the instincts and genius of the nation, by which, and by which alone, in the long run, either this or any other country has been successfully governed. And yet he might well be forgiven if he ventured on an unpopular course in the belief that the event would justify him; and that, in uniting with France to support the pope, he was not only consulting the true interest of England, but was doing what England actually desired, although blindly aiming at her object by other means. The French wars, however traditionally popular, were fertile only in glory. The rivalry of the two countries was a splendid folly, wasting the best blood of both countries for an impracticable chimera; and though there was impatience of ecclesiastical misrule, though there was jealousy of foreign interference, and general irritation with the state of the church, yet the mass of the people hated protestantism even worse than they hated the pope, the clergy, and the consistory courts. They believed—and Wolsey was, perhaps, the only leading member of the privy council, except Archbishop Warham, who was not under the same delusion—that it was

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. pp. 18, 19.

possible for a national church to separate itself CH. 2.  
from the unity of Christendom, and at the same A.D. 1527.  
time to crush or prevent innovation of doctrine;  
that faith in the sacramental system could still  
be maintained, though the priesthood by whom  
these mysteries were dispensed should minister  
in gilded chains. This was the English historical  
theory handed down from William Rufus, the  
second Henry, and the Edwards; yet it was and  
is a mere phantasm, a thing of words and paper  
fictions, as Wolsey saw it to be. Wolsey knew  
well that an ecclesiastical revolt implied, as a cer-  
tainty, innovation of doctrine; that plain men  
could not and would not continue to reverence  
the office of the priesthood, when the priests were  
treated as the paid officials of an earthly authority  
higher than their own. He was not to be blamed  
if he took the people at their word; if he believed  
that, in their doctrinal conservatism, they knew  
and meant what they were saying: and the re-  
action which took place under Queen Mary, when  
the Anglican system had been tried and failed,  
and the alternative was seen to be absolute  
between a union with Rome or a forfeiture of  
catholic orthodoxy, prove after all that he was  
wiser than in the immediate event he seemed  
to be; that if his policy had succeeded, and if,  
strengthened by success, he had introduced into  
the church those reforms which he had promised  
and desired,\* he would have satisfied the sub-  
stantial wishes of the majority of the nation.

---

\* The fullest account of Wolsey's intentions on church reform | will be found in a letter addressed to him by Fox, the old

CH. 2.

A.D. 1527.

Visionary  
character  
of Wolsey's  
genius.Wolsey's  
schemes.

Like other men of genius, Wolsey also combined practical sagacity with an unmeasured power of hoping. As difficulties gathered round him, he encountered them with the increasing magnificence of his schemes; and after thirty years' experience of public life, he was as sanguine as a boy. Armed with this little lever of the divorce, he saw himself, in imagination, the re-builder of the catholic faith and the deliverer of Europe. The king being remarried, and the succession settled, he would purge the Church of England, and convert the monasteries into intellectual garrisons of pious and learned men, occupying the land from end to end. The feuds with France should cease for ever, and, united in a holy cause, the two countries should restore the papacy, put down the German heresies, depose the emperor, and establish in his place some faithful servant of the church. Then Europe once more at peace, the hordes of the Crescent, which were threatening to settle the quarrels of Christians in the West as they had settled them in the East—by the extinction of Christianity itself,—were to be hurled back into their proper barbarism.\* These

blind Bishop of Winchester, in 1528. The letter is printed in STYFFE'S *Memorials Eccles.* vol. i. Appendix 10.

\* *Letters of the Bishop of Bayonne*, LEGRAND, vol. iii. It is not uncommon to find splendid imaginations of this kind haunting statesmen of the 16th century; and the recapture of Constantinople always formed a feature in the picture. *A Plan*

*for the Reformation of Ireland*, drawn up in 1515, contains the following curious passage: 'The prophecy is, that the King of England shall put this land of Ireland into such order that the wars of the land, whereof groweth the vices of the same, shall cease for ever; and after that God shall give such grace and fortune to the same king that he shall with the army of England

magnificent visions fell from him in conversations with the Bishop of Bayonne, and may be gathered from hints and fragments of his correspondence. Extravagant as they seem, the prospect of realizing them was, humanly speaking, neither chimerical nor even improbable. He had but made the common mistake of men of the world who are the representatives of an old order of things at the time when that order is doomed and dying. He could not read the signs of the times; and confounded the barrenness of death with the barrenness of a winter which might be followed by a new spring and summer; he believed that the old life-tree of catholicism, which in fact was but cumbering the ground, might bloom again in its old beauty. The thing which he called heresy was the fire of Almighty God, which no politic congregation of princes, no state machinery, though it were never so active, could trample out; and as in the early years of Christianity the meanest slave who was thrown to the wild beasts for his presence at the forbidden mysteries of the gospel, saw deeper, in the divine power of his faith, into the future even of this earthly world than the sagest of his imperial persecutors, so a truer political prophet than Wolsey would have been found in the most ignorant of those poor men, for whom his myrmidons were searching in

CH. 2.

A.D. 1527.

His single  
but fatal  
mistake.

---

and of Ireland subdue the realm of France to his obeysance for ever, and shall rescue the Greeks, and recover the great city of Constantinople, and shall van- quish the Turks and win the	Holy Cross and the Holy Land, and shall die Emperor of Rome, and eternal blisse shall be his end.'— <i>State Papers</i> , vol. ii. pp. 30, 31.
---	--

CH. 2. the purlieus of London, who were risking death  
 A.D. 1527. and torture in disseminating the pernicious  
 volumes of the English Testament.

Complica-  
 tion of  
 European  
 politics.  
 If we look at the matter, however, from a  
 more earthly point of view, the causes which  
 immediately defeated Wolsey's policy were not  
 such as human foresight could have anticipated.  
 We ourselves, surveying the various parties in  
 Europe with the light of our knowledge of the  
 actual sequel, are perhaps able to understand their  
 real relations; but if in 1527 a political astrologer  
 had foretold that within two years of that time  
 the pope and the emperor who had imprisoned  
 him would be cordial allies, that the positions of  
 England and Spain toward the papacy would be  
 diametrically reversed, and that the two countries  
 were on the point of taking their posts, which they  
 would ever afterwards maintain, as the champions  
 respectively of the opposite principles to those  
 which at that time they seemed to represent, the  
 prophecy would have been held scarcely less  
 insane than a prophecy six or even three years  
 before the event, that in the year 1854 England  
 would be united with an Emperor Napoleon for  
 the preservation of European order.

Henry  
 breaks the  
 Spanish  
 alliance.

Henry, then, in the spring of the year 1527,  
 definitively breaking the Spanish alliance, formed  
 a league with Francis I., the avowed object of  
 which was the expulsion of the Imperialists from  
 Italy; with a further intention—if it could be  
 carried into effect—of avenging the outrage  
 offered to Europe in the pope's imprisonment,  
 by declaring vacant the imperial throne. Simul-

taneously with the congress at Amiens where the terms of the alliance were arranged, confidential persons were despatched into Italy to obtain an interview—if possible—with the pope, and formally laying before him the circumstances of the king's position, to request him to make use of his powers to provide a remedy. It is noticeable that at the outset of the negotiation the king did not fully trust Wolsey. The latter had suggested, as the simplest method of proceeding, that the pope should extend his authority as legate, granting him plenary power to act as English vicegerent so long as Rome was occupied by the Emperor's troops. Henry, not wholly satisfied that he was acquainted with his minister's full intentions in desiring so large a capacity, sent his own secretary, unknown to Wolsey, with his own private propositions—requesting simply a dispensation to take a second wife, his former marriage being allowed to stand with no definite sentence passed upon it; or, if that were impossible, leaving the pope to choose his own method, and settle the question in the manner least difficult and least offensive.\*

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1527.

August 5.  
Wolsey requests an extension of power.

Sept. 12.  
He is not wholly trusted by Henry.

Wolsey, however, soon satisfied the king that he had no sinister intentions. By the middle of the winter we find the private messenger associated openly with Sir Gregory Cassalis, the agent of the minister's communications;† and a series of formal demands were presented jointly by these two persons in the names of Henry and the

But soon satisfies him.

Dec. 15.  
The demands which were made upon the pope.

\* Knight to Henry: *State Papers*, vol. vii. pp. 2, 3.

† Wolsey to Cassalis: *Ibid.* p. 26.

CH. 2. legate; which, though taking many forms, re-

A.D. 1527.

The marriages of princes affected by other considerations than those which touch them in their personal capacities.

Provision made by the canon law for this and similar contingencies.

solved themselves substantially into one. The pope was required to make use of his dispensing power to enable the King of England to marry a wife who could bear him children, and thus provide some better security than already existed for the succession to the throne. This demand could not be considered as in itself unreasonable; and if personal feeling was combined with other motives to induce Henry to press it, personal feeling did not affect the general bearing of the question. The king's desire was publicly urged on public grounds, and thus, and thus only, the pope was at liberty to consider it. The marriages of princes have ever been affected by other considerations than those which influence such relations between private persons. Princes may not, as 'unvalued persons' may, 'carve for themselves;' they pay the penalty of their high place, in submitting their affections to the welfare of the state; and the same causes which regulate the formation of these ties must be allowed to influence the continuance of them. The case which was submitted to the pope was one of those for which his very power of dispensing had been vested in him; and being, as he called himself, the Father of Christendom, the nation thought themselves entitled to call upon him to make use of that power. A resource of the kind must exist somewhere—the relation between princes and subjects indispensably requiring it. It had been vested in the Bishop of Rome, because it had been presumed that the sanctity of his office

would secure an impartial exercise of his authority. And unless he could have shown (which he never attempted to show) that the circumstances of the succession were not so precarious as to call for his interference, it would seem that the express contingency had arisen which was contemplated in the constitution of the canon law;\* and that where a provision had been made by the church of which he was the earthly head, for difficulties of this precise description, the pope was under an obligation either to make the required concessions in virtue of his faculty, or, if he found himself unable to make those concessions, to offer some distinct explanation of his refusal. I speak of the question as nakedly political. I am not considering the private injuries of which Catherine had so deep a right to complain, nor the complications subsequently raised on the original validity of the first marriage. A political difficulty, on which alone he was bound to give sentence, was laid before the pope in his judicial capacity, in the name of the nation; and the painful features which the process afterwards assumed are due wholly to his original weakness and vacillation.

Deeply, however, as we must all deplore the

---

\* The dispensing power of the popes was not formally limited. According to the Roman lawyers, a faculty lay with them of granting extraordinary dispensations in cases where dispensations would not be usually admissible—which faculty was to

be used, however, dummodo causa cogat urgentissima ne regnum aliquod funditus pereat; the pope's business being to decide on the question of urgency.—Sir Gregory Cassalis to Henry VIII., Dec. 26, 1532. *Rolls House MS.*



CH. 2. scandal and suffering which were occasioned by  
 the dispute, it was in a high degree fortunate, that  
 at the crisis of public dissatisfaction in England  
 with the condition of the church, especially in the  
 conduct of its courts of justice, a cause should  
 have arisen which tested the whole question of  
 church authority in its highest form; where the  
 dispute between the laity and the ecclesiastics  
 was represented in a process in which the pope  
 sat as judge; in which the king was the appel-  
 lant, and the most vital interests of the nation  
 were at stake upon the issue. It was no acci-  
 dent which connected a suit for divorce with  
 the reformation of religion. The ecclesiastical  
 jurisdiction was upon its trial, and the future  
 relations of church and state depended upon  
 the pope's conduct in a matter which no tech-  
 nical skill was required to decide, but only the  
 moral virtues of probity and courage. The time  
 had been when the clergy feared only to be un-  
 just, and when the functions of judges might  
 safely be entrusted to them. The small iniquities  
 of the consistory courts had shaken the popular  
 faith in the continued operation of such a fear; and  
 the experience of an Alexander VI., a Julius II.,  
 and a Leo X. had induced a suspicion that even in  
 the highest quarters justice had ceased to be much  
 considered. It remained for Clement VII. to  
 disabuse men of their alarms, or by confirming  
 them to forfeit for ever the supremacy of his  
 order in England. Nor can it be said for him  
 that the case was one in which it was unusually  
 difficult to be virtuous. Justice, wounded dignity,

The dis-  
 putes on the  
 limit of the  
 spiritual  
 jurisdiction  
 brought to  
 a crisis.

Position of  
 the pope.

and the interests of the See pointed alike to the same course. Queen Catherine's relationship to the emperor could not have recommended her to the tenderness of the pope, and the policy of assenting to an act which would infallibly alienate Henry from Charles, and therefore attach him to the Roman interests, did not require the eloquence of Wolsey to make it intelligible. If, because he was in the emperor's power, he therefore feared the personal consequences to himself, his cowardice of itself disqualified him to sit as a judge.

It does not fall within my present purpose to detail the first stages of the proceedings which followed. In substance they are well known to all readers of English history, and may be understood without difficulty as soon as we possess the clue to the conduct of Wolsey. I shall, however, in a few pages briefly epitomize what passed.

At the outset of the negotiation, the pope, although he would take no positive steps, was all, in words, which he was expected to be. Neither he nor the cardinals refused to acknowledge the dangers which threatened the country. He discussed freely the position of the different parties, the probabilities of a disputed succession, and the various claimants who would present themselves, if the king died without an heir of undisputed legitimacy.\* Gardiner writes to Wolsey,† 'We did even more inculcate what speed and celerity the thing required, and what danger it was to the realm to have this matter hang in suspense. His

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1527.

He admits the danger of a disputed succession in England.

A.D. 1527-8  
Jan. 1.

\* Knight and Cassalis to Wolsey: BURNET's *Collect.* p. 12.

† STYFFE's *Memorials*, vol. i., Appendix, p. 66.

CH. 2. Holiness confessed the same, and thereupon began  
 A.D. 1528.  
 March 30. to reckon what divers titles might be pretended  
 by the King of Scots and others, and granted that,  
 without an heir male, with provision to be made  
 by consent of the state for his succession, and  
 unless that what shall be done herein be estab-  
 lished in such fashion as nothing may hereafter  
 be objected thereto, the realm was like to come to  
 dissolution.'

In stronger language the Cardinal-Governor of  
 Bologna declared that 'he knew the gyze of Eng-  
 land as well as few men did, and if the king should  
 die without heirs male, he was sure it would cost  
 two hundred thousand men's lives. Wherefore he  
 thought, supposing his Grace should have no more  
 children by the queen, and that by taking of an-  
 other wife he might have heirs male, the bringing  
 to pass that matter, and by that to avoid the mis-  
 chiefs afore written, he thought would deserve  
 Heaven.'\* Whatever doubt there might be, there-  
 fore, whether the original marriage with Catherine  
 was legal, it was universally admitted that there  
 was none about the national desirableness of the  
 dissolution of it; and if the pope had been free to  
 judge only by the merits of the case, it is impos-  
 sible to doubt that he would have cut the knot,  
 either by granting a dispensation to Henry to  
 marry a second wife—his first being formally,  
 though not judicially, separated from him—or in  
 some other way.† But the emperor was 'a lion

The hesita-  
 tion of the  
 pope, owing  
 to his fear  
 of the em-  
 peror.

\* Sir F. Bryan and Peter Vannes to Henry; *State Papers*, vol.  
 vii. p. 144.

† STYRE'S *Memorials*, Appendix, vol. i. p. 100.

in his path;’ the question of strength between the French and the Spaniards remained undecided, and Clement would come to no decision until he was assured of the power of the allies to protect him from the consequences. Accordingly he said and unsaid, sighed, sobbed, beat his breast, shuffled, implored, threatened;\* in all ways he endeavoured to escape from his dilemma, to say yes and to say no, to do nothing, to offend no one, and above all to gain time, with the weak man’s hope that ‘something might happen’ to extricate him. Embassy followed embassy from England, each using language more threatening than its predecessor. The thing, it was said, must be done, and should be done. If it was not done by the pope it would be done at home in some other way, and the pope must take the consequences.† Wolsey warned him passionately of the rising storm,‡ a storm which would be so terrible when it burst ‘that it would

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1528.

Wolsey threatens him with the consequences of a refusal.

\* STYFFE’S *Memorials*, Appendix, vol. i. pp. 105–6; BURNET’S *Collectanea*, p. 13.

† Wolsey to the Pope, BURNET’S *Collectanea*, p. 16: Vereor quod tamen nequeo tacere, ne Regia Majestas, humano divinoque jure quod habet ex omni Christianitate suis his actionibus adjunctum freta, postquam viderit sedis Apostolicæ gratiam et Christi in terris Vicarii clementiam desperatam Cæsaris intuitu, in cujus manu neutiquam est tam sanctos conatus reprimere, ea tunc molitur, ea suæ causæ perquirat remedia, quæ non solum huic Regno sed etiam aliis Chris-

tianis principibus occasionem subministrarent sedis Apostolicæ auctoritatem et jurisdictionem imminuendi et vilipendendi.

‡ BURNET’S *Collectanea*, p. 20. Wolsey to John Cassalis: ‘If his Holyness, which God forbid, shall shew himself unwilling to listen to the king’s demands, to me assuredly it will be but grief to live longer, for the innumerable evils which I foresee will then follow. One only sure remedy remains to prevent the worst calamities. If that be neglected, there is nothing before us but universal and inevitable ruin.’

CH. 2. be better to die than to live.' The pope was  
 A.D. 1528. strangely unable to believe that the danger could  
 be real, being misled perhaps by other information  
 from the friends of Queen Catherine, and by an  
 over-confidence in the attachment of the people  
 to the emperor. He acted throughout in a manner  
 natural to a timid amiable man, who found him-  
 self in circumstances to which he was unequal;  
 and as long as we look at him merely as a man  
 we can pity his embarrassment. He forgot, how-  
 ever, that only because he was supposed to be  
 more than a man had kings and emperors con-  
 sented to plead at his judgment seat—a fact of  
 which Stephen Gardiner, then Wolsey's secretary,  
 thought it well to remind him in the following  
 striking language:—

Gardiner's  
 alternative.

'Unless,' said the future Bishop of Winchester  
 in the council, at the close of a weary day of un-  
 profitable debating, 'unless some other resolution  
 be taken than I perceive you intend to make,  
 hereupon shall be gathered a marvellous opinion  
 of your Holiness, of the college of cardinals, and  
 of the authority of this See. The King's High-  
 ness, and the nobles of the realm who shall be  
 made privy to this, shall needs think that your  
 Holiness and these most reverend and learned  
 councillors either will not answer in this cause,  
 or cannot answer. If you will not, if you do  
 not choose to point out the way to an erring man,  
 the care of whom is by God committed to you,  
 they will say, 'Oh race of men most ungrateful,  
 and of your proper office most oblivious! You  
 who should be simple as doves are full of all

If the pope  
 will not de-  
 cide, where  
 is his jus-  
 tice?

deceit, and craft, and dissembling. If the king's cause be good, we require that you pronounce it good. If it be bad, why will you not say that it is bad, so to hinder a prince to whom you are so much bounden from longer continuing with it? We ask nothing of you but justice, which the king so loves and values, that whatever sinister things others may say or think of him, he will follow that with all his heart; that, and nothing else, whether it be for the marriage or against the marriage.' CH. 2.  
A.D. 1528.

'But if the King's Majesty,' continued Gardiner, hitting the very point of the difficulty, 'if the King's Majesty and the nobility of England, being persuaded of your good will to answer if you can do so, shall be brought to doubt of your ability, they will be forced to a harder conclusion respecting this See—namely, that God has taken from it the key of knowledge; and they will begin to give better ear to that opinion of some persons to which they have as yet refused to listen, that those papal laws which neither the pope himself nor his council can interpret, deserve only to be committed to the flames.' 'I desired his Holiness,' he adds, 'to ponder well this matter.'\* If he cannot decide, where is his infallibility?

Clement was no hero, but in his worst embarrassments his wit never failed him. He answered that he was not learned, and 'to speak truth, albeit there was a saying in the canon law, that *Pontifex habet omnia jura in scrinio pectoris* (the pope has all laws locked within his breast), yet God had never given him the key to open that The pope's answer.

---

\* Gardiner and Fox to Wolsey: STYPE'S *Memorials*, vol. i. Appendix, p. 92.

CH. 2. lock.' He was but 'seeking pretexts' for delay,  
 A.D. 1528. as Gardiner saw, till the issue of the Italian campaign of the French in the summer of 1528 was decided. He had been liberated, or had been allowed to escape from Rome, in the fear that if detained longer he might nominate a vicegerent; and was residing at an old ruined castle at Orvieto, waiting upon events, leaving the Holy City still occupied by the Prince of Orange. In the preceding autumn, immediately after the congress at Amiens, M. de Lautrec, accompanied by several English noblemen, had led an army across the Alps. He had defeated the Imperialists in the north of Italy in several minor engagements; and in January his success appeared so probable, that the pope took better heart, and told Sir Gregory Cassalis, that if the French would only approach near enough to enable him to plead compulsion, he would grant a commission to Wolsey, with plenary power to conclude the cause.\* De Lautrec, however, foiled in his desire

If the French general will seem to compel him, he will consent.

\* His Holiness being yet in captivity, as he esteemed himself to be, so long as the Almayns and Spaniards continue in Italy, he thought if he should grant this commission that he should have the emperour his perpetual enemy without any hope of reconciliation. Notwithstanding he was content rather to put himself in evident ruin, and utter undoing, than the king or your Grace shall suspect any point of ingratitude in him; heartily desiring with sighs and tears that the king and your Grace which have been always

fast and good to him, will not now suddenly precipitate him for ever: which should be done if immediately on receiving the commission your Grace should begin process. He intendeth to save all upright thus. If M. de Lautrec would set forwards, which he saith daily that he will do, but yet he doth not, at his coming the Pope's Holiness may have good colour to say, 'He was required of the commission by the ambassador of England, and denying the same, he was, eftsoons, required by M. de Lautrec to grant the said commis-

to bring the Imperialists to a decisive engagement, wasted his time and strength in ineffectual petty sieges; and finally, in the summer, on the unhealthy plains of Naples, a disaster more fatal in its consequences than the battle of Pavia, closed the prospects of the French to the south of the Alps; and with them all Wolsey's hopes of realizing his dream. Struck down, not by a visible enemy, but by the silent hand of fever, the French general himself, his English friends, and all his army melted away from off the earth. The pope had been wise in time. He had committed himself in words and intentions; but he had done nothing which he could not recal. He obtained his pardon from the emperor by promising to offend no more; and from that moment never again entertained any real thought of concession. Acting under explicit directions, he made it his object thenceforward to delay and to procrastinate. Charles had no desire to press matters to extremities. War had not yet been declared\* against

CH. 2.

A.D. 1528.  
The French  
army lost at  
Naples.

Relations  
between  
England  
and Spain.

sion, inasmuch as it was but a letter of justice.' And by this colour he would cover the matter so that it might appear unto the emperor that the pope did it not as he that would gladly do displeasure unto the emperor, but as an indifferent judge, that could not nor might deny justice, specially being required by such personages; and immediately he would despatch a commission bearing date after the time that M. de Lautrec had been with him or was nigh unto him. The pope most instantly beseecheth

your Grace to be a mean that the King's Highness may accept this in a good part, and that he will take patience for this little time, which, as it is supposed, will be but short.—Knight to Wolsey and the King, Jan. 1, 1527-8: *BURNET Collections*, 12, 13.

\* Such at least was the ultimate conclusion of a curious discussion. When the French herald declared war, the English herald accompanied him into the emperor's presence, and when his companion had concluded, followed up his words with an



CH. 2. him by Henry; nor was he anxious himself to  
 A.D. 1528. precipitate a quarrel from which, if possible, he  
 would gladly escape. He had a powerful party  
 in England, which it was unwise to alienate by  
 hasty, injudicious measures; and he could gain  
 all which he himself desired by a simple policy of  
 obstruction. His object was merely to protract  
 the negotiation and prevent a decision, in the hope  
 either that Henry would be wearied into acqui-  
 escence, or that Catherine herself would retire of  
 her own accord, or, finally, that some happy acci-  
 dent might occur to terminate the difficulty. It  
 is, indeed, much to the honour of Charles V. that  
 he resolved to support the queen. She had thrown  
 herself on his protection; but princes in such mat-  
 ters consider prudence more than feeling, and he  
 could gain nothing by defending her: while, both  
 for himself and for the church he risked the loss of  
 much. He over-rated the strength of his English

Honourable  
 conduct of  
 the empe-  
 ror.

intimation that unless the French demands were complied with, England would unite to enforce them. The Emperor replied to Francis with defiance. To the English herald he expressed a hope that peace on that side would still be maintained. For the moment the two countries were uncertain whether they were at war or not. The Spanish ambassador in London did not know, and the court could not tell him. The English ambas-  
 sador in Spain did not leave his post, but he was placed under surveillance. An embargo on Spanish and English property was laid respectively in the ports of the two kingdoms; and the

merchants and residents were placed under arrest. Alarmed by the outcry in London, the king hastily concluded a truce with the Regent of the Netherlands, the language of which implied a state of war; but when peace was concluded between France and Spain, England appeared only as a contracting party, not as a principal, and in 1542 it was decided that the antecedent treaties between England and the empire continued in force.—See LORD HERBERT; HOLINSHED; *State Papers*, vols. vii. viii. and ix.; with the treaties in RYMER, vol. vi. part 2.

connexion, and mistook the English character; but he was not blind to the hazard which he was incurring, and would have welcomed an escape from the dilemma perhaps as warmly as Henry would have welcomed it himself. The pope, who well knew his feelings, told Gardiner, 'It would be for the wealth of Christendom if the queen were in her grave; and he thought the emperor would be thereof most glad of all;' saying, also, 'that he thought like as the emperor had destroyed the temporalities of the church, so should she be the destruction of the spiritualities.\*'

CH. 2.

A.D. 1528.

May 4.

In the summer of 1528, before the disaster at Naples, Cardinal Campeggio had left Rome on his way to England, where he was to hear the cause in conjunction with Wolsey. An initial measure of this obvious kind it had been impossible to refuse; and the pretexts under which it was for many months delayed, were exhausted before the pope's ultimate course had been made clear to him. But Campeggio was instructed to protract his journey to its utmost length, giving time for the campaign to decide itself. He loitered into the autumn, under the excuse of gout and other convenient accidents, until the news reached him of De Lautrec's death, which took place on the 21st of August; and then at length proceeding, he betrayed to Francis I., on passing through Paris, that he had no intention of allowing judgment to be passed upon the cause.† Even Wolsey was

Campeggio sets out for England.

August 21.  
His language at Paris.

\* Gardiner to the King: BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 426.

† Duke of Suffolk to Henry the Eighth: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 183.

CH. 2. beginning to tremble at what he had attempted,  
and was doubtful of success.\* The seeming

A. D. 1528.

State of  
feeling in  
London.

Derange-  
ment of  
English  
commerce.

relief came in time, for Henry's patience was fast running out. He had been over-persuaded into a course which he had never cordially approved. The majority of the council, especially the Duke of Norfolk and the Duke of Suffolk, were traditionally imperial, and he himself might well doubt whether he might not have found a nearer road out of his difficulties by adhering to Charles. Charles, after all, was not ruining the papacy, and had no intention of ruining it; and his lightest word weighed more at the court of Rome than the dubious threats and prayers of France. The Bishop of Bayonne, resident French ambassador in London, whose remarkable letters transport us back into the very midst of that unquiet and stormy scene, tells us plainly that the French alliance was hated by the country, that the nobility were all for the emperor, and that among the commons the loudest discontent was openly expressed against Wolsey from the danger of the interruption of the trade with Flanders. Flemish ships had been detained in London, and English ships in retaliation had been arrested in the Zealand ports; corn was unusually dear, and the expected supplies from Spain and Germany were cut off;† while the derangement of the woollen trade, from the reluctance of the merchants to venture purchases, was causing distress all over the country, and Wolsey had been driven to the

\* Duke of Suffolk to Henry VIII.: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 183.

† HALL, p. 744.

most arbitrary measures to prevent open disturbance.\* He had set his hopes upon the chance of a single cast which he would not believe could fail him, but on each fresh delay he was compelled to feel his declining credit, and the Bishop of Bayonne wrote, on the 20th of August, 1528, that the cardinal was in bad spirits, and had told him in confidence, that 'if he could only see the divorce arranged, the king remarried, the succession settled, and the laws and the manners and customs of the country reformed, he would retire from the world and would serve God the remainder of his days.'† To these few trifles he would be contented to confine himself—only to these; he was past sixty, he was weary of the world, and his health was breaking, and he would limit his hopes to

CH. 2.

A. D. 1528.

Wolsey's credit declines.

Wolsey wishes to retire into 'religion,' but what he would do first.

\* When the clothiers of Essex, Kent, Wiltshire, Suffolk, and other shires which are cloth-making, brought cloths to London to be sold, as they were wont, few merchants or none bought any cloth at all. When the clothiers lacked sale, then they put from them their spinners, carders, tuckers, and such others that lived by clothworking, which caused the people greatly to murmur, and specially in Suffolk, for if the Duke of Norfolk had not wisely appeased them, no doubt but they had fallen to some rioting. When the king's council was advertised of the inconvenience, the cardinal sent for a great number of the merchants of London, and to them said, 'Sirs, the king is informed that you use not yourselves like merchants, but like graziers and

artificers; for where the clothiers do daily bring cloths to the market for your ease, to their great cost, and then be ready to sell them, you of your wilfulness will not buy them, as you have been accustomed to do. What manner of men be you?' said the cardinal. 'I tell you that the king straitly commandeth you to buy their cloths as before-time you have been accustomed to do, upon pain of his high displeasure.'—HALL, p. 746.

† LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 157. By manners and customs he was referring clearly to his intended reformation of the church. See the letter of Fox, Bishop of Winchester (STEELE'S *Memorials*, vol. ii. p. 25), in which Wolsey's intentions are dwelt upon at length.

CH. 2. the execution of a work for which centuries im-  
 A.D. 1528. perfectly sufficed. It seemed as if he measured  
 his stature by the lengthening shadow, as his sun  
 made haste to its setting. Symptoms of misgiv-  
 ing may be observed in the many anxious letters  
 which he wrote while Campeggio was so long  
 upon his road; and the Bishop of Bayonne,  
 whose less interested eyes could see more  
 deeply into the game, warned him throughout  
 that the pope was playing him false.\* Only in  
 a revulsion from violent despondency could such  
 a man as Wolsey have allowed himself, on the  
 mere arrival of the legate, and after a few soft  
 words from him, to write in the following strain  
 to Sir Gregory Cassalis:—

October 4. ‘ You cannot believe the exultation with which  
 at length I find myself successful in the object  
 for which these many years, with all my industry,  
 I have laboured. At length I have found means  
 to bind my most excellent sovereign and this  
 glorious realm to the holy Roman see in faith and  
 obedience for ever. Henceforth will this people  
 become the most sure pillar of support to bear  
 up the sacred fabric of the church. Henceforth,  
 in recompense for that enduring felicity which he  
 has secured to it, our most Holy Lord has all  
 England at his devotion. In brief time will this  
 noble land make its grateful acknowledgments to  
 his clemency at once for the preservation of the  
 most just, most wise, most excellent of princes,  
 and for the secure establishment of the realm and  
 the protection of the royal succession.’†

---

\* *LEGRAND*, vol. iii. pp. 136, 7.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. pp. 96, 7.

This letter was dated on the fourth of October, and was written in the hope that the pope had collected his courage, and that the legate had brought powers to proceed to judgment. In a few days the prospect was again clouded, and Wolsey was once more in despair.\* Campeggio had brought with him instructions if possible to arrange a compromise,—if a compromise was impossible, to make the best use of his ingenuity, and do nothing and allow nothing to be done. In one of two ways, however, it was hoped that he might effect a peaceful solution. He urged the king to give way and to proceed no further; and this failing, as he was prepared to find, he urged the same thing upon the queen.† He invited Catherine, or he was directed to invite her, in the pope's name,‡ for the sake of the general interests of Christendom, to take the vows and enter what was called *religio laxa*, a state in which she might live unincumbered by obligations except the easy one of chastity, and free from all other restrictions either of habit, diet, or order. The proposal was Wolsey's, and was formed when he found the limited nature of Campeggio's instructions;§ but it was adopted by the latter; and I cannot but think (though I have no proof of it) that it was not adopted without the knowledge of the emperor. Whatever were his own interests, Charles V. gave Catherine his unwavering support: he made it his duty to maintain her in the ignominious position in which she was

CH. 2.

A.D. 1528.  
October 4.

Nov. 1.

The instructions of Campeggio.

He was to work by persuasion or not at all.

Proposal made to Catherine, probably with the consent of the emperor,

\* Wolsey to Cassalis: Ibid. p. 100.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. pp. 106, 7.

‡ Ibid. p. 113.

§ Ibid. vii. p. 113.

CH. 2. placed, and submitted his own conduct to be  
 A.D. 1528. guided by her wishes. It cannot be doubted, however, from the pope's words, and also from the circumstances of the case, that if she could have prevailed upon herself to yield, it would have relieved him from a painful embarrassment. As a prince, he must have felt the substantial justice of Henry's demand, and in refusing to allow the pope to pass a judicial sentence of divorce, he could not but have known that he was compromising the position of the Holy See: while Catherine herself, on the other hand, if she had yielded, would have retired without a stain; no opinion would have been pronounced upon her marriage; the legitimacy of the Princess Mary would have been left without impeachment; and her right to the succession, in the event of no male heir following from any new connexion which the king might form, would have been readily secured to her by act of parliament. It may be asked why she did not yield, and it is difficult to answer the question. She was not a person who would have been disturbed by the loss of a few court vanities. Her situation as Henry's wife could not have had many charms for her, nor can it be thought that she retained a personal affection for him. If she had loved him, she would have suffered too deeply in the struggle to have continued to resist, and the cloister would have seemed a paradise. Or if the cloister had appeared too sad a shelter for her, she might have gone back to the gardens of the Alhambra, where she had played as a child, carrying with her the

Which it  
 would have  
 been well if  
 she had ac-  
 cepted,

affectionate remembrance of every English heart, and welcomed by her own people as an injured saint. Nor again can we suppose that the possible injury of her daughter's prospects from the birth of a prince by another marriage could have seemed of so vast moment to her. Those prospects were already more than endangered, and would have been rather improved than brought into further peril.

It is not for us to dictate the conduct which a woman smarting under injuries so cruel ought to have pursued. She had a right to choose the course which seemed the best to herself, and England especially could not claim of a stranger that readiness to sacrifice herself which it might have demanded and exacted of one of its own children.

We may regret, however, what we are unable to censure; and the most refined ingenuity could scarcely have invented a more unfortunate answer than that which the Queen returned to the legate's request. She seems to have said that she was ready to take vows of chastity if the king would do the same. It does not appear whether the request was *formally* made, or whether it was merely suggested to her in private conversation. That she told the legates, however, what her answer would be, appears certain from the following passage, sadly indicating the 'devices of policy' to which in this unhappy business honourable men allowed themselves to be driven :—

'Forasmuch as it is like that the queen shall make marvellous difficulty, and in nowise be

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1528.

But to which she returned an ill-advised answer.

Wrong provokes wrong.



CH. 2. conformable to enter religion\* or take vows of  
 A.D. 1528. chastity, but that to induce her thereunto, there  
 must be ways and means of high policy used, and  
 all things possible devised to encourage her to the  
 same; wherein percase she shall resolve that she  
 in no wise will condescend so to do, unless that  
 the King's Highness also do the semblable for his  
 part; the king's said orators shall therefore in like  
 wise ripe and instruct themselves by their secret  
 learned council in the court of Rome, if, for so  
 great a benefit to ensue unto the king's succession,  
 realm, and subjects, with the quiet of his con-  
 science, his Grace should promise so to enter reli-  
 gion on vows of chastity for his part, only thereby  
 to conduce the queen thereunto, whether in that  
 case the Pope's Holiness may dispense with the  
 King's Highness for the same promise, oath, or  
 vow, discharging his Grace clearly of the same.†

Probable  
 explanation  
 of her con-  
 duct.

Dec. 1. The explanation of the queen's conduct lies  
 probably in regions into which it is neither easy  
 nor well to penetrate; in regions of outraged  
 delicacy and wounded pride, in a vast drama of  
 passion which had been enacted behind the  
 scenes. From the significant hints which are let  
 fall of the original cause of the estrangement, it  
 was of a kind more difficult to endure than the  
 ordinary trial of married women, the transfer of  
 a husband's affection to some fairer face; and a  
 wife whom so painful a misfortune had failed to  
 crush would be likely to have been moved by it

---

\* Take the veil.

† Instruction to the Ambassadors at Rome: *State Papers*,  
 vol. vii. p. 136.

to a deeper and more bitter indignation even, because while she could not blame herself, she knew not whom she might rightly allow herself to blame. And if this were so, the king is not likely to have allayed the storm when at length, putting faith in Wolsey's promises, he allowed himself openly to regard another person as his future wife, establishing her in the palace at Greenwich under the same roof with the queen, with reception rooms, and royal state, and a position openly acknowledged,\* the gay court and courtiers forsaking the gloomy dignity of the actual wife for the gaudy splendour of her brilliant rival. Tamer blood than that which flowed in the veins of a princess of Castile would have boiled under these indignities; and we have little reason to be surprised if policy and prudence were alike forgotten by Catherine in the bitterness of the draught which was forced upon her, and if her own personal wrongs outweighed the interests of the world. Henry had proceeded to the last unjustifiable extremity as soon as the character of Campeggio's mission had been made clear to him, as if to demonstrate to all the world that he was determined to persevere at all costs and hazards.† Taking the management of the negotiation into his own keeping, he sent Sir Francis Bryan, the cousin of Anne Boleyn, to the pope, to announce that what he required must be done, and to declare peremptorily, no

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1528.

Henry publicly acknowledged Anne Boleyn as his intended wife.

He threatens the pope.

---

\* *Letters of the Bishop of Bayonne*, LEGRAND, vol. iii.

† LEGRAND, vol. iii. 231.

CH. 2. more with covert hints, but with open menace,  
 A.D. 1528. that in default of help from Rome, he would lay  
 the matter before parliament, to be settled at  
 home by the laws of his own country.

The emper-  
 or's in-  
 trigues in  
 England.

Meanwhile, the emperor, who had hitherto conducted himself with the greatest address, had fallen into his first error. He had retreated skillfully out of the embarrassment in which the pope's imprisonment involved him, and mingling authority and dictation with kindness and deference, he had won over the Holy See to his devotion, and neutralized the danger to which the alliance of France and England threatened to expose him. His correspondence with the latter country assured him of the unpopularity of the course which had been pursued by the cardinal; he was aware of the obstruction of trade which it had caused, and of the general displeasure felt by the people at the breach of an old friendship; while the league with France in behalf of the Roman church had been barren of results, and was made ridiculous by the obvious preference of the pope for the enemy from whom it was formed to deliver him. If Charles had understood the English temper, therefore, and had known how to avail himself of the opportunity, events might have run in a very different channel. But he was not aware of the earnestness with which the people were bent upon securing the succession, nor of their loyal attachment to Henry. He supposed that disapproval of the course followed by Wolsey to obtain the divorce implied an aversion to it altogether; and trusting to his interest in

The emper-  
 or mis-  
 takes the  
 nature of  
 his influ-  
 ence in  
 England.

the privy council, and to his commercial connexion with the city, he had attempted to meet menace with menace; he had replied to the language addressed by Henry to the pope with an attempt to feel the pulse of English disaffection, and he opened a correspondence with the Earl of Desmond for an Irish revolt.\*

The opportunity for a movement of this kind had not yet arrived. There was, in England at least, as yet no wide disaffection; but there was a chance of serious outbreaks; and Henry instantly threw himself upon the nation. He summoned the peers by circular to London, and calling a general meeting, composed of the nobility, the privy council, the lord mayor, and the great merchants of the city, he laid before them a specific detail of his objects in desiring the divorce;† and

CH. 2.

A.D. 1528.

Counter-move of Henry.

Nov. 8.

\* Instrucion para Gonzalo Fernandez que se envoie a Ireland al Conde de Desmond, 1529.—MS. Archives at Brussels.—*The Pilgrim*, note 1, p. 169.

† Henrici regis octavi de repudiandâ dominâ Catherinâ oratio Idibus Novembris habita 1528.

Veneranda et chara nobis præsulum procerum atque consiliariorum cohors quos communis reipublicæ atque regni nostri administrandi cura conjunxit. Haud vos latet divinâ nos Providentiâ viginti jam ferme annis hanc nostram patriam tantâ felicitate rexisse ut in illâ ab hostilibus incursionibus tuta semper interea fuerit et nos in his bellis quæ suscepimus victores semper evasimus; et quanquam

in eo gloriâri jure possumus majorem tranquillitatem opes et honores prioribus huc usque ductis soculis, nunquam subditis a majoribus parentibusque nostris Angliâ regibus quam a nobis provenisse, tamen quando cum hâc gloriâ in mentem una venit ac concurrit mortis cogitatio, veremur ne nobis sine prole legitimâ deoedentibus majorem ex morte nostrâ patiamini calamitatem quam ex vitâ fructum ac emolumentum percepistis. Recens enim in quorundam vestrorum animis adhuc est illius cruenti temporis memoria quod a Ricardo tertio cum avi nostri materni Edwardi Quarti statum in controversiam vocasset ejusque heredes regno atque vitâ privasset illatum est. Tum ex historiis

CH. 2. informed them of the nature of the measures  
 A.D. 1528. which had been taken.\* This, the French am-

\* HALL. *Letters of the Bishop of Bayonne*, LEGRAND, vol. iii.

notæ sunt illæ diræ strages quæ a clarissimis Angliæ gentibus Eboracensi atque Lancastrensi, dum inter se de regno et imperio multis ævis contenderent, populo evenerunt. Ac illæ ex justis nuptiis inter Henricum Septimum et dominam Elizabetham clarissimos nostros parentes contractis in nobis inde legitimâ natâ sobole sopitæ tandem desierunt. Si vero quod absit, regalis ex nostris nuptiis stirps quæ jure deinceps regnare possit non nascatur, hoc regnum civilibus atque intestinis se versabit tumultibus aut in exterorum dominationem atque potestatem veniet. Nam quanquam formâ atque venustate singulari, quæ magno nobis solatio fuit filiam Dominam Mariam ex nobilissimâ feminâ Dominâ Catherinâ procreavimus, tamen a piis atque eruditis theologis nuper accepimus quia eam quæ Arturi fratris nostri conjux ante fuerat uxorem duximus nostras nuptias jure divino esse vetitas, partumque inde editum non posse censi legitimum. Id quod eo vehementius nos angit et excruciat, quod cum superiori anno legatos ad conciliandas inter Aureliensem ducem et filiam nostram Mariam nuptias ad Franciscum Gallorum regem misissemus a quodam ejus consiliario responsum est, 'antequam de hujusmodi nuptiis agatum inquirendum esse prius an Maria fuerit filia nostra legitima; constat enim 'inquit,' quod ex-

dominâ Catherinâ fratris sui viduâ cujusmodi nuptiæ jure divino interdictæ sunt suscepta est.' Quæ oratio quanto metu ac horrore animum nostrum turbaverit quia res ipsa æternæ tam animi quam corporis salutis periculum in se continet, et quam perplexis cogitationibus conscientiam occupat, vos quibus et capitis aut fortunæ ac multo magis animarum jactura immineret, remedium nisi adhibere velitis, ignorare non posse arbitror. Hæc una res—quod Deo teste et in Regis oraculo affirmamus—nos impulit ut per legatos doctissimorum per totum orbem Christianum theologorum sententias exquireremus et Romani Pontificis legatum verum atque æquum judicium de tantâ causâ laturum ut tranquillâ deinceps et integrâ conscientiâ in conjugio licito vivere possimus accerseremus. In quo si ex sacris litteris hoc quo viginti jam fere annis gavisi sumus matrimonium jure divino permissum esse manifeste liquidoque constabit, non modo ob conscientie tranquillitatem, verum etiam ob amabiles mores virtutesque quibus regina prædita et ornata est, nihil optatius nihilque jucundius accidere nobis potest. Nam præterquam quod regali atque nobili genere prognata est, tantâ præterea comitate et obsequio conjugali tum cæteris animi morumque ornamentis quæ nobilitatem illustrent omnes feminas his viginti annis sic mihi anteire

bassador informs us, gave wide satisfaction and served much to allay the disquiet; but so great was the indignation against Wolsey, that disturbances in London were every day anticipated; and at one time the danger appeared so threatening, that an order of council was issued, commanding all strangers to leave the city, and a general search was instituted for arms.\* The strangers aimed at were the Flemings, whose numbers made them formidable, and who were, perhaps, supposed to be ready to act under instruction from abroad. The cloud, however, cleared away; the order was not enforced; and the propitious moment for treason had not yet arrived. The emperor had felt so confident that, in the autumn of 1528, he had boasted that, 'before the winter was over, he would fling Henry from his throne by the

CH. 2.

A D. 1528.

Search for  
arms in  
London.Incautious  
expression  
of the em-  
peror.

visa est ut si a conjugio liber essem ac solutus, si jure divino liceret, hanc solam præ cæteris fœminis stabili mihi jure ac fœdere matrimoniali conjungerem. Si vero in hoc judicio matrimonium nostrum jure divino prohibitum, ideoque ab initio nullum irritumque fuisse pronuncietur, infelix hic meus casus multis lacrimis lugendus ac deplorandus erit. Non modo quod a tam illustris et amabilis mulieris consuetudine et consortio divertendum sit, sed multo magis quod specie ad similitudinem veri conjugii decepti in amplexibus plusquam fornicariis tam multos annos trivimus nullâ legitimâ progeneratâ nobis sobole quæ nobis mortuis hujus inclyti regni hereditatem capessat.

Hæ nostræ curæ istæque solitudines sunt quæ mentem atque conscientiam nostram dies nocteque torquent et excruciant, quibus auferendis et profigandis remedium ex hâc legatione et judicio opportunum quærimus. Ideoque vos quorum virtuti atque fidei multum attribuimus rogamus ut certum atque genuinum nostrum de hâc re sensum quem ex nostro sermone percepistis populo declaretis: eumque excitetis ut nobiscum una oraret ut ad conscientiæ nostræ pacem atque tranquillitatem in hoc judicio veritas multis jam annis tenebris involuta tandem patefiat. —WILKINS'S *Concilia*, vol. iii. p. 714.

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii.

CH. 2. hands of his own subjects.' The words had been  
 A.D. 1528. repeated to Wolsey, who mentioned them openly  
 at his table before more than a hundred gentlemen.  
 A person present exclaimed, 'That speech has lost  
 the emperor more than a hundred thousand hearts  
 among us;\*' an expression which reveals at once  
 the strength and the weakness of the imperial  
 party. England might have its own opinions of  
 the policy of the government, but it was in no  
 humour to tolerate treason, and the first hint of  
 revolt was followed by an instant recoil. The  
 discovery of more successful intrigues in Scotland  
 and Ireland completed the destruction of Charles's  
 influence;† and the result of these ill-judged  
 and premature efforts was merely to unite the  
 nation in their determination to prosecute the  
 divorce.

Parties  
 take their  
 places.

Thus were the various parties in the vast  
 struggle which was about to commence gravi-  
 tating into their places; and mistake combined  
 with policy to place them in their true positions.  
 Wolsey, in submitting 'the king's matter' to the  
 pope, had brought to issue the question whether  
 the papal authority should be any longer recognised  
 in England; and he had secured the ruin of that  
 authority by the steps through which he hoped to  
 establish it; while Charles, by his unwise endea-  
 vours to foment a rebellion, severed with his own  
 hand the links of a friendship which would have  
 been seriously embarrassing if it had continued.  
 By him, also, was dealt the concluding stroke in

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. pp. 232, 3.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 120; *Ibid.* p. 186.

this first act of the drama; and though we may grant him credit for the ingenuity of his contrivance, he can claim it only at the expense of his probity. The pope, when the commission was appointed for the trial of the cause in England, had given a promise in writing that the commission should not be revoked. It seemed, therefore, that the legates would be compelled, in spite of themselves, to pronounce sentence; and that the settlement of the question, in one form or other, could not long be delayed. At the pressure of the crisis in the winter of 1528-9, a document was produced alleged to have been found in Spain, which furnished a pretext for a recal of the engagement, and opening now questions, indefinite and inexhaustible, rendered the passing of a sentence in England impossible. Unhappily, the weight of the king's claim (however it had been rested on its true merits in conversation and in letters) had, by the perverse ingenuity of the lawyers, been laid on certain informalities and defects in the original bull of dispensation, which had been granted by Julius II. for the marriage of Henry and Catherine. At the moment when the legates' court was about to be opened, a copy of a brief was brought forward, bearing the same date as the bull, exactly meeting the objection. The authenticity of this brief was open, on its own merits, to grave doubt; and suspicion becomes certainty when we find it was dropped out of the controversy so soon as the immediate object was gained for which it was produced. But the legates' hands were instantly tied by

CH. 2.

A.D. 1528-9

The pope's  
promise.Ingenious  
escape from  
the obligation  
of that  
promise.



CH. 2. it. The 'previous question' of authenticity had  
 A.D. 1528-9 necessarily to be tried before they could take  
 another step; and the 'original' of the brief being  
 in the hands of the emperor, who refused to send  
 it into England, but offered to send it to Rome,  
 the cause was virtually transferred to Rome, where  
 Henry, as he knew, was unlikely to consent to  
 plead, or where he could himself rule the decision.  
 He had made a stroke of political finesse, which  
 answered not only the purpose that he imme-  
 diately intended, but answered, also, the purpose  
 that he did not intend—of dealing the hardest  
 blow which it had yet received to the supremacy  
 of the Holy See.

May 28.  
 The pro-  
 ceedings  
 open and  
 close.

The spring of 1529 was wasted in fruitless  
 efforts to obtain the brief. At length, in May,  
 the proceedings were commenced; but they were  
 commenced only in form, and were never more  
 than an illusion. Catherine had been instructed  
 in the course which she was to pursue. She  
 appealed from the judgment of the legates to that  
 of the pope; and the pope, with the plea of the  
 new feature which had arisen in the case, declared  
 that he could not refuse to revoke his promise.  
 Having consented to the production of the brief,  
 he had in fact no alternative; nor does it appear  
 what he could have urged in excuse of himself.  
 He may have suspected the forgery; nay, it is  
 certain that in England he was believed to be privy  
 to it; but he could not ignore an important feature  
 of necessary evidence, especially when pressed  
 upon him by the emperor; and it was in fact no  
 more than an absurdity to admit the authority of

a papal commission, and to refuse to permit an appeal from it to the pope in person. We may thank Clement for dispelling a chimera by a simple act of consistency. The power of the See of Rome in England was a constitutional fiction, acknowledged only on condition that it would consent to be inert. So long as a legate's court sat in London, men were able to conceal from themselves the fact of a foreign jurisdiction, and to feel that, substantially, their national independence was respected; when the fiction aspired to become a reality, but one consequence was possible. If Henry himself would have stooped to plead at a foreign tribunal, the spirit of the nation would not have permitted him to inflict so great a dishonour on the free majesty of England.

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1529.

Nature of  
the papal  
power in  
England.

Henry sum-  
moned to  
Rome, and  
ruin of  
Wolsey's  
policy.

So fell Wolsey's great scheme, and with it fell the last real chance of maintaining the pope's authority in England under any form. The people were smarting under the long humiliation of the delay, and ill-endured to see the interests of England submitted, as they virtually were, to the arbitration of a foreign prince. The emperor, not the pope, was the true judge who sat to decide the quarrel; and their angry jealousy refused to tolerate longer a national dishonour.

'The great men of the realm,' wrote the legates, 'are storming in bitter wrath at our procrastination. Lords and commons alike complain that they are made to expect at the hands of strangers things of vital moment to themselves and their fortunes. And many persons here who would desire to see the pope's authority in this

Anger of  
the people.

CH. 2. country diminished or annulled, are speaking  
 A.D. 1529. in language which we cannot repeat without  
 horror.\*

And when, being in such a mood, they were  
 mocked, after two weary years of negotiation, by  
 the opening of a fresh vista of difficulties, when  
 they were informed that the further hearing of  
 the cause was transferred to Italy, even Wolsey,  
 with certain ruin before him, rose in protest  
 before such a dream of shame. He was no more  
 the Roman legate, but the English minister.

Last burst  
 of spirit in  
 Wolsey.

July 27.

‘If the advocacy be passed,’ he wrote to  
 Cassalis,† ‘or shall now at any time hereafter pass,  
 with citation of the king in person, or by proctor,  
 to the court of Rome, or with any clause of  
 interdiction or excommunication, *vel cum invoca-  
 tione brachii sæcularis*, whereby the king should  
 be precluded from taking his advantage otherwise,  
 the dignity and prerogative royal of the king’s  
 crown, whereunto all the nobles and subjects of  
 this realm will adhere and stick unto the death,  
 may not tolerate nor suffer that the same be  
 obeyed. And to say the truth, in so doing the  
 pope should not only show himself the king’s  
 enemy, but also as much as in him is, provoke  
 all other princes and people to be the semblable.  
 Nor shall it ever be seen that the king’s cause  
 shall be ventilated or decided in any place out of  
 his own realm; *but that if his Grace should come  
 at any time to the Court of Rome, he would do the*

How Henry  
 will appear  
 at Rome, if  
 he is obliged  
 to appear.

\* BURNET’S *Collectanea*, p. 41.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 193.

*same with such a main and army royal as should be formidable to the pope and all Italy.\**

CH. 2.

A.D. 1529.

Wolsey, however, failed in his protest; the advocacy was passed, Campeggio left England, and he was lost. A crisis had arrived, and a revolution of policy was inevitable. From the accession of Henry VII., the country had been governed by a succession of ecclesiastical ministers, who being priests as well as statesmen, were essentially conservative; and whose efforts in a position of constantly increasing difficulty had been directed towards resisting the changing tendencies of the age, and either evading a

\* The Emperor could as little trust Clement as the English, and to the last moment could not tell how he would act.

'Il me semble,' wrote Inigo di Mendoza to Charles on the 17th of June, 1529,—'il me semble que Sa Sainteté differe autant qu'il peut ce qu'auparavant il avoit promis, et je crains qu'il n'ait ordonné aux legatz ce qui jusques à present avoit resté en suspens qu'ils procedent par la première commission. Ce qui faisant votre Majesté peut tenir la Reine autant que condamné.'

—*MS. Archives at Brussels.*

The sort of influence to which the See of Rome was amenable appears in another letter to the Emperor, written from Rome itself on the 4th of October. The Pope and cardinals, it is to be remembered, were claiming to be considered the supreme court of appeal in Christendom.

'Si je ne m'abuse tous ou la

pluspart du Saint College sont plus affectionnez à vostre dite Majesté que à autre Prince Chrestien: de vous escrire, Sire, particulièrement toutes leurs responses seroit chose trop longue. Tant y a que elles sont telles que votre Majesté a raison doit grandement se contenter d'icelles.

. . . Seulement diray derechief à vostre Majesté, et me souvient l'avoir dict plusieurs fois, qu'il est en vostre Majesté gaigner et entretenir perpetuellement ce college en vostre devotion en distribuant seulement entre les principaulx d'eulx en pensions et benefices la somme de vingt mille ducas, l'ung mille, l'autre deulx ou trois mille. Et est cecy chose, Sire, que plus vous touche que à autre Prince Chrestien pour les affairesque vostre Majesté a journellement à despescher en ceste court.—M. de Praet to Charles V. August 5th, 1529. MS. Ibid.

CH. 2. reformation of the church while they admitted  
 A.D. 1529. its necessity, or retaining the conduct of it in  
 their own hands, while they were giving evidence  
 of their inability to accomplish the work. It was  
 now over; the ablest representative of this party,  
 in a last desperate effort to retain power, had deci-  
 sively failed. Writs were issued for a parliament  
 Sept. 25. when the legate's departure was determined, and  
 Writs are issued for a parliament. the consequences were inevitable. Wolsey had  
 known too well the unpopularity of his foreign  
 policy, to venture on calling a parliament himself.  
 He relied on success as an ultimate justification;  
 and inasmuch as success had not followed, he was  
 obliged to bear the necessary fate of a minister  
 who, in a free country, had thwarted the popular  
 will, and whom fortune deserted in the struggle.  
 The barriers which his single hand had upheld  
 suddenly gave way, the torrent had free course,  
 and he himself was the first to be swept away.  
 In modern language, we should describe what took  
 place as a change of ministry, the government  
 being transferred to an opposition, who had been  
 irritated by long depression under the hands of  
 men whom they despised, and who were borne  
 into power by an irresistible force in a moment of  
 excitement and danger. The king, who had been  
 persuaded against his better judgment to accept  
 Wolsey's schemes, admitted the rising spirit with-  
 out reluctance, contented to moderate its action,  
 but no longer obstructing or permitting it to be  
 obstructed. Like all great English statesmen, he  
 was constitutionally conservative, but he had the  
 tact to perceive the conditions under which, in

critical times, conservatism is possible ; and although he continued to endure for himself the trifling of the papacy, he would not, for the sake of the pope's interest, delay further the investigation of the complaints of the people against the church ; while in the future prosecution of his own cause, he resolved to take no steps except with the consent of the legislature, and in a question of national moment, to consult only the nation's wishes.

The new ministry held a middle place between the moving party in the commons and the expelled ecclesiastics, the principal members of it being the chief representatives of the old aristocracy, who had been Wolsey's fiercest opponents, but who were disinclined by constitution and sympathy from sweeping measures. An attempt was made, indeed, to conciliate the more old-fashioned of the churchmen, by an offer of the seals to Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, probably because he originally opposed the marriage between the king and his sister-in-law, and because it was hoped that his objections remained unaltered. Warham, however, as we shall see, had changed his mind : he declined, on the plea of age, and the office of chancellor was given to Sir Thomas More, perhaps the person least disaffected to the clergy who could have been found among the leading laymen. The substance of power was vested in the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, the great soldier-nobles of the age, and Sir William Fitz-William, lord admiral ; to all of whom the ecclesiastical domination had been most

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1529.

Composition of the new council.

CH. 2. intolerable, while they had each of them brilliantly distinguished themselves in the wars with France and Scotland. According to the French ambassador, we must add one more minister, supreme, if we may trust him, above them all. 'The Duke of Norfolk,' he writes, 'is made president of the council, the Duke of Suffolk vice-president, and above them both is Mistress Anne;\*' this last addition to the council being one which boded little good to the interests of the See that had so long detained her in expectation. So confident were the destructive party of the temper of the approaching parliament, and of the irresistible pressure of the times, that the general burden of conversation at the dinner-tables in the great houses in London was an exulting expectation of a dissolution of the church establishment, and a confiscation of ecclesiastical property; the king himself being the only obstacle which was feared by them. 'These noble lords imagine,' continues the same writer, 'that the cardinal once dead or ruined, they will incontinently plunder the church, and strip it of all its wealth,' adding that there was no occasion for him to write this in cipher, for it was everywhere openly spoken of.†

October.  
Conversations at the dinner-tables in London on the measures of the approaching Parliament.

Movements, nevertheless, which are pregnant with vital change, are slow in assuming their essential direction, even after the stir has commenced. Circumstances do not immediately open themselves; the point of vision alters gradually; and fragments of old opinions, and prepossessions,

\* *LEGRAND*, vol. iii. p. 377.

† *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 374.

and prejudices remain interfused with the new, even in the clearest minds, and cannot at a moment be shaken off. Only the unwise change suddenly; and we can never too often remind ourselves, when we see men stepping forward with uncertainty and hesitation over a road, where to us, who know the actual future, all seems so plain, that the road looked different to the actors themselves, who were beset with imaginations of the past, and to whom the gloom of the future appeared thronged with phantoms of possible contingencies. The hasty expectations of the noble lords were checked by Henry's prudence; and though parties were rapidly arranging themselves, there was still confusion. The city, though disinclined to the pope and the church, continued to retain an inclination for the emperor; and the pope had friends among Wolsey's enemies, who; by his overthrow, were pressed forward into prominence, and divided the victory with the reformers. The presence of Sir Thomas More in the council was a guarantee that no exaggerated measures against the church would be permitted so long as he held the seals; and Henry, perhaps, was anxious to leave room for conciliation, which he hoped that the pope would desire as much as himself, so soon as the meeting of parliament had convinced him that the mutinous disposition of the nation had not been overstated by his own and Wolsey's letters.

CH. 2.

A. D. 1529.  
October.Confusion  
of parties.  
Strong Catholic  
element in the  
council.

The impression conceived two years before of the hostile relations between the pope and Charles had not yet been wholly effaced; and even as late

Fears of a  
counter-  
revolution.



CH. 2. as September, 1529, after the closing of the  
 A.D. 1529. legates' court, in the very heat of the public  
 irritation, there were persons who believed that  
 when Clement met his imperial captor face to  
 face, and the interview had taken place which  
 had been arranged for the ensuing January, his  
 eyes would be opened, and that he would fall  
 back upon England.\* At the same time, the  
 incongruities in the constitution of the council  
 became so early apparent, that their agreement  
 was thought impossible, and Wolsey's return to  
 power was discussed openly as a probability†—  
 a result which Anne Boleyn, who, better than  
 any other person, knew the king's feelings, never  
 ceased to fear, till, a year after his disgrace,  
 the welcome news were brought to her that he  
 had sunk into his long rest, where the sick load  
 of office and of obloquy would gall his back no  
 more.

Wolsey  
dies.

The Pro-  
testants.

There was a third party in the country, unconsidered as yet, who had a part to play in the historical drama: a party which, indeed, if any one had known it, was the most important of all; the only one which, in a true, high sense, was of importance at all; and for the sake of which, little as it then appeared to be so, the whole work was to be done—composed at that time merely of poor men, poor cobblers, weavers, carpenters, trade apprentices, and humble artizans, men of low birth and low estate, who might be

---

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 355.

† Ibid.

seen at night stealing along the lanes and alleys of London, carrying with them some precious load of books which it was death to possess; and giving their lives gladly, if it must be so, for the brief tenure of so dear a treasure. These men, for the present, were likely to fare ill from the new ministry. They were the disturbers of order, the anarchists, the men disfigured *pravitate hereticâ*, by monstrous doctrines, and consequently by monstrous lives—who railed at authorities, and dared to read New Testaments with their own eyes—who, consequently, by their excesses and extravagances, brought discredit upon liberal opinions, and whom moderate liberals (as they always have done, and always will do while human nature remains itself) held it necessary for their credit's sake to persecute, that a censorious world might learn to make no confusion between true wisdom and the folly which seemed to resemble it. The Protestants had not loved Wolsey, and they had no reason to love him; but it was better to bear a fagot of dry sticks in a procession when the punishment was symbolic, than, lashed fast to a stake in Smithfield, amidst piles of the same fagots kindled into actual flames, to sink into a heap of blackened dust and ashes; and before a year had passed, they would gladly have accepted again the hated cardinal, to escape from the philosophic mercies of Sir Thomas More. The number of English Protestants at this time it is difficult to conjecture. The importance of such men is not to be measured by counting heads. In 1526, they

CH. 2.

A.D. 1529.

General opinion in England as to the character of the Protestants.

CH. 2. were organized into a society, calling themselves 'the Christian brotherhood,'\* with a central com-

A.D. 1529.  
The Chris-  
tian bro-  
thera.

mittee sitting in London; with subscribed funds, regularly audited, for the purchase of Testaments and tracts; and with paid agents, who travelled up and down the country to distribute them. Some of the poorer clergy belonged to the society;† and among the city merchants there were many well inclined to it, and who, perhaps, attended its meetings 'by night, secretly, for fear of the Jews.' But, as a rule, 'property and influence' continued to hold aloof in the usual haughty style, and the pioneers of the new opinions had yet to win their way along a scorched and blackened path of suffering, before the State would consent to acknowledge them. We think bitterly of these things, and yet

The Pro-  
testants  
were rea-  
sonably  
persecuted,  
and it is un-  
reasonable  
to complain  
that they  
were so.

we are but quarrelling with what is inevitable from the constitution of the world. New doctrines ever gain readiest hearing among the common people; not only because the interests of the higher classes are usually in some degree con-  
nected with the maintenance of existing institu-  
tions; but because ignorance is itself a protection against the many considerations which embarrass the judgment of the educated. The value of a doctrine cannot be determined on its own apparent merits by men whose habits of mind are settled in other forms; while men of experience know well that out of the thousands of theories which rise in the fertile soil below them, it is but one

Persecution  
the neces-  
sary ordeal  
to test the  
vitality of  
a doctrine.

---

\* Memorandum relating to the Society of Christian Brethren.  
*Rolls House MS.*

† DALABEE'S *Narrative*, printed in FOXE, vol. iv. Seeley's Ed.

here and one there which grows to maturity; and the precarious chances of possible vitality, where the opposite probabilities are so enormous, oblige them to discourage and repress opinions which threaten to disturb established order, or which, by the rules of existing beliefs, imperil the souls of those who entertain them. Persecution has ceased among ourselves, because we do not any more believe that want of theoretic orthodoxy in matters of faith is necessarily fraught with the tremendous consequences which once were supposed to be attached to it. If, however, a school of Thugs were to rise among us, making murder a religious service; if they gained proselytes, and the proselytes put their teaching in execution, we should speedily begin again to persecute opinion. What teachers of Thuggism would appear to ourselves, the teachers of heresy actually appeared to Sir Thomas More, only being as much more hateful as the eternal death of the soul is more terrible than the single and momentary separation of it from the body. There is, I think, no just ground on which to condemn conscientious Catholics on the score of persecution, except only this: that as we are now convinced of the injustice of the persecuting laws, so among those who believed them to be just, there were some who were led by an instinctive protest of human feeling to be lenient in the execution of those laws; while others of harder nature and more narrow sympathies enforced them without reluctance, and even with exultation. The heart, when it is rightly constituted, corrects the folly of the head;

CH. 2. and wise good men, even though they entertain  
 A.D. 1529. no conscious misgiving as to the soundness of  
 their theories, may be delivered from the worst  
 consequences of those theories, by trusting their  
 more genial instincts. And thus, and thus only,  
 are we justified in censuring those whose names  
 figure largely in the persecuting lists. Their  
 defence is impregnable to logic. We blame them  
 for the absence of that humanity which is deeper  
 than logic, and which should have taught them  
 to refuse the conclusions of their speculative  
 creed.

Such, then, was the state of parties in the  
 autumn of 1529. The old conservatives, the po-  
 litical ecclesiastics, had ceased to exist, and the  
 clergy as a body were paralysed by corruption.

Three par-  
 ties in Eng-  
 land—

There remained—

The Eng-  
 lish,

The English party who had succeeded to  
 power, and who were bent upon a secular revolt.

The Papal,  
 and

The papal party, composed of theoretic theo-  
 logians, like Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, and re-  
 presented on the council by Sir Thomas More.

The Pro-  
 testant.

And both of these were united in their aver-  
 sion to the third party, that of the doctrinal Pro-  
 testants, who were still called heretics.

These three substantially divided what was  
 sound in England; the first composed of the  
 mass of the people, representing the principles  
 of prudence, justice, good sense, and the working  
 faculties of social life: the two last sharing be-  
 tween them the higher qualities of nobleness, en-  
 thusiasm, self-devotion; but in their faith being  
 without discretion, and in their piety without

understanding. The problem of the Reformation was to reunite virtues which could be separated only to their mutual confusion; and to work out among them such inadequate reconciliation as the wilfulness of human nature would allow.

CH. 2.

A. D. 1529.  
Problem of  
the Reforma-  
tion to  
unite them.

Before I close this chapter, which is intended as a general introduction, I have to say something of two prominent persons whose character antecedent to the actions in which we are to find them engaged it is desirable that we should understand; I mean Henry VIII. himself, and the lady whom he had selected to fill the place from which Catherine of Arragon was to be deposed.

If Henry VIII. had died previous to the first agitation of the divorce, his loss would have been deplored as one of the heaviest misfortunes which had ever befallen the country; and he would have left a name which would have taken its place in history by the side of that of the Black Prince or of the conqueror of Agincourt. Left at the most trying age, with his character unformed, with the means at his disposal of gratifying every inclination, and married by his ministers when a boy to an unattractive woman far his senior, he had lived for thirty-six years almost without blame, and bore through England the reputation of an upright and virtuous king. Nature had been prodigal to him of her rarest gifts. In person he is said to have resembled his grandfather, Edward IV., who was the handsomest man in Europe. His form and

The promise of  
Henry's  
youth.

CH. 2. bearing were princely; and amidst the easy freedom of his address, his manner remained majestic. No knight in England could match him in the tournament except the Duke of Suffolk: he drew with ease as strong a bow as was borne by any yeoman of his guard; and these powers were sustained in unfailing vigour by a temperate habit and by constant exercise. Of his intellectual ability we are not left to judge from the suspicious panegyrics of his contemporaries. His state papers and letters may be placed by the side of those of Wolsey or of Cromwell, and they lose nothing in the comparison. Though they are broadly different, the perception is equally clear, the expression equally powerful, and they breathe throughout an irresistible vigour of purpose. In addition to this he had a fine musical taste, carefully cultivated; he spoke and wrote in four languages; and his knowledge of a multitude of other subjects, with which his versatile ability made him conversant, would have formed the reputation of any ordinary man. He was among the best physicians of his age; he was his own engineer, inventing improvements in artillery, and new constructions in ship-building; and this not with the condescending incapacity of a royal amateur, but with thorough workmanlike understanding. His reading was vast, especially in theology, which has been ridiculously ascribed by Lord Herbert to his father's intention of educating him for the Archbishopric of Canterbury; as if the scientific mastery of such a subject could have been acquired by a boy of twelve years of

A. D. 1529.  
Promise of  
Henry's  
youth.

age, for he was no more when he became Prince of Wales. He must have studied theology with the full maturity of his intellect; and he had a fixed and perhaps unfortunate interest in the subject itself.\*

CH. 2.

A.D. 1529.  
Promise of  
Henry's  
youth.

In all directions of human activity Henry displayed natural powers of the highest order, at

\* All authorities agree in the early account of Henry, and his letters provide abundant proof that it is not exaggerated. The following description of him in the despatches of the Venetian ambassador shows the effect which he produced on strangers in 1515:—

'Assuredly, most serene prince, from what we have seen of him, and in conformity, moreover, with the report made to us by others, this most serene king is not only very expert in arms and of great valour and most excellent in his personal endowments, but is likewise so gifted and adorned with mental accomplishments of every sort, that we believe him to have few equals in the world. He speaks English, French, Latin, understands Italian well; plays almost on every instrument; sings and composes fairly; is prudent, and sage, and free from every vice.'—*Four Years at the Court of Henry VIII.* vol. i. p. 76.

Four years later, the same writer adds,—

'The king speaks good French, Latin, and Spanish; is very religious; hears three masses a day when he hunts, and sometimes five on other days; he hears the

office every day in the queen's chamber—that is to say, vespers and complins.'—*Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 312. William Thomas, who must have seen him, says,

'Of personage he was one of the goodliest men that lived in his time; being high of stature, in manner more than a man, and proportionable in all his members unto that height; of countenance he was most amiable; courteous and benign in gesture unto all persons and specially unto strangers; seldom or never offended with anything; and of so constant a nature in himself that I believe few can say that ever he changed his cheer for any novelty how contrary or sudden so ever it were. Prudent he was in council and forecasting; most liberal in rewarding his faithful servants, and even unto his enemies, as it behoveth a prince to be. He was learned in all sciences, and had the gift of many tongues. He was a perfect theologian, a good philosopher, and a strong man at arms, a jeweller, a perfect builder as well of fortresses as of pleasant palaces, and from one to another there was no necessary kind of knowledge, from a king's degree to a carter's, but he had an honest sight in it.'—*The Pilgrim*, p. 78.



CH. 2. the highest stretch of industrious culture. He was 'attentive,' as it is called, 'to his religious duties,' being present at the services in chapel two or three times a day with unfailing regularity, and showing to outward appearance a real sense of religious obligation in the energy and purity of his life. In private he was good-humoured and good-natured. His letters to his secretaries, though never undignified, are simple, easy, and unrestrained; and the letters written by them to him are similarly plain and businesslike, as if the writers knew that the person whom they were addressing disliked compliments, and chose to be treated as a man. Again, from their correspondence with one another, when they describe interviews with him, we gather the same pleasant impression. He seems to have been always kind, always considerate; inquiring into their private concerns with genuine interest, and winning, as a consequence, their warm and unaffected attachment.

A.D. 1529.  
Promise of  
Henry's  
youth.

As a ruler he had been eminently popular. All his wars had been successful. He had the splendid tastes in which the English people most delighted, and he had substantially acted out his own theory of his duty which was expressed in the following words:—

Henry's estimate of the duty of a king.

'Scripture taketh princes to be, as it were, fathers and nurses to their subjects, and by Scripture it appeareth that it appertaineth unto the office of princes to see that right religion and true doctrine be maintained and taught, and that their subjects may be well ruled and governed by

good and just laws; and to provide and care for them that all things necessary for them may be plenteous; and that the people and commonweal may increase; and to defend them from oppression and invasion, as well within the realm as without; and to see that justice be administered unto them indifferently; and to hear benignly all their complaints; and to show towards them, although they offend, fatherly pity. And, finally, so to correct them that be evil, that they had yet rather save them than lose them if it were not for respect of justice, and maintenance of peace and good order in the commonweal.\*

These principles do really appear to have determined Henry's conduct in his earlier years. His social administration we have partially seen in the previous chapter. He had more than once been tried with insurrection, which he had soothed down without bloodshed, and extinguished in forgiveness; and London long recollected the great scene which followed 'evil May-day,' 1517, when the apprentices were brought down to Westminster Hall to receive their pardons. There had been a dangerous riot in the streets, which might have provoked a mild government to severity; but the king contented himself with punishing the five ringleaders, and four hundred other prisoners, after being paraded down the streets in white shirts with halters round their necks, were dis-

---

\* Exposition of the Commandments, set forth by Royal authority, 1536. This treatise was drawn up by the bishops, and submitted to, and revised by, the king.

CH. 2. missed with an admonition, Wolsey weeping as he pronounced it.\*

A.D. 1529.

It is certain that if, as I said, he had died before the divorce was mooted, Henry VIII., like that Roman Emperor said by Tacitus to have been *consensu omnium dignus imperii nisi imperasset*, would have been considered by posterity as formed by Providence for the conduct of the Reformation, and his loss would have been deplored as a perpetual calamity. We must allow him, therefore, the benefit of his past career, and be careful to remember it, when interpreting his later actions. Not many men would have borne themselves through the same trials with the same integrity; but the circumstances of those trials had not tested the true defects in his moral constitution. Like all princes of the Plantagenet blood, he was a person of a most intense and imperious will. His impulses, in general nobly directed, had never known contradiction; and late in life, when his character was formed, he was forced into collision with difficulties with which the experience of discipline had not fitted him to contend. Education had done much for him, but his nature required more correction than his position had permitted, whilst unbroken prosperity and early independence of control had been his most serious misfortune. He had capacity, if his training had been equal to it, to be one of the greatest of men. With all his faults about him, he was still per-

He had missed the discipline of misfortune.

---

\* SAGUDINO'S *Summary. Four Years at the Court of Henry VIII.* vol. ii. p. 75.

haps the greatest of his contemporaries; and the man best able of all living Englishmen to govern England, had been set to do it by the conditions of his birth.

CH. 2.

A.D. 1529.

The other person whose previous history we have to ascertain is one, the tragedy of whose fate has blotted the remembrance of her sins—if her sins were, indeed, and in reality, more than imaginary. Forgetting all else in shame and sorrow, posterity has made piteous reparation for her death in the tenderness with which it has touched her reputation; and with the general instincts of justice, we have refused to qualify our indignation at the wrong which she experienced, by admitting either stain or shadow on her fame. It has been with Anne Boleyn as it has been with Catherine of Arragon—both are regarded as the victims of a tyranny which catholics and protestants unite to remember with horror; and each has taken the place of a martyred saint in the hagiology of the respective creeds. Catholic writers have, indeed, ill repaid, in their treatment of Anne, the admiration with which the mother of Queen Mary has been remembered in the Church of England; but the invectives which they have heaped upon her have defeated their object by their extravagance. It has been believed that matter failed them to sustain a just accusation, when they condescended to outrageous slander. Inasmuch, however, as some natural explanation can usually be given of the actions of human beings in this world without supposing them to have been possessed by extraordinary wickedness,

Anne Boleyn.

Her history has been written in passion, the temper of English parties not allowing it to be written otherwise.

CH. 2. and if we are to hold Anne Boleyn entirely free  
 A.D. 1529. from fault, we place not the king only, but the  
 privy council, the judges, the Lords and Com-  
 mons, and the two Houses of Convocation, in a  
 position fatal to their honour and degrading to  
 ordinary humanity; we cannot without inquiry  
 acquiesce in so painful a conclusion. The English  
 nation also, as well as she, deserves justice at our  
 hands; and it must not be thought uncharitable  
 if we look with some scrutiny at the career of a  
 person who, except for the catastrophe with which  
 it was closed, would not so readily have obtained  
 forgiveness for having admitted the addresses of  
 the king, or for having received the homage of  
 the court as its future sovereign, while the king's  
 wife, her mistress, as yet resided under the same  
 roof, with the title and the position of queen,  
 and while the question was still undecided of  
 the validity of the first marriage. If in that  
 alone she was to blame, her fault was, indeed,  
 revenged a thousandfold,—and yet no lady of true  
 delicacy would have accepted such a position;  
 and feeling for Queen Catherine should have re-  
 strained her, if she was careless of respect for herself.  
 It must, therefore, be permitted me, out of such  
 few hints and scattered notices as remain, to col-  
 lect such information as may be trusted respecting  
 her early life before her appearance upon the great  
 stage. These hints are but slight, since I shall  
 not even mention the scandals of Sanders, any  
 more than I shall mention the panegyrics of  
 Foxe; stories which, as far as I can learn, have

The apo-  
 logy for dis-  
 cussing it.

Sanders  
 and Foxe  
 not admis-  
 sible as  
 witnesses.

no support in evidence, and rest on no stronger foundation than the credulity of passion.

CH. 2.

A.D. 1519.

Anne Boleyn was the second daughter of Sir Thomas Boleyn, a gentleman of noble family, though moderate fortune;\* who, by a marriage with the daughter of the Duke of Norfolk, was brought into connexion with the highest blood in the realm. The year of her birth has not been certainly ascertained, but she is supposed to have been seven years old† in 1514, when she accompanied the Princess Mary into France, on the marriage of that lady with Louis XII. Louis dying a few months subsequently, the princess married Sir Charles Brandon, afterwards created Duke of Suffolk, and returned to England. Anne Boleyn did not return with her; she remained in Paris to become accomplished in the graces and elegancies, if she was not contaminated by the vices, of that court, which, even in those days of royal licentiousness, enjoyed an undesirable pre-eminence in profligacy. In the French capital she could not have failed to see, to hear, and to become familiar with occurrences with which no young girl can be brought in contact with impunity, and this poisonous atmosphere she continued to breathe for nine years. She came back to England in 1525, to be maid of honour to Queen Catherine, and to be distinguished at the court,

Brought up  
in France.

\* 'The truth is, when I married my wife, I had but fifty pounds to live on for me and my wife so long as my father lived, and yet she brought me forth

every year a child.'—Earl of Wiltshire to Cromwell: ELLIS, third series, vol. iii. pp. 22, 3.

† BURNET, vol. i. p. 69.

CH. 2. by general consent, for her talents, her accomplishments, and her beauty. Her portraits, though all professedly by Holbein, or copied from pictures by him, are singularly unlike each other. The profile in the picture which is best known is pretty, innocent, and piquant, though rather insignificant: there are other pictures, however, in which we see a face more powerful, though less prepossessing. In these the features are full and languid. The eyes are large; but the expression, though remarkable, is not pleasing, and indicates cunning more than thought, passion more than feeling; while the heavy lips and massive chin wear a look of sensuality which is not to be mistaken. Possibly all are like the original, but represented her under different circumstances, or at different periods of her life. Previous to her engagement with the king, she was the object of fleeting attentions from the young noblemen about the court. Lord Percy, eldest son of Lord Northumberland, as we all know, was said to have been engaged to her. He was in the household of Cardinal Wolsey; and Cavendish, who was with him there, tells a long romantic story of the affair, which, if his account be true, was ultimately interrupted by Lord Northumberland himself. The story is not without its difficulties, since Lord Percy had been contracted, several years previously, to a daughter of the Earl of Shrewsbury,\* whom he afterwards married, and by

A.D. 1529.  
The various  
portraits of  
her, and  
the expres-  
sion of  
them.

Cavendish's story  
of her en-  
gagement  
with Lord  
Percy.

---

\* Thomas Allen to the Earl of Shrewsbury: LODGE'S *Illustrations*, vol. i. p. 20.

the law he could not have formed a second engagement so long as the first was undissolved. And again, he himself, when subsequently examined before the privy council, denied solemnly on his oath that any contract of the kind had existed.\* At the same time, we cannot suppose Cavendish to have invented so circumstantial a narrative, and Percy would not have been examined if there had been no reason for suspicion. Something, therefore, probably had passed between him and the young maid of honour, though we cannot now conjecture of what nature; and we can infer only that it was not openly to her discredit, or she would not have obtained the position which cost her so dear. She herself confessed subsequently, before Archbishop Cranmer, to a connexion of some kind into which she had entered before her acquaintance with Henry. No evidence survives which will explain to what she referred, for the act of parliament which mentions the fact furnishes no details.† But it was of a kind which made her marriage with the king illegal, and illegitimatized the offspring of it; and it has been supposed, therefore, that, in spite of Lord Percy's denial, he had really engaged himself to her, and was afraid to acknowledge it.‡ This supposition,

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1519.

There was probably some connexion between them, but not an engagement.

\* Earl of Northumberland to Cromwell: printed by LORD HERBERT and by BURNET.

† 28 Hen. VIII. cap. 7.

‡ Since these words were written, I have discovered among the Archives of Simancas what may perhaps be some clue to the

mystery, in an epitome of a letter written to Charles V. from London in May, 1536:—

‘His Majesty has letters from England of the 11th of May, with certain news that the paramour of the King of England, who called herself queen, has



CH. 2. however, is not easy to reconcile with the language of the act, which speaks of the circumstance, whatever it was, as only 'recently known;' nor could a contract with Percy have invalidated her marriage with the king, when Percy having been pre-contracted to another person, it would have been itself invalid. A light is thrown upon the subject by a letter found among Cromwell's papers, addressed by some unknown person to a Mr. Melton, also unknown, but written obviously when 'Mistress Anne' was a young lady about the court, and before she had been the object of any open attention from Henry.

A.D. 1529.  
Lord Percy  
was pre-  
contracted  
to a daugh-  
ter of Lord  
Shrews-  
bury.

Anne Bo-  
leyn was  
pre-con-  
tracted to  
some other  
person.

'MR. MELTON.—This shall be to advertise you that Mistress Anne is changed from that she was at when we three were last together. Wherefore I pray you that ye be no devil's sakke, but according to the truth ever justify, as ye shall make answer before God; and do not suffer her in my absence to be married to any other man. I must go to my master, wheresoever he be, for the Lord Privy Seal desireth much to speak with me, whom if I should speak with in my master's absence, it would cause me to lose my head; and yet I know myself as true a man to my prince as

been thrown into the Tower of London for adultery. The partner of her guilt was an organist of the Privy Chamber, who is in the Tower as well. An officer of the King's wardrobe has been arrested also for the same offence with her, and one of her brothers for having been privy to her offences without revealing

them. They say, too, that if the adultery had not been discovered, the King was determined to put her away, having been informed by competent witnesses that she was married and had consummated her marriage nine years before, with the Earl of Northumberland.'

liveth, whom (as my friend informeth me) I have  
offended grievously in my words. No more to  
you, but to have me commended unto Mistress  
Anne, and bid her remember her promise, which  
none can loose, but God only, to whom I shall  
daily during my life commend her.\*

CH. 2.  
A.D. 1529.

The letter must furnish its own interpretation;  
for it receives little from any other quarter.  
Being in the possession of Cromwell, however,  
it had perhaps been forwarded to him at the  
time of Queen Anne's trial, and may have thus  
occasioned the investigation which led to the  
annulling of her marriage.

From the account which was written of her  
by the grandson of Sir Thomas Wyatt the poet,  
we still gather the impression (in spite of the  
admiring sympathy with which Wyatt writes) of  
a person with whom young men took liberties,†  
however she might seem to forbid them. In her  
diet she was an epicure, fond of dainty and  
delicate eating, and not always contented if she  
did not obtain what she desired. When the  
king's attentions towards her became first marked,  
Thomas Heneage, afterwards lord chamberlain,  
wrote to Wolsey, that he had one night been  
'commanded down with a dish for Mistress Anne  
for supper; adding that she caused him 'to sup  
with her, and she wished she had some of Wolsey's  
good meat, as carps, shrimps, and others.'‡ And  
this was not said in jest, since Heneage related it

Sir Thomas  
Wyatt's  
character  
of her.

---

\* ELLIS, third series, vol. ii. p. 131.

† Wyatt's Memorials, printed in Singer's CAVENDISH, p. 420.

‡ ELLIS, third series, vol. ii. p. 132.

CH. 2. as a hint to Wolsey, that he might know what to do, if he wished to please her. In the same letter he suggested to the cardinal that she was a little displeased at not having received a token or present from him; she was afraid she was forgotten, he said, and 'the lady, her mother, desired him to send unto his Grace, and desire his Grace to bestow a morsel of tunny upon her.' Wolsey made her presents also at times of a more valuable character, as we find her acknowledging in language of exaggerated gratitude;\* and, perhaps the most painful feature in all her earlier history lies in the contrast between the servility with which she addressed the cardinal so long as he was in power, and the bitterness with which the Bishop of Bayonne (and, in fact, all contemporary witnesses) tells us, that she pressed upon his decline. Wolsey himself spoke of her under the title of 'the night-crow,'† as the person to whom he owed all which was most cruel in his treatment; as 'the enemy that never slept, but studied and continually imagined, both sleeping and waking, his utter destruction.'‡

Her doubtful conduct to Wolsey.

Taking these things together, and there is

\* ELLIS, first series, vol. i. p. 135. 'My Lord, in my most humblest wise that my poor heart can think, I do thank your Grace for your kind letter, and for your rich and goodly present; the which I shall never be able to deserve without your great help; of the which I have hitherto had so great plenty, that all the days of my life I am most

bound of all creatures, next to the King's Grace, to love and serve your Grace. Of the which I beseech you never to doubt that ever I shall vary from this thought as long as any breath is in my body.'

† CAVENDISH: *Life of Wolsey*, p. 316. Singer's edition.

‡ CAVENDISH, pp. 364, 5.

nothing to be placed beside them of a definitely pleasing kind, except beauty and accomplishments, we form, with the assistance of her pictures, a tolerable conception of this lady; a conception of her as a woman not indeed questionable, but as one whose antecedents might lead consistently to a future either of evil or of good; and whose character removes the surprise which we might be inclined to feel at the position with respect to Queen Catherine in which she consented to be placed. A harsh critic would describe her, on this evidence, as a self-indulgent coquette, indifferent to the obligations of gratitude, and something careless of the truth. From the letter referring to her, preserved by Cromwell, it appears that she had broken a definite promise at a time when such promises were legally binding, and that she had really done so was confirmed by her subsequent confession. The breach of such promises by a woman who could not be expected to understand the grounds on which the law held them to be sacred, implies no more than levity, and levity of this kind has been found compatible with many high qualities. Levity, however, it does undoubtedly imply, and the symptom, if a light one, must be allowed the weight which is due to it.

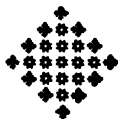
CH. 2.

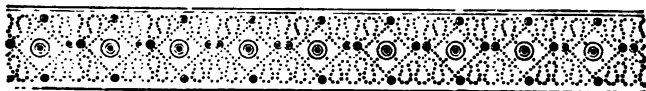
A.D. 1529.

Her character, as we know it, promised equally a future either of good or of evil.

It is a miserable duty to be compelled to search for these indications of human infirmities; above all when they are the infirmities of a lady whose faults, let them have been what they would, were so fearfully and terribly expiated; and, if there were nothing else at issue but poor

CH. 2. questions of petty scandal, it were better far that  
A.D. 1519. they perished in forgetfulness, and passed away  
out of mind and memory for ever. The fortunes  
of Anne Boleyn were unhappily linked with those  
of men to whom the greatest work ever yet ac-  
complished in this country was committed; and  
the characters of a king of England, and of the  
three estates of the realm, are compromised in  
the treatment which she received from them.





## CHAPTER III.

### THE PARLIAMENT OF 1529.

NO Englishman can look back uninterested on CH. 3.  
the meeting of the parliament of 1529. The A.D. 1529.  
era at which it assembled is the most memorable  
in the history of this country, and the work which  
it accomplished before its dissolution was of  
larger moment politically and spiritually than  
the achievements of the Long Parliament itself.  
For nearly seven years it continued surrounded  
by intrigue, confusion, and at length conspiracy,  
presiding over a people from whom the forms and  
habits by which they had moved for centuries  
were falling like the shell of a chrysalis. While  
beset with enemies within the realm and without,  
it effected a revolution which severed England from  
the papacy, yet it preserved peace unbroken and  
prevented anarchy from breaking bounds; and  
although its hands are not pure from spot, and  
red stains rest on them which posterity have  
bitterly and long remembered; yet if we consider  
the changes which it carried through, and if we  
think of the price which was paid by other  
nations for victory in the same struggle, we shall  
acknowledge that the records of the world contain  
no instance of such a triumph, bought at a cost  
so slight and tarnished by blemishes so trifling.

## CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
Excitement  
of London  
at the ap-  
proaching  
meeting of  
parlia-  
ment.

The Consis-  
tory courts,  
and the ob-  
jects for  
which they  
had been  
instituted.

The letters of the French Ambassador\* de-  
scribe to us the gathering of the members into  
London, and the hum of expectation sounding  
louder and louder as the day of the opening  
approached. In order that we may see distinctly  
what London felt on this occasion, that we may  
understand in detail the nature of those questions  
with which parliament was immediately to deal,  
we will glance at some of the proceedings which  
had taken place in the Bishops' Consistory Courts  
during the few preceding years. The duties of  
the officials of these courts resembled in theory the  
duties of the censors under the Roman Republic.  
In the middle ages, a lofty effort had been made  
to overpass the common limitations of government,  
to introduce punishment for sins as well as  
crimes, and to visit with temporal penalties the  
breach of the moral law. The punishment best  
adapted for such offences was some outward ex-  
pression of the disapproval with which good men  
regard acts of sin; some open disgrace; some  
spiritual censure; some suspension of communion  
with the church, accompanied by other conse-  
quences practically inconvenient, to be continued  
until the offender had made reparation, or had  
openly repented, or had given confirmed proof  
of amendment. The administration of such a  
discipline fell, as a matter of course, to the  
clergy. The clergy were the guardians of mo-  
rality; their characters were a claim to confi-

---

\* *Letters of the Bishop of Bayonne*, LEGRAND, vol. iii. pp. 368, 378, &c.

dence, their duties gave them opportunities of observation which no other men could possess; while their priestly office gave solemn weight to their sentences. Thus arose throughout Europe a system of spiritual surveillance over the habits and conduct of every man, extending from the cottage to the castle, taking note of all wrong dealing, of all oppression of man by man, of all licentiousness and profligacy, and representing upon earth, in the principles by which it was guided, the laws of the great tribunal of Almighty God.

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.  
The general surveillance over conduct.

Such was the origin of the church courts, perhaps the greatest institutions ever yet devised by man. But to aim at these high ideals is as perilous as it is noble; and weapons which may be safely trusted in the hands of saints become fatal implements of mischief when saints have ceased to wield them. For a time, we need not doubt, the practice corresponded to the intention. Had it not been so, the conception would have taken no root, and would have been extinguished at its birth. But a system which has once established itself in the respect of mankind will be tolerated long after it has forfeited its claim to endurance, as the name of a great man remains honoured though borne by worthless descendants; and the Consistory courts had continued into the sixteenth century with unrestricted jurisdiction, although they had been for generations merely perennially flowing fountains, feeding the ecclesiastical exchequer. The moral conduct of every English man and woman remained subject to them. Each private person was

The noble ideal,

For a time nobly realized.

The ignoble reality into which it had degenerated in the sixteenth century.



CH. 3. liable to be<sup>e</sup> called in question for every action of his life; and an elaborate network of canon law perpetually growing, enveloped the whole surface of society. But between the original design and the degenerate counterfeit there was this vital difference,—that the censures were no longer spiritual. They were commuted in various gradations for pecuniary fines, and each offence against morality was rated at its specific money value in the episcopal tables. Suspension and excommunication remained as ultimate penalties; but they were resorted to only to compel unwilling culprits to accept the alternative.

A.D. 1529.  
Commuta-  
tion of spi-  
ritual cen-  
sures for  
fines.

The misde-  
meanours  
of which  
the courts  
took cog-  
nizance.

The misdemeanours of which the courts took cognizance\* were ‘offences against chastity,’ ‘heresy,’ or ‘matter sounding thereunto,’ ‘witchcraft,’ ‘drunkenness,’ ‘scandal,’ ‘defamation,’ ‘impatient words,’ ‘broken promises,’ ‘untruth,’ ‘absence from church,’ ‘speaking evil of saints,’ ‘non-payment of offerings,’ and other delinquencies incapable of legal definition; matters, all of them, on which it was well, if possible, to keep men from going wrong; but offering wide opportunities for injustice; while all charges, whether well founded or ill, met with ready acceptance in courts where innocence and guilt alike contributed to the revenue.† ‘Mortuary claims’ were another fertile matter for prosecution; and probate duties and legacy duties; and

---

\* See HALE'S *Criminal Causes from the Records of the Consistory Court of London*.

† Petition of the Commons, *infra*, p. 191, &c.

a further lucrative occupation was the punishment of persons who complained against the constitutions of the courts themselves; to complain against the justice of the courts being to complain against the church, and to complain against the church being heresy. To answer accusations on such subjects as these, men were liable to be summoned, at the will of the officials, to the metropolitan courts of the archbishops, hundreds of miles from their homes.\* No expenses were allowed; and if the charges were without foundation, it was rare that costs could be recovered. Innocent or guilty, the accused parties were equally bound to appear.† If they failed, they were suspended for contempt. If after receiving notice of their suspension, they did not appear, they were excommunicated; and no proof of the groundlessness of the original charge availed to relieve them from their sentence, till they had paid for their deliverance.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
The worst  
offence, to  
complain  
against the  
courts  
themselves.

Nature of  
the pro-  
ceedings in  
them.

Well did the church lawyers understand how to make their work productive. Excommunication seems but a light thing when there are many communions. It was no light thing when it was equivalent to outlawry; when the person excommunicated might be seized and imprisoned at the will of the ordinary; when he was cut off from all holy offices; when no one might speak to him, trade with him, or show him the most

---

\* Reply of the Ordinaries to the petition of the Commons, *infra*, p. 202, &c.

† Petition of the Commons. 23 Hen. VIII. c. 9.

## CH. 3.

A. D. 1529.  
Temporal  
conse-  
quences of  
excommu-  
nication.

trivial courtesy; and when his friends, if they dared to assist him, were subject to the same penalties. In the *Register* of the Bishop of London\* there is more than one instance to be found of suspension and excommunication for the simple crime of offering shelter to an excommunicated neighbour; and thus offence begot offence, guilt spread like a contagion through the influence of natural humanity, and a single refusal of obedience to a frivolous citation might involve entire families in misery and ruin.

Character  
of the  
ecclesiastics.  
Benefit of  
clergy.

The people might have endured better to submit to so enormous a tyranny, if the conduct of the clergy themselves had given them a title to respect, or if equal justice had been distributed to lay and spiritual offenders. 'Benefit of clergy,' unhappily, as at this time interpreted, was little else than a privilege to commit sins with impunity. The grossest moral profligacy in a priest was passed over with indifference; and so far from exacting obedience in her ministers to a higher standard than she required of ordinary persons, the church extended her limits under fictitious pretexts as a sanctuary for lettered villany. Every person who could read was claimed by prescriptive usage as a clerk, and shielded under her protecting mantle; nor was any clerk amenable for the worst crimes to the secular jurisdiction, until he had been first tried and degraded by the ecclesiastical judges. So far was this preposterous exemption carried, that previous to the passing of

Clerks exempt  
from  
secular ju-  
risdiction.

---

\* HALE'S *Criminal Causes*, p. 4.

the first of the 23rd of Henry the Eighth,\* those who were within the degrees might commit murder with impunity, the forms which it was necessary to observe in degrading a priest or deacon being so complicated as to amount to absolute protection.†

Among the clergy, properly so called, however, the prevailing offence was not crime, but licentiousness. A doubt has recently crept in among our historians as to the credibility of the extreme language in which the contemporary writers spoke upon this painful topic. It will scarcely be supposed that the picture has been overdrawn in the act books of the Consistory courts; and as we see it there it is almost too deplorable for belief, as well in its own intrinsic hideousness as in the unconscious connivance of the authorities. Brothels were kept in London for the especial use of priests;‡ the ‘confessional’

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

Evidence against the character of the clergy in the records of the Consistory courts.

\* An Act that no person committing murder, felony, or treason should be admitted to his clergy under the degree of sub-deacon.

† In May, 1528, the evil had become so intolerable, that Wolsey drew the pope’s attention to it. Priests, he said, both secular and regular, were in the habit of committing atrocious crimes, for which, if not in orders, they would have been promptly executed; and the laity were scandalized to see such persons not only not degraded, but escaping with complete impunity. Clement something altered the law of degradation in consequence

of this representation, but quite inadequately.—RYMER, vol. vi. part 2, p. 96.

‡ Thomas Cowper et ejus uxor Margarita pronuba horribiles, et instigant mulieres ad fornicandum cum quibuscunque laicis, religiosis, fratribus minoribus, et nisi fornicant in domo sua ipsi diffamabunt nisi voluerint dare eis ad voluntatem eorum; et vir est pronuba uxori, et vult relinquere eam apud fratres minores pro peccatis habendis.—HALL, *Criminal Causes*, p. 9.

Joanna Cutting communis pronuba at præsertim inter presbyteros fratres monachos et canonicos et etiam inter Thomam

CH. 3. was abused in the most open and abominable manner.\* Cases occurred of the same frightful profanity in the service of the mass, which at Rome startled Luther into Protestantism;† and

Peise et quandam Agnetam, &c. —HALE, *Criminal Causes*, p. 28.

See also *Ibid.* pp. 15, 22, 23, 39, &c.

In the first instance the parties accused 'made their purgation' and were dismissed. The exquisite corruption of the courts, instead of inviting evidence and sifting accusations, allowed accused persons to support their own pleas of not guilty by producing four witnesses, not to disprove the charges, but to swear that they believed the charges untrue. This was called 'purgation.'

Clergy, it seems, were sometimes allowed to purge themselves simply on their own word. —HALE, p. 22; and see the Preamble of the 1st of the 23rd of Henry VIII.

\* Complaints of iniquities arising from confession were laid before Parliament as early as 1394.

'Auricularis confessio quæ dicitur tam necessaria ad salvationem hominis, cum fictâ potestate absolutionis exaltat superbiam sacerdotum, et dat illis opportunitatem secretarum sermocinationum quas nos nolumus dicere, quia domini et dominæ attestantur quod pro timore confessorum suorum non audent dicere veritatem; et in tempore confessionis est opportunum tempus procationis id est of wowing et

aliarum secretarum conventionum ad peccata mortalia. Ipsi dicunt quod sunt commissarii Dei ad iudicandum de omni peccato perdonandum et mundandum quemcunque eis placuerint. Dicunt quod habent claves cœli et inferni et possunt excommunicare et benedicere ligare et solvere in voluntatem eorum; in tantum quod pro bussello vel 12 denariis volunt vendere benedictionem cœli per chartam et clausulam de warrantiâ sigillatâ sigillo communi. Ista conclusio sic est in usu quod non eget probatione aliquâ.'—Extract from a Petition presented to Parliament: WILKINS, vol. iii. p. 221.

This remarkable paper ends with the following lines:—

'Plangunt Anglorum gentes  
crimen Sodomorum  
Paulus fert horum sunt idola  
causa malorum  
Surgunt ingrati Giezitæ Si-  
mone nati  
Nomine prælati hoc defensare  
parati  
Qui reges estis populis qui-  
cunque præestis  
Qualiter his gestis gladios  
prohibere potestis.'

See also HALE, p. 42, where an abominable instance is mentioned, and a still worse in the *Suppression of the Monasteries*, pp. 45-50.

† HALE, p. 12.

acts of incest between nuns and monks were too frequently exposed to allow us to regard the detected instances as exceptions.\* It may be said that the proceedings upon these charges prove at least that efforts were made to repress them. The bishops must have the benefit of the plea, and the two following instances will show how far it will avail their cause. In the Records of the London Court I find a certain Thomas Wyseman, priest, summoned for fornication and incontinency. He was enjoined for penance, that on the succeeding Sunday, while high mass was singing, he should offer at each of the altars in the Church of St. Bartholomew a candle of wax, value one penny, saying therewith five *Paternosters*, five *Ave Marys*, and five *Credos*. On the following Friday he was to offer a candle of the same price before the crucifix, standing barefooted, and one before the image of our Lady of Grace. This penance accomplished, he appeared again at the court and compounded for absolution, paying six shillings and eightpence.†

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.  
Punishment of priests for incontinency and incest.

An exposure too common to attract notice, and a fine of six and eightpence was held sufficient penalty for a mortal sin.

Even this, however, was a severe sentence compared with the sentence passed upon another priest who confessed to incest with the prioress of Kilbourn. The offender was condemned to bear a cross in a procession in his parish church,

---

\* HALE, pp. 75, 83; *Suppression of the Monasteries*, p. 47.

† Ibid. p. 80.

CE. 3. and was excused his remaining guilt for three shillings and fourpence.\*

A.D. 1529.

I might multiply such instances indefinitely; but there is no occasion for me to stain my pages with them.†

Feelings of  
the laity.

An inactive imagination may readily picture to itself the indignation likely to have been felt by a high-minded people, when they were forced to submit their lives, their habits, their most intimate conversations and opinions to a censorship conducted by clergy of such a character; when the offences of these clergy themselves were passed over with such indifferent careless-

\* HALE, p. 83.

† I have been taunted with my inability to produce more evidence. For the present I will mention two additional instances only, and perhaps I shall not be invited to swell the list further.

1. In the State Paper Office is a report to Cromwell by Adam Bekenshaw, one of his diocesan visitors, in which I find this passage:—

‘There be knights and divers gentlemen in the diocese of Chester who do keep concubines and do yearly compound with the officials for a small sum without monition to leave their naughty living.’

2. In another report I find also the following:—

‘The names of such persons as be permitted to live in adultery and fornication for money:—

‘The Vicar of Ledbury.  
The Vicar of Brasmyll.  
The Vicar of Stow.

The Vicar of Cloune.  
The Parson of Wentnor.  
The Parson of Rusbury.  
The Parson of Plowden.  
The Dean of Pountsbury.  
The Parson of Stratton.  
Sir Matthew of Montgomery.  
Sir — of Lauvange.  
Sir John Brayle.  
Sir Morris of Clone.  
Sir Adam of Clone.  
Sir Pierce of Norbury.  
Sir Gryffon ap Egmond.  
Sir John Orkeley.  
Sir John of Mynton.  
Sir John Reynolds.  
Sir Morris of Knighton, priest.  
Hugh Davis.  
Cadwallader ap Gern.  
Edward ap Meyrick.

With many others of the diocese of Hereford.’

The originals of both these documents are in the State Paper Office. There are copies in the Bodleian Library.—*MS. Tanner*, 105.

ness. Men began to ask themselves who and what these persons were who retained the privileges of saints,\* and were incapable of the most ordinary duties; and for many years before the burst of the Reformation the coming storm was

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

Symptoms of the rising storm.

\* Skelton gives us a specimen of the popular criticisms :—

‘ Thus I, Colin Clout,  
As I go about,  
And wondering as I walk,  
I hear the people talk :  
Men say for silver and gold  
Mitres are bought and sold :  
A straw for Goddys curse,  
What are they the worse ?

‘ What care the clergy though  
Gill sweat,  
Or Jack of the Noke ?  
The poor people they yoke  
With sumners and citacions,  
And excommunications.  
About churches and markets  
The bishop on his carpets  
At home soft doth sit.  
This is a fearful fit,  
To hear the people jangle.  
How wearily they wrangle !

‘ But Doctor Bullatus  
Parum litteratus,  
Dominus Doctoratus  
At the broad gate-house.  
Doctor Daupatus  
And Bachelor Bacheloratus,  
Drunken as a mouse  
At the ale-house,  
Taket h his pillion and his cap  
At the good ale-tap,  
For lack of good wine.  
As wise as Robin Swine,  
Under a notary’s sign,  
Was made a divine ;  
As wise as Waltham’s calf,  
Must preach in Goddys half ;

In the pulpit solemnly ;  
More meet in a pillory ;  
For by St. Hilary  
He can nothing smatter  
Of logic nor school matter.

‘ Such temporal war and bate  
As now is made of late  
Against holy church estate,  
Or to maintain good quarrels ;  
The laymen call them barrels  
Full of gluttony and of hypo-

crisy,  
That counterfeit s and paints  
As they were very saints.

‘ By sweet St. Marke,  
This is a wondrous warke,  
That the people talk this.  
Somewhat there is amiss.  
The devil cannot stop their  
mouths,  
But they will talk of such un-  
couths  
All that ever they ken  
Against spiritual men.’

I am unable to quote more than a few lines from Ror’s *Satire*. At the close of a long paragraph of details an advocate of the clergy ventures to say that the bad among them are a minority. His friend answers :—

‘ Make the company great or  
small,  
Among a thousand find thou  
shall  
Scant one chaste of body or  
mind.’



CH. 3. gathering. Priests were hooted, or 'knocked  
down into the kennel,'\* as they walked along the

A.D. 1529.

Reception  
of the ap-  
paritors of  
the Consis-  
tory courts.

streets—women refused to receive the holy bread from hands which they thought polluted,† and the appearance of an apparitor of the courts to serve a process or a citation in a private house was a signal for instant explosion. Violent words were the least which these officials had to fear, and they were fortunate if they escaped so lightly. A stranger had died in a house in St. Dunstan's belonging to a certain John Fleming, and an apparitor had been sent 'to seal his chamber and his goods' that the church might not lose her dues. John Fleming drove him out, saying loudly unto him, 'Thou shalt seale no door here; go thy way, thou stynkyng knave, ye are but knaves and brybours everych one of you.'‡ Thomas Banister, of St. Mary Wolechurch, when a process was served upon him, 'did threaten to slay the apparitor.' 'Thou horson knave,' he said to him, 'without thou tell me who set thee awork to summon me to the court, by Goddis woundes, and by this gold, I shall brake thy head.'§ A 'waiter, at the sign of the Cock,' fell in trouble for saying that 'the sight of a priest did make him sick,' also, 'that he would go sixty miles to indict a priest,' saying also in the presence of many—'horsyn priests, they shall be indicted

\* Answer of the Bishops to the Commons' Petition: *Rolls House MS.*

† Joanna Leman notatur officio quod non venit ad ecclesiam parochialem; et dicit se nolle ac-

cipere panem benedictum a manibus rectoris; et vocavit eum 'horsyn preste.'—HALE, p. 99.

‡ HALE, p. 63.

§ Ibid. p. 98.

as many as come to my handling.’\* Often the officers found threats convert themselves into acts. The apparitor of the Bishop of London went with a citation into the shop of a mercer of St. Bride’s, Henry Clitheroe by name. ‘Who does cite me?’ asked the mercer. ‘Marry, that do I,’ answered the apparitor, ‘if thou wilt anything with it;’ whereupon, as the apparitor deposeth, the said Henry Clitheroe did hurl at him from off his finger that instrument of his art called the ‘thymmelle,’ and he, the apparitor, drawing his sword, ‘the said Henry did snatch up his virga, Anglice, his yard, and did pursue the apparitor into the public streets, and after multiplying of many blows did break the head of the said apparitor.’† These are light matters, but they were straws upon the stream; and such a scene as this which follows reveals the principles on which the courts awarded their judgment. One Richard Hunt was summoned for certain articles implying contempt, and for vilipending his lordship’s jurisdiction. Being examined, he confessed to the words following: ‘That all false matters were bolstered and clokyd in this court of Paul’s Cheyne; moreover he called the apparitor, William Middleton, false knave in the full court, and his father’s dettes, said he, by means of his mother-in-law and master commissary, were not payd; and this he would abide by, that he had now in this place said no more but truth.’ Being called on to answer further, he

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

Fight in the streets.

Proceedings of the courts on complaints against themselves.

\* HALE, p. 38.

† Ibid. p. 67.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

said he would not, and his lordship did therefore excommunicate him.\* From so brief an entry we cannot tell on which side the justice lay; but at least we can measure the equity of a tribunal which punished complaints against itself with excommunication, and dismissed the confessed incest of a priest with a fine of a few shillings.

Such then were the English consistory courts.

Extent and  
pressure of  
the system.

I have selected but a few instances from the proceedings of a single one of them. If we are to understand the weight with which the system pressed upon the people, we must multiply the proceedings at St. Paul's by the number of the English dioceses; the number of dioceses by the number of archdeaconries; we must remember that in proportion to the distance from London the abuse must have increased indefinitely from the absence of even partial surveillance; we must remember that appeals were permitted only from one ecclesiastical court to another; from the archdeacon's court to that of the bishop of the diocese, from that of the bishop to the Court of Arches; that any language of impatience or resistance furnished suspicion of heresy, and that the only security therefore was submission. We can then imagine what England must have been with an archdeacon's commissary sitting constantly in every town; exercising an undefined jurisdiction over general morality; and every court swarming with petty lawyers who lived upon the fees which they could extract. Such a

---

\* HALE, p. 100.

system for the administration of justice was perhaps never tolerated before in any country. CH. 3.

But the time of reckoning at length was arrived; slowly the hand had crawled along the dial plate; slowly as if the event would never come: and wrong was heaped on wrong; and oppression cried, and it seemed as if no ear had heard its voice; till the measure of the circle was at length fulfilled, the finger touched the hour, and as the strokes of the great hammer rang out above the nation, in an instant the mighty fabric of iniquity was shivered into ruins.

Wolsey had dreamed that it might still stand, self-reformed as he hoped to see it; but in his dread lest any hands but those of friends should touch the work, he had 'prolonged its sickly days,' waiting for the convenient season which was not to be; he had put off the meeting of parliament, knowing that if parliament were once assembled, he would be unable to resist the pressure which would be brought to bear upon him; and in the impatient minds of the people he had identified himself with the evils which he alone for the few last years had hindered from falling. At length he had fallen himself, and his disgrace was celebrated in London with enthusiastic rejoicing as the inauguration of the new era. On the eighteenth of October, 1529, Wolsey delivered up the seals. He was ordered to retire to Esher; and, 'at the taking of his barge,' Cavendish saw no less than a thousand boats full of men and women of the city of London, 'waf-feting up and down in Thames,' to see him sent,

A.D. 1529.  
Retribution  
lingers, but  
not for  
ever.

Wolsey, by  
delaying  
the Refor-  
mation,  
identifies  
himself  
with the  
abuses to  
be re-  
formed.

October 18.

Exultation  
in London  
on Wolsey's  
fall.

CH. 3. as they expected, to the Tower.\* A fortnight  
 A.D. 1529. later the same crowd was perhaps again assembled  
 on a wiser occasion, and with truer reason for ex-  
 ultation, to see the king coming up in his barge  
 from Greenwich to open parliament.

Nov. 3.  
 Meeting of  
 Parlia-  
 ment.

Opening  
 speech of  
 Sir Tho-  
 mas More.

‘According to the summons,’ says Hall, ‘the King of England began his high court of parliament the third day of November, on which day he came by water to his palace of Bridewell, and there he and his nobles put on their robes of Parliament, and so came to the Black Friars Church, where a mass of the Holy Ghost was solemnly sung by the king’s chaplain; and after the mass, the king, with all his Lords and Commons which were summoned to appear on that day, came into the Parliament. The king sate on his throne or seat royal, and Sir Thomas More, his chancellor, standing on the right hand of the king, made an eloquent oration, setting forth the causes why at that time the king so had summoned them.’†

‘Like as a good shepherd,’ More said, ‘which not only keepeth and attendeth well his sheep, but also foreseeeth and provideth for all things which either may be hurtful or noysome to his flock; so the king, which is the shepherd, ruler, and governor of his realm, vigilantly foreseeing things to come, considers how that divers laws, before this time made, are now, by long continuance of time and mutation of things, become very insufficient

---

\* CAVENDISH, *Life of Wolsey*, p. 251.

† HALL, p. 764.

and imperfect; and also, by the frail condition of man, divers new enormities are sprung amongst the people, for the which no law is yet made to reform the same. For this cause the king at this time has summoned his high court of parliament; and I liken the king to a shepherd or herdsman, because if a prince be compared to his riches, he is but a rich man; if a prince be compared to his honour, he is but an honourable man; but compare him to the multitude of his people, and the number of his flock, then he is a ruler, a governor of might and puissance; so that his people maketh him a prince, as of the multitude of sheep cometh the name of a shepherd.

‘And as you see that amongst a great flock of sheep some be rotten and faulty, which the good shepherd sendeth from the good sheep; so the great wether which is of late fallen, as you all know, so craftily, so scabedly, yea, so untruly juggled with the king, that all men must needs guess that he thought in himself, either the king had no wit to perceive his crafty doings, or else that he would not see nor know them.

‘But he was deceived, for his Grace’s sight was so quick and penetrable that he saw him; yea, and saw through him, both within and without; and according to his desert he hath had a gentle correction, which small punishment the king will not to be an example to other offenders; but clearly declareth that whosoever hereafter shall make like attempt, or shall commit like offence, shall not escape with like punishment.

‘And because you of the Commons House

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

CH. 3. be a gross multitude, and cannot all speak at  
 A.D. 1529. one time, the king's pleasure is, that you resort  
 to the Nether House, and then amongst your-  
 selves, according to the old and antient custom,  
 choose an able person to be your common mouth  
 and speaker.\*

The invective against 'the great wether' was not perhaps the portion of the speech to which the audience listened with least interest. In the minds of contemporaries, principles are identified with persons, who form, as it were, the focus on which the passions concentrate. At present we may consent to forget Wolsey, and fix our attention on the more permanently essential matter—the reform of the laws. The world was changing; how swiftly, how completely, no living person knew;—but a confusion no longer tolerable was a patent fact to all men; and with a wise instinct it was resolved that the grievances of the nation, which had accumulated through centuries, should be submitted to a complete ventilation, without reserve, check, or secrecy.

Parliament  
 left to itself  
 to pursue  
 its own  
 measures.

For this purpose it was essential that the Houses should not be interfered with, that they should be allowed full liberty to express their wishes and to act upon them. Accordingly, the practice then usual with ministers, of undertaking the direction of the proceedings, was clearly on this occasion foregone. In the House of Commons then, as much as now, there was in theory unrestricted liberty of discussion, and free right

---

\* HALL, p. 764.

for any member to originate whatever motion he pleased. 'The discussions in the English Parliament,' wrote Henry himself to the pope, 'are free and unrestricted; the crown has no power to limit their debates or to controul the votes of the members. They determine everything for themselves, as the interests of the commonwealth require.'\* But so long as confidence existed between the crown and the people, these rights were in great measure surrendered. The ministers prepared the business which was to be transacted; and the temper of the Houses was usually so well understood, that, except when there was a demand for money, it was rare that a measure was proposed the acceptance of which was doubtful, or the nature of which would provoke debate. So little jealousy, indeed, was in quiet times entertained of the power of the crown, and so little was a residence in London to the taste of the burgesses and the country gentlemen, that not only were their expenses defrayed by a considerable salary, but it was found necessary to forbid them absenting themselves from their duties by a positive enactment.†

CH. 3.

A.D. 1539.  
Constitutional liberties of the House of Commons

Rarely exercised.

In the composition of the House of Commons, however, which had now assembled, no symptoms appeared of such indifference. The election had taken place in the midst of great and general excitement; and the members chosen, if we may judge from their acts and their petitions, were

Composition of the present House.

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 361.

† 6 Hen. VIII. cap. 16.



CH. 3. men of that broad resolved temper, who only in  
 A.D. 1529. times of popular effervescence are called forward  
 into prominence. It would have probably been  
 unsafe for the crown to attempt dictation or re-  
 pression at such a time, if it had desired to do  
 so. Under the actual circumstances, its interest  
 was to encourage the fullest expression of public  
 feeling.

They draw  
 up their  
 petition.

The proceedings were commenced with a  
 formal 'act of accusation' against the clergy, which  
 was submitted to the king in the name of the  
 Commons of England, and contained a sum-  
 mary of the wrongs of which the people com-  
 plained. This remarkable document must have  
 been drawn up before the opening of parliament,  
 and must have been presented in the first week  
 of the session,—probably on the first day on  
 which the House met to transact business.\* There  
 is appearance of haste in the composition, little  
 order being observed in the catalogue of griev-  
 ances; but inasmuch as it contains the germ of  
 all the acts which were framed in the following  
 years for the reform of the church, and is in fact  
 the most complete exhibition which we possess  
 of the working of the church system at the time  
 when it ceased to be any more tolerable, I have  
 thought it well to insert it uncurtailed. Although  
 the fact of the presentation of this petition has  
 been well known, it has not been accurately de-  
 scribed by any of our historians, none of them

---

\* The session lasted six weeks only, and several of the subjects  
 of the petition were disposed of in the course of it, as we shall see.

appearing to have seen more than incorrect and imperfect epitomes of it.\* CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.

TO THE KING OUR SOVEREIGN LORD.

In most humble wise show unto your Highness and your most prudent wisdom your faithful, loving, and most obedient servants the Commons in this your present parliament assembled; that of late, as well through new fantastical and erroneous opinions grown by occasion of frantic seditious books compiled, imprinted, published, and made in the English tongue, contrary and against the very true Catholic and Christian faith; as also by the extreme and uncharitable behaviour and dealing of divers ordinaries, their commissaries and sumners, which have heretofore had, and yet have the examination in and upon the said errors and heretical opinions; much discord, variance, and debate hath risen, and more and more daily is like to increase and ensue amongst the universal sort of your said subjects, as well spiritual as temporal, each against the other—in most uncharitable manner, to the great inquietation, vexation, and breach of your peace within this your most Catholic Realm :

The Commons complain of the growth of heresy,

Occasioned by seditious books and by the uncharitable behaviour of the bishops.

The special particular griefs whereof, which most principally concern your Commons and lay subjects, and which are, as they undoubtedly suppose, the very chief fountains, occasions, and

Special causes of irritation.

---

\* The MS. from which I have transcribed this copy is itself imperfect, as will be seen in the 'reply of the Bishops,' which supplies several omitted articles. See p. 226, et seq. It is in the Rolls House.

CH. 3. causes that daily breedeth and nourisheth the  
 A.D. 1529. said seditious factions, deadly hatred, and most  
 Nov. 3. uncharitable part taking, of either part of said  
 subjects spiritual and temporal against the other,  
 followingly do ensue.—

The irre-  
 gular legis-  
 lation of the  
 Houses of  
 Convoca-  
 tion.

To which  
 the laity  
 are compel-  
 led to sub-  
 mit.

I. First the prelates and spiritual ordi-  
 naries of this your most excellent Realm of Eng-  
 land, and the clergy of the same, have in their  
 convocations heretofore made or caused to be  
 made, and also daily do make many and divers  
 fashions of laws, constitutions, and ordinances;  
 without your knowledge or most Royal assent,  
 and without the assent and consent of any of  
 your lay subjects; unto the which laws your said  
 lay subjects have not only heretofore been and  
 daily be constrained to obey, in their bodies,  
 goods, and possessions; but have also been com-  
 pelled to incur daily into the censures of the  
 same, and been continually put to importable  
 charges and expenses, against all equity, right,  
 and good conscience. And yet your said humble  
 subjects ne their predecessors could ever be  
 privy to the said laws; ne any of the said laws  
 have been declared unto them in the English  
 tongue, or otherwise published, by knowledge  
 whereof they might have eschewed the penalties,  
 dangers, or censures of the same; which laws so  
 made your said most humble and obedient ser-  
 vants, under the supportation of your Majesty,  
 suppose to be not only to the diminution and  
 derogation of your imperial jurisdiction and pre-  
 rogative royal, but also to the great prejudice,  
 inquietation, and damage of your said subjects.

II. Also now of late there hath been devised by the Most Reverend Father in God, William, Archbishop of Canterbury, that in the courts which he calleth his Courts of the Arches and Audience, shall only be ten proctors at his deputation, which be sworn to preserve and promote the only jurisdiction of his said courts; by reason whereof, if any of your lay subjects should have any lawful cause against the judges of the said courts, or any doctors or proctors of the same, or any of their friends and adherents, they can ne may in nowise have indifferent counsel: and also all the causes depending in any of the said courts may by the confederacy of the said few proctors be in such wise tracted and delayed, as your subjects suing in the same shall be put to importable charges, costs, and expense. And further, in case that any matter there being preferred should touch your crown, your regal jurisdiction, and prerogative Royal, yet the same shall not be disclosed by any of the said proctors for fear of the loss of their offices. Your most obedient subjects do therefore, under protection of your Majesty, suppose that your Highness should have the nomination of some convenient number of proctors to be always attendant upon the said Courts of Arches and Audience, there to be sworn to the preferment of your jurisdiction and prerogative, and to the expedition of the causes of your lay subjects repairing and suing to the same.

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.  
The appointment and conduct of the officials of the church courts.

III. And also many of your said most humble and obedient subjects, and *specially those*

The summons ex-officio, and

CH. 3. *that be of the poorest sort*, within this your Realm,

A.D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.  
the abuse  
of power by  
the bishops.

be daily convented and called before the said spiritual ordinaries, their commissaries and substitutes, *ex officio*; sometimes, at the pleasure of the said ordinaries, for malice without any cause; and sometimes at the only promotion and accusation of their summoners and apparitors, being light and indiscreet persons; without any lawful cause of accusation, or credible fame proved against them, and without any presentment in the visitation: and your said poor subjects be thus inquieted, disturbed, vexed, troubled, and put to excessive and importable charges for them to bear—and many times be suspended and excommunicate for small and light causes upon the only certificate of the proctors of the adversaries, made under a feigned seal which every proctor hath in his keeping; whereas the party suspended or excommunicate many times never had any warning; and yet when he shall be absolved, if it be out of court, he shall be compelled to pay to his own proctor twenty\* *pence*; to the proctor which is against him other twenty pence, and twenty pence to the scribe, besides a privy reward that the judge shall have, to the great impoverishing of your said poor lay subjects.

Exorbitant  
fees taken  
in the  
courts.

IV. Also your said most humble and obedient servants find themselves grieved with the great and excessive fees taken in the said spiritual courts, and especially in the said Courts of the

---

\* The penny, as I have shown, equalled, in terms of a poor man's necessities, a shilling. See chap. i.

Arches and Audience; where they take for every citation two shillings and sixpence; for every inhibition six shillings and eightpence; for every proxy sixteen pence; for every certificate sixteen pence; for every libel three shillings and fourpence; for every answer for every libel three shillings and fourpence; for every act, if it be but two words according to the register, fourpence; for every personal citation or decree three shillings and fourpence; for every sentence or judgment, to the judge twenty-six shillings and eightpence; for every testament upon such sentence or judgment twenty-six shillings and eightpence; for every significavit twelve shillings; for every commission to examine witnesses twelve shillings, which charges be thought importable to be borne by your said subjects, and very necessary to be reformed.

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.

V. And also the said prelates and ordinaries daily do permit and suffer the parsons, vicars, curates, parish priests, and other spiritual persons having cure of souls within this your Realm, to exact and take of your humble servants divers sums of money for the sacraments and sacramentals of Holy Church, sometimes denying the same without they be first paid\* the said sums of money, which sacraments and

Simony in  
refusal of  
the sacra-  
ments.

\* See instances in HALE: p. 62, *Omnium Sanctorum in muro*.—M. Gulielmus Edward curatus notatur officio quod recusat ministrare sacramenta ecclesiastica ægrotantibus nisi prius habitis pecuniis pro suo

labore: p. 64, *St. Mary Magdalen*.—Curatus notatur officio propter quod recusavit solemnizare matrimonium quousque habet pro hujusmodi solemnizatione, 3s. 8d.; and see pp. 52, 75.

CH. 3. sacramentals your said most humble and obedient  
 A.D. 1529. subjects, under protection of your Highness, do  
 Nov. 3. suppose and think ought to be in most reverend,  
 charitable, and godly wise freely ministered unto  
 them at all times requisite, without denial, or  
 exaction of any manner sums of money to be  
 demanded or asked for the same.

Extrava-  
 gant pro-  
 bate duties.

The Com-  
 mons re-  
 quire paid  
 judges.

VI. And also in the spiritual courts of the  
 said prelates and ordinaries there be limited and  
 appointed so many judges, scribes, apparitors,  
 summoners, appraisers, and other ministers for  
 the approbation of Testaments, which covet so  
 much their own private lucre, and the satisfaction  
 and appetites of the said prelates and ordinaries,  
 that when any of your said loving subjects do  
 repair to any of the said courts for the probate  
 of any Testaments, they do in such wise make  
 so long delays, or excessively do take of them  
 so large fees and rewards for the same as is  
 importable for them to bear, directly against  
 all justice, law, equity, and good conscience.  
 Therefore your most humble and obedient  
 subjects do, under your gracious correction and  
 supportation, suppose it were very necessary  
 that the said ordinaries in their deputation of  
 judges should be bound to appoint and assign  
 such discreet, gracious, and honest persons, having  
 sufficient learning, wit, discretion, and under-  
 standing; and also being endowed with such  
 spiritual promotion, stipend, and salary; as they  
 being judges in their said courts might and may  
 minister to every person repairing to the same,  
 justice—without taking any manner of fee or

reward for any manner of sentence or judgment. CH. 3.  
to be given before them.

VII. And also divers spiritual persons being presented as well by your Highness as others within this your Realm to divers benefices or other spiritual promotions, the said ordinaries and their ministers do not only take of them for their letters of institution and induction many large sums of money and rewards; but also do pact and covenant with the same, taking sure bonds for their indemnity to answer to the said ordinaries for the firstfruits of their said benefices after their institution—so as they, being once presented or promoted, as aforesaid, are by the said ordinaries very uncharitably handled, to their no little hindrance and impoverishment; which your said subjects suppose not only to be against all laws, right, and good conscience, but also to be simony, and contrary to the laws of God.

VIII. And also *the said spiritual ordinaries do daily confer and give sundry benefices unto certain young folks, calling them their nephews or kinsfolk*, being in their minority and within age, not apt ne able to serve the cure of any such benefice: whereby the said ordinaries do keep and detain the fruits and profits of the same benefices in their own hands, and thereby accumulate to themselves right great and large sums of money and yearly profits, to the most pernicious example of your said lay subjects—and so the cures and promotions given unto such infants be only employed to the enriching of the said ordinaries; and the poor silly souls of your people,

A. D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.  
Fees on induction into benefices.

Presentation of 'young folks,' called bishops' nephews, to benefices.



CH. 3. which should be taught in the parishes given as  
 aforesaid, for lack of good curates [be left] to  
 perish without doctrine or any good teaching.

A. D. 1529.  
 Nov. 3.

Excessive  
 number of  
 holydays.

IX. Also, a great number of holydays  
 now at this present time, with very small de-  
 votion, be solemnized and kept throughout this  
 your Realm, upon the which many great, abo-  
 minable, and execrable vices, idle and wanton  
 sports, be used and exercised, which holydays, if  
 it may stand with your Grace's pleasure, and  
 specially such as fall in the harvest, might, by  
 your Majesty, with the advice of your most  
 honourable council, prelates, and ordinaries, be  
 made fewer in number; and those that shall be  
 hereafter ordained to stand and continue, might  
 and may be the more devoutly, religiously, and  
 reverently observed, to the laud of Almighty  
 God, and to the increase of your high honour  
 and favour.

Illegal im-  
 prisonment  
 by the  
 bishops.

X. And furthermore the said spiritual ordi-  
 naries, their commissaries and substitutes, some-  
 times for their own pleasure, sometimes by the  
 sinister procurement of other spiritual persons,  
 use to make out process against divers of your  
 said subjects, and thereby compel them to appear  
 before themselves, to answer at a certain day and  
 place to such articles as by them shall be, *ex*  
*officio*, then proposed; and that secretly and not  
 in open places;\* and forthwith upon their appear-

---

\* I give many instances of this practice in my sixth chapter. It was a direct breach of the statute of Henry IV., which in-  
 sists on all examinations for heresy being conducted in open court. 'The diocesan and his commissaries,' says that act,

ance, without any declaration made or showed, CH. 3.  
commit and send them to ward, sometimes for             
[half] a year, sometimes for a whole year or A. D. 1529.  
more, before they may in anywise know either Nov. 3.  
the cause of their imprisonment or the name of  
their accuser;\* and finally after their great costs  
and charges therein, when all is examined and  
nothing can be proved against them, but they  
clearly innocent for any fault or crime that can  
be laid unto them, they be again set at large  
without any recompence or amends in that  
behalf to be towards them adjudged.

XI. And also if percase upon the said process Persons un-  
and appearance any party be upon the said matter, justly ac-  
cause, or examination, brought forth and named, cused can-  
either as party or witness, and then upon the not recover  
proof and trial thereof be not able to prove and costs.  
verify the said accusation and testimony against  
the party accused, then the person so accused is  
for the more part without any remedy for his  
charges and wrongful vexation to be towards him  
adjudged and recovered.

XII. Also upon the examination of the said How exa-  
accusation, if heresy be ordinarily laid unto the minations  
charge of the parties so accused, then the said for heresy  
ordinaries or their ministers use to put to them are con-  
such subtle interrogatories concerning the high ducted.  
mysteries of our faith, as are able quickly to trap  
a simple unlearned, or yet a well-witted layman

---

'shall openly and judicially proceed against persons arrested.'—

2 Hen. IV. c. 15.

\* Again breaking the statute

of Hen. IV., which limited the period of imprisonment previous to public trial to three months.—

2 Hen. IV. c. 15.

CH. 3. without learning, and bring them by such sinister introductions soon to their own confusion. And further, if there chance any heresy to be by such subtle policy, by any person confessed in words, and yet never committed neither in thought nor deed, then put they, without further favour, the said person either to make his purgation, and so thereby to lose his honesty and credence for ever; or else as some simple silly soul [may do], the said person may stand precisely to the testimony of his own well-known conscience, rather than confess his innocent truth in that behalf [to be other than he knows it to be], and so be utterly destroyed. And if it fortune the said party so accused to deny the said accusation, and to put his adversaries to prove the same as being untrue, forged and imagined against him, then for the most part such witnesses as are brought forth for the same, be they but two in number, never so sore diffamed, of little truth or credence, they shall be allowed and enabled, only by discretion of the said ordinaries, their commissaries or substitutes; and thereupon sufficient cause be found to proceed to judgment, to deliver the party so accused either to secular hands, after abjuration,\* without remedy; or afore if he submit himself, as best happeneth, he shall have to make his purgation and bear a faggot, to his extreme shame and undoing.

In consequence of these things, much disorder has ensued, and the Com-

In consideration of all these things, most gracious Sovereign Lord, and forasmuch as there is at this present time, and by a few years past

---

\* To be disposed of at Smithfield. Abjuration was allowed once. For a second offence there was no forgiveness.

hath been outrageous violence on the one part CH. 3.  
 and much default and lack of patient sufferance, A.D. 1529  
 charity, and good will on the other part; and Nov. 3.  
 consequently a marvellous disorder [hath ensued] mons im-  
 of the godly quiet, peace, and tranquillity in plores a re-  
 which this your Realm heretofore, ever hitherto, medy.  
 has been through your politic wisdom, most  
 honourable fame, and catholic faith inviolably  
 preserved; it may therefore, most benign Sove-  
 reign Lord, like your excellent goodness for the  
 tender and universally indifferent zeal, benign  
 love and favour which your Highness beareth  
 towards both the said parties, that the said  
 articles (if they shall be by your most clear and  
 perfect judgment, thought any instrument of the  
 said disorders and factions), being deeply and  
 weightily, after your accustomed ways and man-  
 ner, searched and considered; graciously to pro-  
 vide (all violence on both sides utterly and clearly  
 set apart) some such necessary and behoveful  
 remedies as may effectually reconcile and bring  
 in perpetual unity, your said subjects, spiritual  
 and temporal; and for the establishment thereof,  
 to make and ordain on both sides such strait laws  
 against transgressors and offenders as shall be too  
 heavy, dangerous, and weighty for them, or any  
 of them, to bear, suffer, and sustain.

Whereunto your said Commons most humbly  
 and entirely beseech your Grace, as the only Head,  
 Sovereign Lord and Protector of both the said  
 parties, in whom and by whom the only and sole  
 redress, reformation, and remedy herein absolutely  
 resteth [of your goodness to consent]. By occa-

CH. 3. sion whereof all your Commons in their conscience surely account that, beside the marvellous fervent love that your Highness shall thereby engender in their hearts towards your Grace, ye shall do the most princely feat, and show the most honourable and charitable precedent and mirrour that ever did sovereign lord upon his subjects; and therewithal merit and deserve of our merciful God eternal bliss—whose goodness grant your Grace in goodly, princely, and honourable estate long to reign, prosper, and continue as the Sovereign Lord over all your said most humble and obedient servants.’\*

The Court  
of Arches  
and Arch-  
bishop  
Warham.

But little comment need be added in explanation of this petition, which, though drawn with evident haste, is no less remarkable for temper and good feeling, than for the masterly clearness with which the evils complained of are laid bare. Historians will be careful for the future how they swell the charges against Wolsey with quoting the lamentations of Archbishop Warham, when his Court of Arches was for a while superseded by the Legate’s Court, and causes lingering before his commissaries were summarily dispatched at a higher tribunal.† The archbishop professed, indeed, that he derived no personal advantage from his courts,‡ and as we have only the popular impression to the contrary to set against his word, we must believe him; yet it was of small moment to the laity who were pillaged, whether

\* Petition of the Commons : *Rolls House MS.* is very eloquent in his outcries upon this subject.

† See STYVE, *Eccles. Memorials*, vol. i. p. 191–2,—who ‡ *Answer of the Bishops*, p. 204, &c.

the spoils taken from them filled the coffers of the master, or those of his followers and friends.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.

When we consider, also, the significant allusion\* to the young folks whom the bishops called their nephews, we cease to wonder at their lenient dealing with the poor priests who had sunk under the temptations of frail humanity; and still less can we wonder at the rough handling which was soon found necessary to bring back these high dignitaries to a better mind.

The House of Commons, in casting their grievances into the form of a petition, showed that they had no desire to thrust forward of themselves violent measures of reform; they sought rather to explain firmly and decisively what the country required. The king, selecting out of the many points noticed those which seemed most immediately pressing, referred them back to the parliament, with a direction to draw up such enactments as in their own judgment would furnish effective relief. In the meantime he submitted the petition itself to the consideration of the bishops, requiring their immediate answer to the charges against them, and accompanied this request with a further important requisition. The legislative authority of convocation lay at the root of the evils which were most complained of. The bishops and clergy held themselves independent of either crown or

Rational  
attitude of  
the House  
of Com-  
mons.

Henry sub-  
mits the  
petition  
to the  
bishops.

---

\* Explanations are not easy; but the following passage may suggest the meaning of the House of Commons:—‘The holy Father Prior of Maiden Bradley hath but six children, and but one daughter married yet of the goods of the monastery; trusting shortly to marry the rest.—Dr. Leyton to Cromwell: *Suppression of the Monasteries*, p. 58.

CH. 3. parliament, passing canons by their own irresponsible and unchecked will, irrespective of the laws of the land, and sometimes in direct violation of them; and to these canons the laity were amenable without being made acquainted with their provisions, learning them only in the infliction of penalties for their unintended breach. The king required that thenceforward the convocation should consent to place itself in the position of parliament, and that his own consent should be required and received before any law passed by convocation should have the force of statute.\*

The  
bishops'  
estimate of  
their posi-  
tion.

Little notion, indeed, could the bishops have possessed of the position in which they were standing. It seemed as if they literally believed that the promise of perpetuity which Christ had made to his church was a charm which would hold them free in the quiet course of their injustice; or else, under the blinding influence of custom, they did not really know that any injustice adhered to them. They could see in themselves only the ideal virtues of their saintly office, and not the vices of their fragile humanity; they believed that they were still holy, still spotless, still immaculate, and therefore that no danger might come near them. It cannot have been but that, before the minds of such men as Warham and Fisher, some visions of a future must at times have floated, which hung so plainly before the eyes of Wolsey and of Sir Thomas More.†

---

\* Reply of the Bishops, *infra*.

† CAVENDISH, *Life of Wolsey*, p. 390. MORE's *Life of More*, p. 109.

They could not have been wholly deaf to the storm in Germany; and they must have heard something of the growls of smothered anger which for years had been audible at home, to all who had ears to hear.\* Yet if any such thoughts at times did cross their imagination, they were thrust aside as an uneasy dream, to be shaken off like a nightmare, or with the coward's consolation, 'It will last my time.' If the bishops ever felt an uneasy moment, there is no trace of uneasiness in the answer which they sent in to the king, and which now, when we read it with the light which is thrown back out of the succeeding years, seems like the composition of mere lunacy. Perhaps they had confidence in the support of Henry. In their courts they were in the habit of identifying an attack upon themselves with an attack upon the doctrines of the Church; and reading the king's feelings in their own, they may have considered themselves safe under the protection of a sovereign who had broken a lance with Luther, and had called himself the Pope's champion. Perhaps they thought that they had bound him to themselves by a declaration which they had all signed in the preceding summer in favour of the divorce.† Perhaps they were but steeped in the dulness of official lethargy. The defence is long, wearying the patience to read it; wearying the imagination to invent excuses for

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
Nov. 3.

It will last  
our time.

---

\* *Populus diu oblatrans.* Fox to Wolsey. STRYFE, *Eccl. Mem.* vol. i. Appendix, p. 27.

† RYMER, vol. vi. part 2, p. 119.



CH. 3. the falsehoods which it contains. Yet it is well  
 A.D. 1529. to see all men in the light in which they see  
 themselves; and justice requires that we allow  
 the bishops the benefit of their own reply. It  
 was couched in the following words:\*

They make  
 their an-  
 swer.

‘After our most humble wise, with our most  
 bounden duty of honour and reverence to your  
 excellent Majesty, endued from God with incom-  
 parable wisdom and goodness. Please it the same  
 to understand that we, your orators and daily  
 bounden bedemen, have read and perused a certain  
 supplication which the Commons of your Grace’s  
 honourable parliament now assembled have offered  
 unto your Highness, and by your Grace’s com-  
 mandment delivered unto us, that we should make  
 answer thereunto. We have, as the time hath  
 served, made this answer following, beseeching  
 your Grace’s indifferent benignity graciously to  
 hear the same.

‘And first for that discord, variance, and  
 debate which, in the preface of the said supplica-  
 tion they do allege to have risen among your  
 Grace’s subjects, spiritual and temporal, occa-  
 sioned, as they say, by the uncharitable beha-  
 viour and demeanour of divers ordinaries: to  
 this we, the ordinaries, answer, assuring your  
 Majesty that in our hearts there is no such discord  
 or variance on our part against our brethren in  
 God and ghostly children your subjects, as is in-

---

\* The answer of the Ordinaries to the supplication of the wor-  
 shipful the Commons of the Lower House of Parliament offered to  
 our Sovereign Lord the King’s most noble Grace.—*Rolls House*  
*MS.*

If there be ill-will between the bishops and the Commons, the fault does not lie with the former.

duced in this preface; but our daily prayer is and shall be that all peace and concord may increase among your Grace's true subjects our said children, whom God be our witness we love, have loved, and shall love ever with hearty affection; never intending any hurt ne harm towards any of them in soul or body; ne have we ever enterprised anything against them of trouble, vexation, or displeasure; but only have, with all charity, exercised the spiritual jurisdiction of the Church, as we are bound of duty, upon certain evil-disposed persons infected with the pestilent poison of heresy. And to have peace with such had been against the Gospel of our Saviour Christ, wherein he saith, *Non veni mittere pacem sed gladium*. Wherefore, forasmuch as we know well that there be as well-disposed and well-conscienced men of your Grace's Commons in no small number assembled, as ever we knew at any time in parliament; and with that consider how on our part there is given no such occasion why the whole number of the spirituality and clergy should be thus noted unto your Highness; we humbling our hearts to God and remitting the judgment of this our inquietation to Him, and trusting, as his Scripture teacheth, that if we love him above all, omnia cooperabuntur in bonum, shall endeavour to declare to your Highness the innocency of us, your poor orators.

'And where, after the general preface of the same supplication, your Grace's Commons descend to special particular griefs, and first to those divers fashions of laws concerning temporal

If there be disagreement between the canon law and the laws of the

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
realm, it  
may please  
the king to  
alter the  
laws of the  
realm.

things, whereon, as they say, the clergy in their convocation have made and daily do make divers laws, to their great trouble and inquietation, which said laws be sometimes repugnant to the statutes of your Realm, with many other complaints thereupon.\* To this we say, that forasmuch as we repute and take our authority of making of laws to be grounded upon the Scriptures of God and the determination of Holy Church, which must be the rule and square to try the justice and righteousness of all laws, as well spiritual as temporal, we verily trust that in such laws as have been made by us, or by our predecessors, the same being sincerely interpreted, and after the meaning of the makers, there shall be found nothing contained in them but such as may be well justified by the said rule and square. And if it shall otherwise appear, as it is our duty whereunto we shall always most diligently apply ourselves to reform our ordinances to God's commission, and to conform our statutes to the determination of Scripture and Holy Church ; so *we hope in God, and shall daily pray for the same, that your Highness will, if there appear cause why, with the assent of your people, temper your Grace's laws accordingly ; whereby shall ensue a most sure and hearty conjunction and agreement ; God being lapis angularis.*

To the request that the king's consent shall be necessary to

‘ And as concerning the requiring of your

---

\* The terms of the several articles of complaint are repeated verbally from the petition. I condense them to spare recapitulation.

Highness's royal assent to the authorizing of such laws as have been made by our predecessors, or shall be made by us, in such points and articles as we have authority to rule and order ; we knowing your Highness's wisdom, virtue, and learning, nothing doubt but that the same perceiveth how the granting thereunto dependeth not upon our will and liberty, *and that we may not submit the execution of our charges and duty certainly prescribed to us by God to your Highness's assent* ; although, indeed, the same is most worthy for your most princely and excellent virtues, not only to give your royal assent, but also to devise and command what we should for good order or manners by statutes and laws provide in the church. Nevertheless, we considering we may not so nor in such sort restrain the doing of our office in the feeding and ruling of Christ's people, we most humbly desire your Grace (as the same hath done heretofore) to show your Grace's mind and opinion unto us, which we shall most gladly hear and follow if it shall please God to inspire us so to do ; and with all humility we therefore beseech your Grace, following the steps of your most noble progenitors, to maintain and defend such laws and ordinances as we, according to our calling and by the authority of God, shall for his honour make to the edification of virtue and the maintaining of Christ's faith, whereof your Highness is defender in name, and hath been hitherto indeed a special protector.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
make their  
laws valid,  
they may  
not agree.

'Furthermore, where there be found in the

CH. 3. said supplication, with mention of your Grace's  
 A.D. 1529. person, other griefs that some of the said laws  
 extend to the goods and possessions of your said  
 lay subjects, declaring the transgressors not only  
 to fall under the terrible censure of excommuni-  
 cation, but also under the detestable crime of  
 heresy :

Forfeiture  
 for heresy  
 allowed by  
 the laws of  
 the realm.

‘To this we answer that we remember no  
 such, and yet if there be any such, it is but ac-  
 cording to the common law of the Church, and  
 also to your Grace’s law, which determine and  
 decree that every person spiritual or temporal  
 condemned of heresy shall forfeit his moveables  
 or immoveables to your Highness, or to the  
 lord spiritual or temporal that by law hath right  
 to them.\* Other statutes we remember none  
 that toucheth lands or goods. If there be, it  
 were good that they were brought forth to be  
 weighed and pondered accordingly.

‘Item as touching the second principal article  
 of the said supplication, where they say that  
 divers and many of your Grace’s obedient sub-  
 jects, and especially they that be of the poorest  
 sort, be daily called before us or before our sub-  
 stitutes ex officio ; sometimes at the pleasure of  
 us, the ordinaries, without any probable cause,  
 and sometimes at the only promotion of our  
 summoner, without any credible fame first proved  
 against them, and without presentment in the  
 visitation or lawful accusation :

If some  
 bishops  
 abuse their

‘On this we desire your high wisdom and

\* 2 Hen. IV. cap. 15 ; 2 Hen. V. cap. 7.

learning to consider that albeit in the ordering of Christ's people, your Grace's subjects, God of His spiritual goodness assisteth his church, and inspireth by the Holy Ghost as we verily trust such rules and laws as tend to the wealth of his elect folk; yet upon considerations to man unknown, his infinite wisdom leaveth or permitteth men to walk in their infirmity and frailty; so that we cannot ne will arrogantly presume of ourselves, as though being in name spiritual men, we were also in all our acts and doings clean and void from all temporal affections and carnality of this world, or that the laws of the church made for spiritual and ghostly purpose be not sometime applied to worldly intent. This we ought and do lament, as becometh us, very sore. Nevertheless, as the evil deeds of men be the mere defaults of those particular men, and not of the whole order of the clergy, nor of the law wholesomely by them made; our request and petition shall be with all humility and reverence; that laws well made be not therefore called evil because by all men and at all times they be not well executed; and that in such defaults as shall appear such distribution may be used *ut unusquisque onus suum portet*, and remedy be found to reform the offenders; unto the which your Highness shall perceive as great towardness in your said orators as can be required upon declaration of particulars. And other answer than this cannot be made in the name of your whole clergy, for though *in multis offendimus omnes*, as St. James saith, yet not 'in omnibus offendimus omnes';

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
power, the  
body must  
not be con-  
demned for  
the fault of  
indi-  
viduals.

CH. 3. and the whole number can neither justify ne  
 A.D. 1529. condemn particular acts to them unknown but  
 thus. He that calleth a man ex officio for cor-  
 rection of sin, doeth well. He that calleth men  
 for pleasure or vexation, doeth evil. Summoners  
 should be honest men. If they offend in their  
 office, they should be punished. To prove first  
 [their faults] before men be called, is not neces-  
 sary. He that is called according to the laws  
 ex officio or otherwise, cannot complain. He that  
 is otherwise ordered should have by reason con-  
 venient recompence and so forth; that is well to  
 be allowed, and misdemeanour when it appeareth  
 to be reprov'd.

‘Item where they say in the same article that  
 upon their appearance ex officio at the only plea-  
 sure of the ordinaries, they be committed to  
 prison without bail or mainprize; and there they  
 lie some half a year or more before they come to  
 their deliverance; to this we answer,—

‘That we use no prison before conviction but  
 for sure custody, and only of such as be sus-  
 pected of heresy, in which crime, thanked be  
 God, there hath fallen no such notable person in  
 our time, or of such qualities as hath given  
 occasion of any sinister suspicion to be conceived  
 of malice or hatred to his person other than the  
 heinousness of their crime deserveth. *Truth it*  
*is that certain apostates, friars, monks, lewd priests,*  
*bankrupt merchants, vagabonds, and lewd idle fellows*  
*of corrupt intent, have embraced the abominable and*  
*erroneous opinions lately sprung in Germany; and*  
 by them some have been seduced in simplicity

Heretics be  
 only vaga-  
 bonds: no  
 respectable  
 person  
 being to be  
 found  
 among  
 them.

and ignorance. Against these, if judgment has been exercised according to the laws of the church, and conformably to the laws of this realm, we be without blame. If we have been too remiss and slack, we shall gladly do our duty from henceforth. If any man hath been, under pretence of this [crime], particularly offended, it were pity to suffer any man to be wronged; and thus it ought to be, and otherwise we cannot answer, no man's special case being declared in the said petition.

'Item where they say further that they so appearing *ex officio*, be condemned to answer to many subtle questions by the which a simple, unlearned, or else a well-witted layman without learning sometimes is, and commonly may be trapped and induced into peril of open penance to their shame, or else [forced] to redeem their penance for money, as is commonly used; to this we answer that we should not use subtlety, for we should do all things plainly and openly; and if we do otherwise, we do amiss. We ought not to ask questions, but after the capacities of the man, Christ hath defended his true doctrine and faith in his Catholic church from all subtlety, and so preserved good men in the same, as they have not (blessed be God) been vexed, inquieted, or troubled in Christ's church. Thereupon evil men fall in danger by their own subtlety; we protest afore God we have neither known, read, nor heard of any one man damaged or prejudiced by spiritual jurisdiction in this behalf, neither in this realm nor any other, but

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

No heretic  
suffers, ex-  
cept by his  
own de-  
serts.



CH. 3. only by his own deserts. Such is the goodness  
 of God in maintaining the cause of his Catholic  
 faith.

A.D. 1529.

Commuta-  
 tion of pe-  
 nance good  
 for all  
 parties.

‘Item where they say they be compelled to do open penance, or else redeem the same for money; as for penance, we answer it consisteth in the arbitre of a judge who ought to enjoin such penance as might profit for correction of the fault. Whereupon we disallow that judge’s doing who taketh money for penance for lucre or advantage, not regarding the reformation of sin as he ought to do. But when open penance may sometimes work in certain persons more hurt than good, it is commendable and allowable in that case to punish by the purse, and preserve the fame of the party; foreseeing always the money be converted in *usus pios et eleemosynam*, and thus we think of the thing, and that the offenders should be punished.

No wit-  
 ness, how-  
 ever worth-  
 less, inad-  
 missible as  
 an evidence  
 against  
 heretics.

‘Item where they complain that two witnesses be admitted, be they never so defamed, of little truth or credence, adversaries or enemies to the parties; yet in many cases they be allowed by the discretion of the ordinaries to put the party defamed, ex officio, to open penance, and then to redemption for money; so that every of your subjects, upon the only will of the ordinaries or their substitutes, without any accuser, proved fame, or presentment, is or may be infamed, vexed, and troubled, to the peril of their lives, their shames, costs, and expenses:

‘To this we reply, *the Gospel of Christ teacheth us to believe two witnesses; and as the cause is, so*

*the judge must esteem the quality of the witness ; and in heresy no exception is necessary to be considered if their tale be likely ; which hath been highly provided lest heretics without jeopardy might else plant their heresies in lewd and light persons, and taking exception to the witnesses, take boldness to continue their folly. This is the universal law of Christendom, and hath universally done good. Of any injury done to any man thereby we know not.*

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

‘Item where they say it is not intended by them to take away from us our authority to correct and punish sins, and especially the detestable crime of heresy :

‘To this we answer, in the prosecuting heretics we regard our duty and office whereunto we be called, and if God will discharge us thereof, or cease that plague universal, as, by directing the hearts of princes, and specially the heart of your Highness (laud and thanks be unto Him), His goodness doth commence and begin to do, we should and shall have great cause to rejoyce ; as being our authority therein costly, dangerous, full of trouble and business, without any fruit, pleasure, or commodity worldly, but a continued conflict and vexation with pertinacity, wilfulness, folly, and ignorance, whereupon followeth their bodily and ghostly destruction, to our great sorrow.

Prosecution of heretics a painful duty, of which they would gladly be discharged.

‘Item where they desire that by assent of your Highness (if the laws heretofore made be not sufficient for the repression of heresy) more dreadful and terrible laws may be made ; this we think is undoubtedly a more charitable request than as we trust necessary, considering that by

The offer of the Commons to sharpen the penalties more charitable than necessary.

CH. 3. the aid of your Highness, and the pains of your  
 A. D. 1529. Grace's statutes freely executed, your realm may  
 be in short time clean purged from the few small  
 dregs that do remain, if any do remain.

'Item where they desire some reasonable declaration may be made to your people, how they may, if they will, avoid the peril of heresy. No better declaration, we say, can be made than is already by our Saviour Christ, the Apostles, and the determination of the church, which if they keep, they shall not fail to eschew heresy.

'Item where they desire that some charitable fashion may be devised by your wisdom for the calling of any of your subjects before us, that it shall not stand in the only will and pleasure of the ordinaries at their own imagination, without lawful accusation by honest witness, according to your law; to this we say that a better provision cannot be devised than is already devised by the clergy in our opinion; and if any default appear in the execution, it shall be amended on declaration of the particulars, and the same proved.

'Item where they say that your subjects be cited out of the diocese which they dwell in, and many times be suspended and excommunicate for light causes upon the only certificate devised by the proctors, and that all your subjects find themselves grieved with the excessive fees taken in the spiritual courts:

The arch-  
 bishop has  
 reformed  
 his courts,

'To this article, for because it concerneth specially the spiritual courts of me the Archbishop of Canterbury, please it your Grace to understand that about twelve months past I

reformed certain things objected here; and now within these ten weeks I reformed many other things in my said courts, as I suppose is not unknown unto your Grace's Commons; and some of the fees of the officers of my courts I have brought down to halves, some to the third part, and some wholly taken away and extincted; and yet it is objected to me as though I had taken no manner of reformation therein. Nevertheless I shall not cease yet; but in such things as I shall see your Commons most offended I will set redress accordingly, so as, I trust, they will be contented in that behalf. And I, the said archbishop, beseech your Grace to consider what service the doctors in civil law, which have had their practice in my courts, have done your Grace concerning treaties, truces, confederations, and leagues devised and concluded with outward princes; and that without such learned men in civil law your Grace could not have been so conveniently served as at all times you have been, which thing, perhaps, when such learned men shall fail, will appear more evident than it doth now. The decay whereof grieveth me to foresee, not so greatly for any cause concerning the pleasure or profit of myself, being a man spent, and at the point to depart this world, and having no penny of any advantage by my said courts, but principally for the good love which I bear to the honour of your Grace and of your realm. And albeit there is, by the assent of the Lords Temporal and the Commons of your Parliament, an act passed thereupon already, the matter depending before your Majesty by way of

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

CH. 3. supplication offered to your Highness by your said  
Commons;\* yet, forasmuch as we your Grace's  
 A.D. 1529. humble chaplains, the Archbishops of Canterbury  
and York, be bounden by oath to be intercessors  
for the rights of our churches; and forasmuch as  
 But pro- the spiritual prelates of the clergy, being of your  
 tests Grace's parliament, consented to the said act for  
 against the divers great causes moving their conscience, we  
 curtailment your Grace's said chaplains show unto your High-  
 of their ness that it hath appertained to the Archbishops  
 jurisdic- of Canterbury and York for the space of four  
 tion. hundred years or thereabouts to have spiritual  
jurisdiction over all your Grace's subjects dwell-  
ing within the provinces; and to have authority  
to call before them, not only in spiritual causes  
devolved to them by way of appeal, but also by  
way of querimony and complaint; which right  
and privilege pertaineth not only to the persons  
of the said archbishops, but also to the pre-  
eminences of their churches. Insomuch that  
when the archbishop of either of the sees dieth,  
the said privileges do not only remain to his suc-  
cessor (by which he is named Legatus natus), but  
also in the meantime of vacation the same privi-  
lege resteth in the churches of Canterbury and  
York; and is executed by the prior, dean and  
chapter of the said churches; and so the said act  
is directly against the liberty and privileges of  
the churches of Canterbury and York; and what  
dangers be to them which study and labour to

---

\* An Act that no person shall be cited out of the diocese in which he dwells, except in certain cases. It received the Royal assent two years later. See 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 9.

take away the liberties and privileges of the church, whoso will read the general councils of Christendom and the canons of the fathers of the Catholic church ordained in that behalf, shall soon perceive. And further, we think verily that our churches, to which the said privileges were granted, can give no cause why the pope himself (whose predecessors granted that privilege) or any other (the honour of your Grace ever except) may justly take away the same privileges so lawfully prescribed from our churches, though we [ourselves] had greatly offended, abusing the said privileges. But when in our persons we trust we have given no cause why to lose that privilege, we beseech your Grace of your goodness and absolute power to set such orders in this behalf as we may enjoy our privileges lawfully admitted so long.

‘Item where they complain that there is exacted and demanded in divers parishes of this your realm, other manner of tythes than hath been accustomed to be paid this hundred years past; and in some parts of this your realm there is exacted double tythes, that is to say, threepence, or twopence-halfpenny, for one acre, over and beside the tythe for the increase of cattle that pastureth the same:

‘To this we say, that tythes being due by God’s law, be so duly paid (thanked be God), by all good men, as there needeth not exaction in the most parts of this your Grace’s realm. As for double tythes, they cannot be maintained due for one increase; whether in any place they be unduly exacted in fact we know not. This we

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

The right of the clergy to the tithes is a divine right, and cannot be forfeited by desuetude.

СН. 3. know in learning, that neither a hundred years,  
 A.D. 1529. nor seven hundred of non-payment, may debar  
 the right of God's law. The manner of payment,  
 and person unto whom to pay, may be in time  
 altered, but the duty cannot by any means be  
 taken away.

'Item where they say that when a mortuary  
 is due, curates sometimes, before they will demand  
 it, will bring citation for it; and then will not re-  
 ceive the mortuaries till they may have such costs  
 as they say they have laid out for the suit of the  
 same; when, indeed, if they would first have  
 charitably demanded it, they needed not to have  
 sued for the same, for it should have been paid  
 with good will:

'We answer that curates thus offending, if  
 they were known, ought to be punished, but who  
 thus doeth we know not.

On induc-  
 tion to be-  
 nefices they  
 do take  
 reasonable  
 fees, and no  
 more.

'Item where they say that divers spiritual per-  
 sons being presented to benefices within this your  
 realm, we and our ministers do take of them great  
 sums of money and reward; we reply that this is  
 a particular abuse, and he that taketh reward  
 doeth not well; and if any penny be exacted  
 above the accustomed rate and after convenient  
 proportion, it is not well done. But in taking  
 the usual fee for the sealing, writing, and regis-  
 tering the letters, which is very moderate, we can-  
 not think it to be reputed as any offence; neither  
 have we heard any priests in our days complain  
 of any excess therein.

'And where they say in the same article that  
 such as be presented be delayed without reason-

able cause, to the intent that we the ordinaries may have the profit of the benefice during the vacation, unless they will pact and convent with us by temporal bonds, whereof some bonds contain that we should have part of the profit of the said benefice, which your said subjects suppose to be not only against right and conscience, but also seemeth to be simony, and contrary to the laws of God:

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

‘To this we do say that a delay without reasonable cause, and for a lucrative intent, is detestable in spiritual men, and the doers cannot eschew punishment: but otherwise a delay is sometimes expedient to examine the clerk, and sometimes necessary when the title is in variance. All other bargains and covenants being contrary to the law ought to be punished, as the quality is of the offence more or less, as simony or inordinate covetousness.

‘Item where they say that we give benefices to our nephews and kinsfolk, being in young age or infants, whereby the cure is not substantially looked into, nor the parishioners taught as they should be; we reply to this that the thing which is not lawful in others is in spiritual men more detestable. Benefices should be disposed of not *secundum carnem et sanguinem, sed secundum merita*. And when there is a default it is not authorized by the clergy as good, but reproved; whereupon in this the clergy is not to be blamed, but the default as it may appear must be laid to particular men.

Simoniacal  
presenta-  
tions de-  
nied, but  
doubtfully.

‘And where they say that we take the profit of



CH. 3. such benefices for the time of the minority of our  
A.D. 1529. said kinsfolk, if it be done to our own use and profit it is not well; *if it be bestowed to the bringing up and use of the same parties*, or applied to the maintenance of the church and God's service, or distributed among the poor, we do not see but that it may be allowed.

'Item where they say that divers and many spiritual persons, not contented with the convenient livings and promotions of the church, daily intromit and exercise themselves in secular offices and rooms, as stewards, receivers, auditors, bailiffs, and other temporal occupations, withdrawing themselves from the good contemplative lives that they have professed, not only to the damage but also to the perilous example of your loving and obedient subjects; to this we your bedesmen answer that beneficed men may lawfully be stewards and receivers to their own bishops, as it evidently appeareth in the laws of the church; and we by the same laws ought to have no other. And as for priests to be auditors and bailiffs, we know none such.

'And where, finally, they, in the conclusion of their supplication, do repeat and say that forasmuch as there is at this present time, and by a few years past hath been much misdemeanour and violence upon the one part, and much default and lack of patience, charity, and good will on the other part; and marvellous discord in consequence of the quiet, peace, and tranquillity in which this your realm hath been ever hitherto preserved through your politic wisdom:

‘To the first part as touching such discord as is reported, and also the misdemeanour which is imputed to us and our doings, we trust we have sufficiently answered the same, humbly beseeching your Grace so to esteem and weigh such answer with their supplication as shall be thought good and expedient by your high wisdom. Furthermore we ascertain your Grace as touching the violence which they seem to lay to our charge, albeit divers of the clergy of this your realm have sundry times been *rigorously handled, and with much violence entreated by certain ill-disposed and seditious persons of the lay fee, have been injured in their bodies, thrown down in the kennel in the open streets at mid-day*, even here within your city and elsewhere, to the great rebuke and disquietness of the clergy of your realm, the great danger of the souls of the said misdoers, and perilous example of your subjects. Yet we think verily, and do affirm the same, that no violence hath been so used on our behalf towards your said lay subjects in any case; unless they esteem this to be violence that we do use as well for the health of their souls as for the discharge of our duties in taking, examining, and punishing heretics according to the law: wherein we doubt not but that your Grace, and divers of your Grace’s subjects, do understand well what charitable entreaty we have used with such as have been before us for the same cause of heresy; and what means we have devised and studied for safeguard specially of their souls; and that charitably, as God be our judge, and without violence

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.  
For discord and violence: they have suffered violence, but committed none.

For themselves, they have endeavoured to act rightly, according to the laws.

CH. 3. as [far as] we could possibly devise. In execution whereof, and also of the laws of the church for repression of sin, and also for reformation of mislivers, it hath been to our great comfort that your Grace hath herein of your goodness, assisted and aided us in this behalf for the zeal and love which your Grace beareth to God's church and to His ministers; specially in defence of His faith whereof your Grace only and most worthily amongst all Christian princes beareth the title and name. And for that marvellous discord and grudge among your subjects as is reported in the supplication of your Commons, we beseech your Majesty, all the premises considered, to repress those that be misdoers; protesting in our behalf that we ourselves have no grudge nor displeasure towards your lay subjects our ghostly children.

A.D. 1529.

And let those who are in fault be punished for it.

We intreat your Grace of your accustomed goodness to us your bedemen to continue our chief protector, defender, and aider in and for the execution of our office and duty; specially touching repression of heresy, reformation of sin, and due behaviour and order of all your Grace's subjects, spiritual and temporal; which (no doubt thereof) shall be much to the pleasure of God, great comfort to men's souls, quietness and unity of all your realm; and, as we think, most principally to the great comfort of your Grace's Majesty. Which we beseech lowly upon our knees, so entirely as we can, to be the author of unity, charity, and concord as above, for whose preservation we do and shall continually pray to Almighty God long to reign and prosper in most honourable estate to his pleasure.'

This was the bishops' defence; the best which, CH. 3.  
under the circumstances, they considered them- A.D. 1529.  
selves capable of making. The House of Com-  
mons had stated their complaints in the form of  
special notorious facts; the bishops replied with  
urging the theory of their position, and supposed  
that they could relieve the ecclesiastical system  
from the faults of its ministers, by laying the sole  
blame on the unworthiness of individual persons.  
The degenerate representatives of a once noble in-  
stitution could not perhaps be expected to admit  
their degeneracy, and confess themselves, as they  
really were, collectively incompetent; yet the  
defence which they brought forward would have  
been valid only so long as the blemishes were the  
rare exceptions in the working of an institution  
which was still generally beneficent. It was no  
defence at all when the faults had become the  
rule, and when there was no security in the sys-  
tem itself for the selection of worth and capacity  
to exercise its functions. The clergy, as I have  
already said, claimed the privileges of saints, Saints may  
claim  
powers to  
which com-  
mon men  
have no  
title.  
while their conduct fell below the standard of  
that of ordinary men; and the position taken in  
this answer was tenable only on the hypothesis  
which it, in fact, deliberately asserted, that the  
judicial authority of the church had been com-  
mitted to it by God Himself; and that no mis-  
conduct of its ministers in detail could forfeit their  
claims or justify resistance to them.

There is something touching in the bishops' evidently sincere unconsciousness that there could be real room for blame. Warham, who had been Archbishop of Canterbury thirty years, took credit

CH. 3. to himself for the reforms which, under the pressure of public opinion, he had introduced, in the last few weeks or months; and did not know that in doing so he had passed sentence on a life of neglect. In the opinion of the entire bench no infamy, however notorious, could shake the testimony of a witness in a case of heresy; no cruelty was unjust when there was suspicion of so horrible a crime; while the appointment of minors to church benefices (not to press more closely the edge of the accusation) they admitted while they affected to deny it; since they were not ashamed to defend the appropriation of the proceeds of benefices occupied by such persons, if laid out on the education and maintenance of the minors themselves.

Yet these things were as nothing in comparison with the powers claimed for convocation; and the prelates of the later years of Henry's reign must have looked back with strange sensations at the language which their predecessors had so simply addressed to him. If the canons which convocation might think good to enact were not consistent with the laws of the Realm, 'His Majesty' was desired to produce the wished-for uniformity by altering the laws of the Realm; and although the bishops might not submit their laws to His Majesty's approval, they would be happy, they told him, to consider such suggestions as he might think proper to make. The spirit of the Plantagenets must have slumbered long before such words as these could have been addressed to an English sovereign, and little did

the bishops dream that these light words were the spell which would burst the charm, and bid that spirit wake again in all its power and terror.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

The House of Commons in the mean time had not been idle. To them the questions at issue were unincumbered with theoretic difficulties.

Enormous abuses had been long ripe for dissolution, and there was no occasion to waste time in unnecessary debates. At such a time, with a

The Commons proceeded to legislate.

House practically unanimous, business could be rapidly transacted, the more rapidly indeed in proportion to its importance. In six weeks, for so long only the session lasted, the astonished church authorities saw bill after bill hurried up before the Lords, by which successively the pleasant fountains of their incomes would be dried up to flow no longer; or would flow only in shallow rivulets along the beds of the once abundant torrents. The jurisdiction of the spiritual courts was not immediately curtailed, and the authority which was in future to be permitted to convocation lay over for further consideration, to be dealt with in another manner. But probate duties and legacy duties, hitherto assessed at discretion, were dwarfed into fixed proportions,\* not to touch the poorer laity any more, and bearing even upon wealth with a reserved and gentle hand. Mortuaries were shorn of their luxuriance; when effects were small, no mortuary should be required; when large, the clergy should content

Curtailment of probate duties, legacy duties, and mortuaries.

---

\* 21 Hen. VIII. cap. 5. An Act concerning fines and sums of money to be taken by the ministers of bishops and other ordinaries of holy church for the probate of testaments.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

themselves with a modest share. No velvet cloaks should be stripped any more from strangers' bodies to save them from a rector's grasp;\* no shameful battles with apparitors should disturb any more the recent rest of the dead.† Such sums as the law would permit should be paid thenceforward in the form of decent funeral fees for householders dying in their own parishes, and there the exactions should terminate.‡

Clergy in-  
hibited  
from secu-  
lar employ-  
ment.

The carelessness of the bishops in the discharge of their most immediate duties obliged the legislature to trespass also in the provinces purely spiritual, and undertake the discipline of the clergy. The Commons had complained in their petition that the clergy, instead of attending to their duties, were acting as auditors, bailiffs, stewards, or in other capacities, as laymen; they were engaged in trade also, in farming, in tanning, in brewing, in doing anything but the duties which they were paid for doing; while they purchased dispensations for non-residence on their benefices; and of these benefices, in

\* HALE, *Precedents*, p. 86.

† Ibid.

‡ 21 Hen. VIII. cap. 6. An Act concerning the taking of mortuaries, or demanding, receiving, or claiming the same.

In Scotland the usual mortuary was a cow and the uppermost cloth or counterpane on the bed in which the death took place. A bishop reprimanding a suspected clergyman for his leanings toward the Reformation, said to him:—

‘My joy, Dean Thomas, I am informed that ye preach the epistle and gospel every Sunday

to your parishioners, and that ye take not the cow nor the upmost cloth from your parishioners; which thing is very prejudicial to the churchmen. And therefore, Dean Thomas, I would ye took your cow and upmost cloth, or else it is too much to preach every Sunday, for in so doing ye may make the people think we should preach likewise.’—CALDERWOOD, vol. i. p. 126.

The bishop had to burn Dean Thomas at last, being unable to work conviction into him in these matters.

favoured cases, single priests held as many as eight or nine. It was thought unnecessary to wait for the bishops' pleasure to apply a remedy here. If the clergy were unjustly accused of these offences, a law of general prohibition would not touch them. If the belief of the House of Commons was well founded, there was no occasion for longer delay. It was therefore enacted\*—

‘for the more quiet and virtuous increase and maintenance of divine service, the preaching and teaching the Word of God with godly and good example, for the better discharge of cures, the maintenance of hospitality, the relief of poor people, the increase of devotion and good opinion of the lay fee towards spiritual persons’—that no such persons thenceforward should take any land to farm beyond what was necessary, *bonâ fide*, for the support of their own households; that they should not buy merchandize to sell again; that they should keep no tanneries or brewhouses, or otherwise directly or indirectly trade for gain. Pluralities were not to be permitted with benefices above the yearly value of eight pounds, and residence was made obligatory under penalty in cases of absence without special reason, of ten pounds for each month of such absence. The law against pluralities was limited as against existing holders, each of whom, for their natural lives, might continue to hold as many as four benefices. But dispensations, either for non-residence or for

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

Enforce-  
ment of re-  
sidence,  
and limi-  
tation of  
pluralities.

The bishops  
may grant

\* 21 Hen. VIII. cap. 13. An Act that no spiritual person shall take farms; or buy and sell for lucre and profit; or keep tan- houses or breweries. And for pluralities of benefices and for residence.



CH. 3. the violation of any other provision of the act,  
A.D. 1529. no dispensation from these acts. were made penal in a high degree, whether obtained from the bishops or from the court of Rome.

These bills struck hard and struck home. Yet even persons who most disapprove of the Reformation will not at the present time either wonder at their enactment or complain of their severity. They will be desirous rather to disentangle their doctrine from suspicious connexion, and will not be anxious to compromise their theology by the defence of unworthy professors of it.

Opposition  
in the  
House of  
Lords.

The bishops, however, could ill tolerate an interference with the privileges of the ecclesiastical order. The Commons, it was exclaimed, were heretics and schismatics;\* the cry was heard everywhere, of Lack of faith, Lack of faith; and the lay peers being constitutionally conservative, and perhaps instinctively apprehensive of the infectious tendencies of innovation, it seemed likely for a time that an effective opposition might be raised in the Upper House. The clergy commanded an actual majority in that House from their own body, which they might employ if they dared; and although they were not likely to venture alone on so bold a measure, yet a partial support from the other members was a sufficient encouragement. The aged Bishop of Rochester was made the spokesman of the ecclesiastics on this occasion. 'My Lords,' he said, 'you see daily what bills come hither from the Commons House, and all is to the destruction of the church. For God's sake see what a realm the kingdom of

Speech of  
the Bishop  
of Roches-  
ter.

Bohemia was; and when the church went down, then fell the glory of that kingdom. Now with the Commons is nothing but Down with the church, and all this meseemeth is for lack of faith only.\* 'In result,' says Hall, 'the acts were sore debated; the Lords Spiritual would in no wise consent, and committees of the two Houses sate continually for discussion.' The spirituality defended themselves by prescription and usage, to which a Gray's Inn lawyer something insolently answered, on one occasion, 'the usage hath ever been of thieves to rob on Shooter's Hill, *ergo*, it is lawful.' 'With this answer,' continues Hall, 'the spiritual men were sore offended because their doings were called robberies, but the temporal men stood by their sayings, insomuch that the said gentlemen declared to the Archbishop of Canterbury, that both the exaction of probates of testaments and the taking of mortuaries were open robbery and thefts.'

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529.

Speech of  
the gentle-  
man of  
Gray's Inn.

At length, people out of doors growing impatient, and dangerous symptoms threatening to show themselves, the king summoned a meeting in the Star-chamber between eight members of both Houses. The lay peers, after some discussion, conclusively gave way; and the bishops, left without support, were obliged to yield. They signified their unwilling consent, and the bills, 'somewhat qualified,' were the next day agreed to—'to the great rejoicing of the lay people, and the great displeasure of the spiritual persons.†

The bills  
are passed.

Nor were the House of Commons contented

\* HALL, p. 766.

† Ibid. 767.

CH. 3. with the substance of victory. The reply to their  
 A.D. 1529. petition had perhaps by that time been made known to them, and at any rate they had been accused of sympathy with heresy, and they would not submit to the hateful charge without exacting revenge. The more clamorous of the clergy out of doors were punished probably by the stocks; from among their opponents in the Upper House, Fisher was selected for especial and signal humiliation. The words of which he had made use were truer than the Commons knew; perhaps the latent truth of them was the secret cause of the pain which they inflicted; but the special anxiety of the English reformers was to disconnect themselves, with marked emphasis, from the movement in Germany, and they determined to compel the offending bishop to withdraw his words.

The Commons demand an apology from the Bishop of Rochester.

They sent the speaker, Sir Thomas Audeley, to the king, who 'very eloquently declared what dishonour it was to his Majesty and the realm, that they which were elected for the wisest men in the shires, cities, and boroughs within the realm of England, should be declared in so noble a presence to lack faith.' It was equivalent to saying 'that they were infidels, and no Christians—as ill as Turks and Saracens.' Wherefore he 'most humbly besought the King's Highness to call the said bishop before him, and to cause him to speak more discreetly of such a number as was in the Commons House.\*' Henry consented to their request, it is likely with no great difficulty,

---

\* HALL, 766.

and availed himself of the opportunity to read a lesson much needed to the remainder of the bench. He sent for Fisher, and with him for the Archbishop of Canterbury, and for six other bishops. The speaker's message was laid before them, and they were asked what they had to say. It would have been well for the weak trembling old men if they could have repeated what they believed and had maintained their right to believe it. Bold conduct is ever the most safe; it is fatal only when there is courage but for the first step, and fails when a second is required to support it. But they were forsaken in their hour of calamity, not by courage only, but by prudence, by judgment, by conscience itself. The Bishop of Rochester stooped to an equivocation too transparent to deceive any one; he said that 'he meant only the doings of the Bohemians were for lack of faith, and not the doings of the Commons House'—'which saying was confirmed by the bishops present.' The king allowed the excuse, and the bishops were dismissed; but they were dismissed into ignominy, and thenceforward, in all Henry's dealings with them, they were treated with contemptuous disrespect. For Fisher himself we must feel only sorrow. After seventy-six years of a useful and honourable life, which he might have hoped to close in a quiet haven, he was launched suddenly upon stormy waters, to which he was too brave to yield, which he was too timid to contend against; and the frail vessel drifting where the waves drove it, was soon piteously to perish.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529.

The bishops  
are sum-  
moned be-  
fore the  
king.

They equi-  
vocate, and  
are dis-  
missed.

## CH. 3.

A. D. 1529.  
Parliament  
prorogued.  
Dec. 17.

Thus triumphant on every side, the parliament, in the middle of December, closed its session, and lay England celebrated its exploits as a national victory. 'The king removed to Greenwich, and there kept his Christmas with the queen with great triumph, with great plenty of viands, and disguisings, and interludes, to the great rejoicing of his people;\* the members of the House of Commons, we may well believe, following the royal example in town and country, and being the little heroes of the day. Only the bishops carried home sad hearts within them, to mourn over the perils of the church and the impending end of all things; Fisher, unhappily for himself, to listen to the wailings of the Nun of Kent, and to totter slowly into treason.

Here, for the present leaving the clergy to meditate on their future, and reconsider the wisdom of their answer to the king respecting the ecclesiastical jurisdiction (a point on which they were not the less certain to be pressed, because the process upon it was temporarily suspended), we must turn to the more painful matter which for a time longer, ran parallel with the domestic reformation, and as yet was unable to unite with it. After the departure of Campeggio, the further hearing of the divorce cause had been advoked to Rome, where it was impossible for Henry to consent to plead; while the appearance of the supposed brief had opened avenues of new difficulty which left no hope of a decision within the limits of an ordi-

---

\* HALL, 768.

nary lifetime. Henry was still, however, extremely reluctant\* to proceed to extremities, and appeal to the parliament. He had threatened that he would tolerate no delay, and Wolsey had evidently expected that he would not. Queen Catherine's alarm had gone so far, that in the autumn she had procured an injunction from the pope, which had been posted in the churches of Flanders, menacing the king with spiritual censures if he took any further steps.† Even this she feared that he would disregard, and in March, 1529–30, a second inhibition was issued at her request, couched in still stronger language.‡ But these measures were needless, or at least premature. Henry expected that the display of temper in the country in the late session would produce

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529–30.  
The pope inhibits Henry from proceeding with his divorce in England.

\* So reluctant was he, that at one time he had resolved, rather than compromise the unity of Christendom, to give way. When the disposition of the court of Rome was no longer doubtful, 'his difficultatibus permotus, cum in hoc statu res essent, dixerunt qui ejus verba exceperunt, post profundam secum de universo negotio deliberationem et mentis agitationem, tandem in hæc verba prorupisse, se primum tentasse illud divortium persuasum ecclesiam Romanam hoc idem probaturum—quod si ita illa abhorreret ab illâ sententiâ ut nullo modo permittendum censeret se nolle cum eâ contendere neque amplius in illo negotio progredi.'

Pole, on whose authority we receive these words, says that they were heard with almost

unanimous satisfaction at the council board. The moment of hesitation was, it is almost certain, at the crisis which preceded or attended Wolsey's fall. It endured but for three days, and was dispelled by the influence of Cromwell, who tempted both the king and parliament into their fatal revolt.—POLI *Apologia ad Carolum Quintum*.

† LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 446. The censures were threatened in the first brief, but the menace was withdrawn under the impression that it was not needed.

‡ LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 446. The second brief is dated March 7, and declares that the king, if he proceeds, shall incur ipso facto the greater excommunication; that the kingdom will fall under an interdict.

CH. 3. an effect both on the pope and on the emperor; and proposing to send an embassy to remonstrate jointly with them on the occasion of the emperor's coronation, which was to take place in the spring at Bologna, he had recourse in the mean time to an expedient which, though blemished in the execution, was itself reasonable and prudent.

A.D. 1529-30.

A new point raised on the extent of the papal powers.

The object with which it was moved.

Among the many *technical* questions which had been raised upon the divorce, the most serious was on the validity of the original dispensation; a question not only on the sufficiency of the form the defects of which the brief had been invented to remedy; but on the more comprehensive uncertainty whether Pope Julius had not exceeded his powers altogether in granting a dispensation where there was so close affinity. No one supposed that the pope could permit a brother to marry a sister; a dispensation granted in such a case would be *ipso facto* void.—Was not the dispensation similarly void which permitted the marriage of a brother's widow? The advantage which Henry expected from raising this difficulty was the transfer of judgment from the partial tribunal of Clement to a broader court. The pope could not, of course, adjudicate on the extent of his own powers; especially as he always declared himself to be ignorant of the law; and the decision of so general a question rested either with a general council, or must be determined by the consent of Christendom, obtained in some other manner. If such general consent declared against the pope, the cause was virtually terminated. If there was some approach to a consent against him, or even

if there was general uncertainty, Henry had a legal pretext for declining his jurisdiction, and appealing to a council.

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1529-30.

Thomas Cranmer, then a doctor of divinity at Cambridge,\* is said to have been the person who suggested this ingenious expedient, and to have advised the king, as the simplest means of carrying it out, to consult in detail the universities and learned men throughout Europe. His notorious activity in collecting the opinions may have easily connected him with the origination of the plan, which probably occurred to many other persons as well as to him; but whoever was the first adviser, it was immediately acted upon, and English agents were despatched into Germany, Italy, and France, carrying with them all means of persuasion, intellectual, moral, and material, which promised to be of most cogent potency with lawyers' convictions.

Said to have been suggested by Cranmer.

This matter was in full activity when the Earl of Wiltshire, Anne Boleyn's father, with Cranmer, the Bishop of London, and Edward Lee, afterwards Archbishop of York, was despatched to Bologna to lay Henry's remonstrances before the emperor, who was come at last in person to enjoy his miserable triumph, and receive from the pope the imperial crown. Sir Nicholas Carew, who had been sent forward a few weeks previously, described in piteous language the state to which Italy had been reduced by him. Passing

Lord Wiltshire's embassy to the emperor.  
Jan. 20.

---

\* Cranmer was born in 1489, and was thus forty years old when he first emerged into eminence.



- CH. 3. through Pavia, the English emissary saw the children crying about the streets for bread, and dying of hunger; the grapes in midwinter rotting on the vines, because there was no one to gather them; and for fifty miles scarcely a single creature, man or woman, in the fields. 'They say,' added Carew, 'and the pope also showed us the same, that the whole people of that country, with divers other places in Italia, with war, famine, and pestilence, are utterly dead and gone.\*' Such had been the combined work of the vanity of Francis and the cold selfishness of Charles; and now the latter had arrived amidst the ruins which he had made, to receive his crown from the hands of a pope who was true to Italy, if false to all the world besides, and whom, but two years before, he had imprisoned and disgraced. We think of Clement as the creature of the emperor, and such substantially he allowed himself to be; but his obedience was the obedience of fear to a master whom he hated, and the Bishop of Tarbès, who was present at the coronation, and stood at his side through the ceremony, saw him trembling under his robes with emotion, and heard him sigh bitterly.† Very unwillingly, we may be assured, he was compelled to act his vacillating part to England, and England, at this
- Dec. 12.
- Feb. 24.
- A. D. 1529-30.
- Feeling of the pope towards Charles V.

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 226.

† Je croy qu'il ne feist en sa vie ceremonie qui luy touchast si près du cœur, ne dont je pense qu'il luy doive advenir moins du bien. Car aucunes fois qu'il

pensoit qu'on ne le regardast, il faisoit de si grands soupirs que pour pesante que fust sa chappe, il la faisoit bransler à bon escient. — *Lettre de M. de Gramont, Evêque de Tarbès*. LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 386.

distance of time, may forgive him for faults to which she owes her freedom, and need not refuse him some tribute of sympathy in his sorrows.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529-

30.

Fallen on evil times, which greater wisdom and greater courage than had for many a century been found in the successors of St. Peter would have failed to encounter successfully, Clement VII. remained, with all his cowardice, a true Italian; his errors were the errors of his age and nation, and were softened by the presence, in more than usual measure, of Italian genius and grace. Benvenuto Cellini, who describes his character with much minuteness, has left us a picture of a hot-tempered, but genuine and kind-hearted man, whose taste was elegant, and whose wit, from the playful spirit with which it was pervaded, and from a certain tendency to innocent levity, approached to humour. He was liable to violent bursts of feeling; and his inability to control himself, his gesticulations, his exclamations, and his tears, all represent to us a person who was an indifferent master of the tricks of dissimulation to which he was reduced, and whose weakness entitles him to pity, if not to respect. The papacy had fallen to him at the crisis of its deepest degradation. It existed as a politically organized institution, which it was convenient to maintain, but from which the private hearts of all men had fallen away; and it depended for its very life upon the support which the courts of Europe would condescend to extend to it. Among these governments, therefore, distracted as they were by

Character  
of Clement  
VII.

CH. 3. mutual hostility, the pope was compelled to make his choice; and the fatality of his position condemned him to quarrel with the only prince on whom, at the outset of these complications, he had a right to depend.

A.D. 1529-30.

Dubious  
allegiance  
of France  
to the  
papacy.

In 1512, France had been on the point of declaring her religious independence; and as late as 1525, Francis entertained thoughts of offering the patriarchate to Wolsey.\* Charles V., postponing his religious devotion for the leisure of old age, had reserved the choice of his party, to watch events and to wait upon opportunity; while, from his singular position, he wielded in one hand the power of Catholic Spain, in the other that of Protestant Germany, ready to strike with either, as occasion or necessity recommended. If his Spaniards had annexed the New World to the papacy, his German lanzknechts had stormed the Holy City, murdered cardinals, and outraged the pope's person: while both Charles and Francis, alike caring exclusively for their private interests, had allowed the Turks to overrun Hungary, to conquer Rhodes, and to collect an armament at Constantinople so formidable as to threaten Italy itself, and the very Christian faith. Henry alone had shown hitherto a true feeling for religion; Henry had made war with Louis XII. solely in the pope's quarrel; Henry had broken an old alliance with the emperor to revenge the capture of Rome,

\* ELLIS, *Third Series*, vol. ii. p. 98. 'In the letters showed us by M. de Buclans from the emperor, of the which mention was made in ciphers, it was written in terms that the French

king would offer unto your Grace the papalite of France vel Patriarchate, for the French men would no more obey the Church of Rome.'—Lee to Wolsey.

and had won Francis back to his allegiance. To Henry, if to any one, the Roman bishop had a right to look with confidence. But the power of England was far off, and could not reach to Rome. Francis had been baffled and defeated, his armies destroyed, his political influence in the Peninsula annihilated. The practical choice which remained to Clement lay only, as it seemed, between the emperor and martyrdom; and having, perhaps, a desire for the nobler alternative, yet being without the power to choose it, his wishes and his conduct, his words to private persons and his open actions before the world, were in perpetual contradiction. He submitted while his heart revolted; and while at Charles's dictation he was threatening Henry with excommunication if he proceeded further with his divorce, he was able at that very time, to say, in confidence, to the Bishop of Tarbès, that he would be well contented if the King of England would marry on his own responsibility, availing himself of any means which he might possess among his own people, so only that he himself was not committed to a consent or the privileges of the papacy were not trenched upon.\*

CH. 3.

A. D. 1529-30.

The pope compelled, by the remoteness of England, to depend, against his will, upon the emperor.

His language to the Bishop of Tarbès.

Two years later, when the course which the pope would really pursue under such circumstances was of smaller importance, Henry gave him an opportunity of proving the sincerity of

\* À ce qu'il m'en a déclaré par son autorité, in aussi dimi-  
des fois plus de trois en secret, nuant sa puissance, quant aux  
il seroit content que le dit ma- dispenses, et limitation de droit  
riage fust ja faict, ou par dis- divin.—*Dechiffrement de Let-*  
pense du Legat d'Angleterre ou *tres de M. de Tarbès.*—LE-  
autrement; mais que ce ne fust GRAND, vol. iii. p. 408.

CH. 3. this language; and the result was such as he  
 A. D. 1529- expected it to be. As yet, however, he had not  
 30. relinquished the hope of succeeding by a more  
 open course.

Instruc-  
 tions to the  
 Earl of  
 Wiltshire.

In March, 1529-30, the English ambassadors appeared at Bologna. Their instructions were honest, manly, and straightforward. They were directed to explain, *ab initio*, the grounds of the king's proceedings, and to appeal to the emperor's understanding of the obligations of princes. Full restitution was to be offered of Catherine's dowry, and the Earl of Wiltshire was provided with letters of credit adequate to the amount.\* If these proposals were not accepted, they were to assume a more peremptory tone, and threaten the alienation of England; and if menaces were equally ineffectual, they were to declare that Henry, having done all which lay within his power to effect his purpose with the goodwill of his friends, since he could not do as he would, must now do as he could, and discharge his conscience. If the emperor should pretend that he would 'abide the law, and would defer to the pope,' they were to say, 'that the sacking of Rome by the Spaniards and Germans had so discouraged the pope and cardinals, that they feared for body and goods,' and had ceased to be free agents; and concluding finally that the king would fear God rather than man, and would rely on comfort from the Saviour against those who abused their authority, they were then to withdraw.† The tone of the direc-

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 408.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 230.

tions was not sanguine, and the political complications of Europe, on which the emperor's reply must more or less have depended, were too involved to allow us to trace the influences which were likely to have weighed with him. There seems no *prima facie* reason, however, why the attempt might not have been successful. The revolutionary intrigues in England had decisively failed, and the natural sympathy of princes, and a desire to detach Henry from Francis, must have combined to recommend a return of the old cordiality which had so long existed between the sovereigns of England and Flanders. But whatever was the cause, the opening interview assured the Earl of Wiltshire that he had nothing to look for. He was received with distant courtesy; but Charles at once objected even to hearing his instructions, as an interested party.\* The earl replied that he stood there, not as the father of the queen's rival, but as the representative of his sovereign; but the objection declared the attitude which Charles was resolved to maintain, and which, in fact, he maintained throughout. 'The emperor,' wrote Lord Wiltshire to Henry, 'is stiffly bent against your Grace's matter, and is most earnest in it; while the pope is led by the emperor, and neither will nor dare displease him.'† From that quarter, so long as parties remained in their existing attitude, there was no hope. It seems to have been hinted, indeed, that if war broke out again between Charles

CH. 3.

A.D. 1529-30.

Probability of success.

Interview with the emperor, who is found impracticable.

\* The Bishop of Tarbès to the King of France. LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 401.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 234.

CH. 3. and Francis, something might be done as the price  
 A.D. 1530. of Henry's surrendering the French alliance;\*  
 June 12. but the suggestion, if it was made, was probably  
 ironical; and as Charles was unquestionably act-  
 ing against his interest in rejecting the English  
 overtures, it is fair to give him credit for having  
 acted on this one occasion of his life, upon  
 generous motives. A respectful compliment was  
 paid to his conduct by Henry himself in the re-  
 proaches which he addressed to the pope.†

The pope  
 continues  
 to finesse.

So terminated the first and the last overture  
 on this subject which Henry attempted with  
 Charles V. The ambassadors remained but a  
 few days at Bologna, and then discharged their  
 commission and returned. The pope, however,  
 had played his part with remarkable skill, and by  
 finessing dexterously behind the scenes, had con-  
 trived to prevent the precipitation of a rupture  
 with himself. His simple and single wish was  
 to gain time, trusting to accident or Providence  
 to deliver him from his dilemma. On the one  
 hand, he yielded to the emperor in refusing to  
 consent to Henry's demand; on the other, he  
 availed himself of all the intricacies to parry  
 Catherine's demand for a judgment in her favour.  
 He even seemed to part with the emperor on  
 doubtful terms. 'The latter,' said the Bishop of

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 235.

† We demand a service of you  
 which it is your duty to concede;  
 and your first thought is lest you  
 should offend the emperor. We  
 do not blame *him*. That in such

a matter he should be influenced  
 by natural affection is intelligible  
 and laudable. But for that very  
 reason we decline to submit to  
 so partial a judgment.—Henry  
 VIII. to the Pope: BURNET'S  
*Collectanea*, p. 431.

Tarbès,\* 'before leaving Bologna, desired his Holiness to place two cardinals' hats at his disposal, to enable him to reward certain services.' His Holiness ventured to refuse. During his imprisonment, he said he had been compelled to nominate several persons for that office whose conduct had been a disgrace to their rank; and when the emperor denied his orders, the pope declared that he had seen them. The cardinals' hats, therefore, should be granted only when they were deserved, 'when the Lutherans in Germany had been reduced to obedience, and Hungary had been recovered from the Turks.' If this was acting, it was skilfully managed, and it deceived the eyes of the French ambassador.

CH. 3.

A. D. 1519-

30.

He appears to oppose the emperor.

March.

Still further to gratify Henry, the pope made a public declaration with respect to the dispute which had arisen on the extent of his authority, desiring, or professing to desire, that all persons whatever throughout Italy should be free to express their opinions without fear of incurring his displeasure. This declaration, had it been honestly meant, would have been creditable to Clement's courage: unfortunately for his reputation, his outward and his secret actions seldom corresponded, and the emperor's agents were observed to use very dissimilar language in his name. The double policy, nevertheless, was still followed to secure delay. Delay was his sole aim,—either that Catherine's death, or his own, or Henry's, or some relenting in one or other of the two princes

---

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 394.



CH. 3. who held their minatory arms extended over him,

A. D. 1529-30.

Decision for or against Henry equally fatal to him.

might spare himself and the church the calamity of a decision. For to the church any decision was fatal. If he declared for Charles, England would fall from it; if for Henry, Germany and Flanders were lost irrecoverably, and Spain itself might follow. His one hope was to procrastinate; and in this policy of hesitation for two more years he succeeded, till at length the patience of Henry and of England was worn out, and all was ended. When the emperor required sentence to be passed, he pretended to be about to yield; and at the last moment, some technical difficulty ever interfered to make a decision impossible. When Henry was cited to appear at Rome, a point of law was raised upon the privilege of kings, threatening to open into other points of law, and so to multiply to infinity. The pope, indeed, finding his own ends so well answered by evasion, imagined that it would answer equally those of the English nation, and he declared to Henry's secretary that 'if the King of England would send a mandate *ad totam causam*, then if his Highness would, there might be given so many delays by reason of matters which his Highness might lay in, and the remissorials that his Grace might ask, *ad partes*, that peradventure in ten years or longer a sentence should not be given.'\* In point of worldly prudence, his conduct was unexceptionably wise; but something beyond worldly prudence was demanded of a tribunal which claimed to be inspired by the Holy Ghost.

He therefore aims only at delay.

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 317.

The dreary details of the negotiations I have no intention of pursuing. They are of no interest to any one,—a miserable tissue of insincerity on one side, and hesitating uncertainty on the other. There is no occasion for us to weary ourselves with the ineffectual efforts to postpone an issue which was sooner or later inevitable.

I may not pass over in similar silence another unpleasant episode in this business,—the execution of Cranmer's project for collecting the sentiments of Europe on the pope's dispensing power. The details of this transaction are not wearying only, but scandalous; and while the substantial justice of Henry's cause is a reason for deploring the means to which he allowed himself to be driven in pursuing it, we may not permit ourselves either to palliate those means or to conceal them. The project seemed a simple one, and likely to be effective and useful. Unhappily, the appeal was still to ecclesiastics, to a body of men who were characterized throughout Europe by a universal absence of integrity, who were incapable of pronouncing an honest judgment, and who courted intimidation and bribery by the readiness with which they submitted to be influenced by them. Corruption was resorted to on all sides with the most lavish unscrupulousness, and the result arrived at was general discredit to all parties, and a conclusion which added but one more circle to the labyrinth of perplexities. Croke,\* a Doctors' Commons lawyer, who was employed in Italy, described

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1530.

The opinions of the universities collected by Henry's agents.

---

\* For Croke's Mission, see BURNET, vol. i. p. 144 e.

CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.

Proceed-  
ings on  
both sides  
alike un-  
scrupulous.Violence of  
the impe-  
rialists in  
Italy.

July 4.

the state of feeling in the peninsula as generally in Henry's favour; and he said that he could have secured an all but universal consent, except for the secret intrigues of the Spanish agents, and their open direct menaces, when intrigue was insufficient. He complained bitterly of the treachery of the Italians who were in the English pay; the two Cassalis, Pallavicino, and Ghinucci, the Bishop of Worcester. These men, he said, were betraying Henry when they were pretending to serve him, and were playing secretly into the hands of the emperor.\* His private despatches were intercepted, or the contents of them by some means were discovered; for the persons whom he named as inclining against the papal claims, became marked at once for persecution. One of them, a Carmelite friar, was summoned before the Cardinal Governor of Bologna, and threatened with death;† and a certain Father Omnibow, a Venetian who had been in active co-operation with Dr. Croke, wrote himself to Henry, informing him in a very graphic manner of the treatment to which, by some treachery, he had been exposed. Croke and Omnibow were sitting one morning in the latter's cell, 'when there entered upon them the emperor's great ambassador, accompanied with many gentlemen of Spain, and demanded of the Father how he durst be so bold to take upon him to intermeddle in so great and weighty a matter, the which did

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 241.† Friar Pallavicino to the Bishop of Bath. *Rolls House MS.*

not only lessen and enervate the pope's authority, but was noyful and odious to all Realms Christened.\* Omnibow being a man of some influence in Venice, the ambassador warned him on peril of his life to deal no further with such things: there was not the slightest chance that the King of England could obtain a decision in his favour, because the question had been placed in the hands of six cardinals who were all devoted to the emperor: the pope, it was sternly added, had been made aware of his conduct, and was exceedingly displeased, and the general† of his order had at the same time issued an injunction, warning all members to desist at their peril from intercourse with the English agents. The Spanish party held themselves justified in resorting to intimidation to defend themselves against English money; the English may have excused their use of money as a defence against Spanish intimidation; and each probably had recourse to their several methods prior to experience of the proceedings of their adversaries, from a certain expectation of what those proceedings would be. Substantially, the opposite manœuvres neutralized each other, and in Catholic countries, opinions on the real point at issue seem to have been equally balanced. The Lutheran divines, from their old suspicion

CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.

Opinions  
seem to  
have been  
equally  
balanced.

\* Croke and Omnibow to the King. *Rolls House MS.*

† Generalis magister nostri ordinis mandavit omnibus sue religionis professoribus, ut nulus audeat de auctoritate Pontificis quicquam loqui. Denique

Orator Cæsareus in talia verba prorupit, quibus facile cognovi et me a Pontifice vocari studeat et tunc timendum esset saluti meæ. Father Omnibow to Henry VIII. *Rolls House MS.*

- CH. 3. of Henry, were more decided in their opposition  
 A.D. 1530. to him. 'The Italian Protestants,' wrote Croke  
 to the king, 'be utterly against your Highness  
 in this cause, and have letted as much as with  
 their power and malice they could or might.'\*
- July. In Germany Dr. Barnes and Cranmer found  
 The Lutherans all against Henry. the same experience. Luther himself had not  
 forgotten his early passage at arms with the  
 English Defender of the Faith, and was coldly  
 hostile; the German theologians, although they  
 expressed themselves with reserve and caution,  
 saw no reason to court the anger of Charles by  
 meddling in a quarrel in which they had no in-  
 terest; they revenged the studied slight which  
 had been passed by Henry on themselves, with a  
 pardonable indifference to the English ecclesias-  
 tical revolt.

If, however, in Germany and Italy the balance of unjust interference lay on the imperial side, it was more than adequately compensated by the answering pressure which was brought to bear in England and in France on the opposite side. Under the allied sovereigns, the royal authority was openly exercised to compel such expressions of sentiment as the courts of London and Paris desired; and the measures which were taken oblige us more than ever to regret the inventive efforts

---

\* BURNET'S *Collect.* p. 50. Burnet labours to prove that on Henry's side there was no bribery, and that the emperor was the only offender; an examination of many MS. letters from Croke and other agents in

Italy leads me to believe that, although the emperor only had recourse to intimidation, because he alone was able to practise it, the bribery was equally shared between both parties.

of Cranmer's genius. For, in fact, these manœuvres, even if honestly executed, were all unrealities. The question at issue was one of domestic English politics, and the metamorphosis of it into a question of ecclesiastical law was a mere delusion. The discussion was transferred to a false ground, and however the king may have chosen to deceive himself, was not being tried upon its real merits. A complicated difficulty vitally affecting the interests of a great nation, was laid for solution before a body of persons incompetent to understand or decide it, and the laity, with the alternative before them of civil war, and the returning miseries of the preceding century, could brook no judgment which did not answer to their wishes.

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1530.  
June 12.  
The move  
not a happy  
one.

The French king, contemptuously indifferent to justice, submitted to be guided by his interest; feeling it necessary for his safety to fan the quarrel between Henry and the emperor, he resolved to encourage whatever measures would make the breach between them irreparable. The reconciliation of Herod and Pontius Pilate\* was the subject of his worst alarm; and a slight exercise of ecclesiastical tyranny was but a moderate price by which to ensure himself against so dangerous a possibility.

Accordingly, at the beginning of June, the

\* **LEGRAND**, vol. iii. p. 458. The Grand Master to the King of France :—De l'autre part, adventure il n'est moins à craindre, que le Roy d'Angleterre, irrité de trop longues dissimulations,

trouvast moyen de parvenir à ses intentions du consentement de l'Empereur, et que par l'advenement d'un tiers se fissent ami *Herode et Pilate.*

CH. 3. University of Paris was instructed by royal letters to pronounce an opinion on the extent to which the pope might grant dispensations for marriage within the forbidden degrees. The letters were presented by the grand master, and the latter in his address to the faculty, maintained at the outset an appearance of impartiality. The doctors were required to decide according to their conscience, having the fear of God before their eyes; and no open effort was ventured to dictate the judgment which was to be delivered.

A.D. 1530.  
June 12.  
The University of  
Paris hesitate.

The majority of the doctors understood their duty and their position, and a speedy resolution was anticipated, when a certain Dr. Beda, an energetic Ultramontane, commenced an opposition. He said that, on a question which touched the power of the pope, they were not at liberty to pronounce an opinion without the permission of his Holiness himself; and that the deliberation ought not to go forward till they had applied for that permission and had received it. This view was supported by the Spanish and Italian party in the university. The debate grew warm, and at length the meeting broke up in confusion without coming to a resolution. Beda, when remonstrated with on the course which he was pursuing, did not hesitate to say that he had the secret approbation of his prince; that, however Francis might disguise from the world his real opinions, in his heart he only desired to see the pope victorious. An assertion so confident was readily believed, nor is it likely that Beda ventured to make it without some foundation. But being

spoken of openly it became a matter of general conversation, and reaching the ears of the English ambassador, it was met with instant and angry remonstrance. 'The ambassador,' wrote the grand master to Francis, 'has been to me in great displeasure, and has told me roundly that his master is trifled with by us. We give him words in plenty to keep his beak in the water; but it is very plain that we are playing false, and that no honesty is intended. Nor are his words altogether without reason; for many persons declare openly that nothing will be done. If the alliance of England, therefore, appear of importance to your Highness, it would be well for you to write to the Dean of the Faculty, directing him to close an impertinent discussion, and require an answer to the question asked as quickly as possible.\*' The tone of this letter proves, with sufficient clearness, the true feelings of the French government; but at the moment the alternative suggested by the grand master might not be ventured. Francis could not afford to quarrel with England, or to be on less than cordial terms with it, and for a time at least his brother sovereigns must continue to be at enmity. The negotiations for the recovery of the French princes out of their Spanish prison, were on the point of conclusion; and, as Francis was insolvent, Henry had consented to become security for the money demanded for their deliverance. Beda had, moreover, injured his cause by attacking the Gallican liberties; and as this

CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.

June 12.

The English ambassador complains.

Fear of Francis lest Herod and Pontius Pilate should become friends together.

---

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 467, &c.



CH. 3. was a point on which the government was naturally sensitive, some tolerable excuse was furnished for the lesson which it was thought proper to administer to the offending doctor.

A. D. 1530.

June 17.  
The message which he sent to the university.

On the seventeenth of June, 1530, therefore, Francis wrote as follows to the President of the Parliament of Paris:—

‘ We have learnt, to our great displeasure, that one Beda, an imperialist, has dared to raise an agitation among the theologians, dissuading them from giving their voices on the cause of the King of England.—On receipt of this letter, therefore, you shall cause the said Beda to appear before you, and you shall show him the grievous anger which he has given us cause to entertain towards him. And further you shall declare to him, laying these our present writings before his eyes that he may not doubt the truth of what you say, that if he does not instantly repair the fault which he has committed, he shall be punished in such sort as that he shall remember henceforth what it is for a person of his quality to meddle in the affairs of princes.\* If he venture to remonstrate; if he allege that it is matter of conscience, and that before proceeding to pronounce an opinion it is necessary to communicate with the pope; in our name you shall forbid him to hold any such communication: and he and all who abet him, and all persons whatsoever, not only who shall themselves dare to consult the pope on this matter, but who shall so much as entertain the proposal of consulting him, shall be dealt with in such a manner as shall be an example to all the

world. The liberties of the Gallican Church are touched, and the independence of our theological council, and there is no privilege belonging to this realm on which we are more peremptorily determined to insist.\*

CH. 3.  
p. 1530.  
A. 17.

The haughty missive, a copy of which was sent to England,† produced the desired effect. The doctors became obedient and convinced, and the required declaration of opinion in Henry's favour, was drawn up in the most ample manner. They made a last desperate effort to escape from the position in which they were placed when the seal of the university was to be affixed to the decision; but the resistance was hopeless, the authorities were inexorable, and they submitted. It is not a little singular that the English political agent employed on this occasion, and to whose lot it fell to communicate the result to the king, was Reginald Pole. He it was, who behind the scenes, and assisting to work the machinery of the intrigue, first there, perhaps, contracted his disgust with the cause on which he was embarked. There learning to hate the ill with which he was forced immediately into contact, he lost sight of the greater ill to which it was opposed; and in the recoil commenced the first steps of a career, which brought his mother to the scaffold, which overspread all England with an atmosphere of treason and suspicion, and which

The u  
verait.  
submit

Reginald  
Pole at  
Paris on  
this occa-  
sion.

\* Letter from the King of France to the President of the Parliament of Paris. *Rolls House MS.*

† Letter from Reginald Pole to Henry VIII. *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.

June writes  
The Henry.  
sage  
he of  
the  
nity

terminated at last after years of exile, rebellion, and falsehood, in a brief victory of blood and shame. So ever does wrong action beget its own retribution, punishing itself by itself, and wrecking the instruments by which it works. The letter which Pole wrote from Paris to Henry will not be uninteresting. It revealed his distaste for his occupation, though prudence held him silent as to his deeper feelings.

‘Please it your Highness to be advertised, that the determination and conclusion of the divines in this university was achieved and finished according to your desired purpose, upon Saturday last past. The sealing of the same has been put off unto this day, nor never could be obtained before for any soliciting on our parts which were your agents here, which never ceased to labour, all that lay in us, for the expedition of it, both with the privy president and with all such as we thought might in any part aid us therein. But what difficulties and stops hath been, to let the obtaining of the seal of the university, notwithstanding the conclusion passed and agreed unto by the more part of the faculty, by reason of such oppositions as the adversary part hath made to embezzle the determination that it should not take effect nor go forth in that same form as it was concluded, it may please your Grace to be advertised by this bearer, Master Fox; who, with his prudence, diligence, and great exercise in the cause, hath most help to resist all these crafts, and to bring the matter to that point as your most desired purpose hath been to have it. He hath indeed acted according to that hope which I had

of him at the beginning and first breaking of the matter amongst the faculty here, when I, somewhat fearing and foreseeing such contentions, alterations, and empeschements as by most likelihood might ensue, did give your Grace advertisement, how necessary I thought it was to have Master Fox's presence. And whereas I was informed by Master Fox how it standeth with your Grace's pleasure, considering my fervent desire thereon, that, your motion once achieved and brought to a final conclusion in this university, I should repair to your presence, your Grace could not grant me at this time a petition more comfortable unto me. And so, making what convenient speed I may, my trust is shortly to wait upon your Highness. Thus Jesu preserve your most noble Grace to his pleasure, and your most comfort and honour. Written at Paris, the seventh day of July, by your Grace's most humble and faithful servant, REGINALD POLE.\*

CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.  
July.

We must speak of this transaction as it deserves, and call it wholly bad, unjust, and inexcusable. Yet we need not deceive ourselves into supposing that the opposition which was crushed so roughly was based on any principle of real honesty. In Italy, intrigue was used against intimidation. In France intimidation was used against intrigue; and the absence of rectitude in the parties whom it was necessary to influence, provoked and justified the contempt with which they were treated.

Intimidation against  
intrigue.

The conduct of the English universities on the

---

\* Pole to Henry VIII. *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 3. same occasion was precisely what their later characters would have led us respectively to expect from them. At Oxford the heads of houses and the senior doctors and masters submitted their consciences to state dictation, without opposition, and, as it seemed, without reluctance. Henry was wholly satisfied that the right was on his own side; he was so convinced of it, that an opposition to his wishes among his own subjects, he could attribute only to disloyalty or to some other unworthy feeling; and therefore, while he directed the convocation, 'giving no credence to sinister persuasions, to show and declare their just and true learning in his cause,' he was able to dwell upon the answer which he expected from them, as a plain matter of duty; and obviously as not admitting of any uncertainty whatever. 'We will and command you,' he said, 'that ye, not leaning to wilful and sinister opinions of your own several minds, considering that we be your sovereign liege lord [and] totally giving your time, mind, and affections to the true overtures of divine learning in this behalf, do show and declare your true and just learning in the said cause, like as ye will abide by: wherein ye shall not only please Almighty God, but also us your liege lord. And we, for your so doing, shall be to you and to our university there so good and gracious a lord for the same, as ye shall perceive it well done in your well fortune to come. And in case you do not uprightly, according to divine learning, handle yourselves herein, ye may be assured that we, not without great cause, shall so quickly

A.D. 1530.

July.

Similar

proceedings  
at Oxford.

The king's  
first letter.

and sharply look to your unnatural misdemeanour herein, that it shall not be to your quietness and ease hereafter.\* The admonitory clauses were sufficiently clear; they were scarcely needed, however, by the older members of the university. An enlarged experience of the world which years, at Oxford as well as elsewhere, had not failed to bring with them, a just apprehension of the condition of the kingdom, and a sense of the obligations of subjects in times of political difficulty, sufficed to reconcile the heads of the colleges to obedience; and threats were not required where it is unlikely that a thought of hesitation was entertained. But there was a class of residents which appears to be perennial in that university, composed out of the younger masters; a class of men who, defective alike in age, in wisdom, or in knowledge, were distinguished by a species of theoretic High Church fanaticism; who, until they received their natural correction from advancing years, required from time to time to be protected against their own extravagance by some form of external pressure. These were the persons whom the king was addressing in his more severe language, and it was not without reason that he had recourse to it.

In order to avoid difficulty, and to secure a swift and convenient resolution, it was proposed that both at Oxford and Cambridge the universities should be represented by a committee composed of the heads of houses, the proctors, and the graduates in divinity and law: that

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1530.  
July.

The senior members wish to settle the matter quietly.

---

\* BURNET, *Collectanea*, p. 429.

CH. 3. this committee should agree upon the form of a

A.D. 1530.  
July.

The  
younger  
masters are  
trouble-  
some.

reply; and that the university seal should then be affixed without further discussion. This proposition was plausible as well as prudent, for it might be supposed reasonably that young half-educated students were incapable of forming a judgment on an intricate point of law; and to admit their votes was equivalent to allowing judgment to be given by party feeling. The masters who were to be thus excluded refused however to entertain this view of their incapacity. The question whether the committee should be appointed was referred to convocation, where, having the advantage of numbers, they coerced the entire proceedings: and some of them 'expressing themselves in a very forward manner' to the royal commissioners,\* and the heads of houses being embarrassed, and not well knowing what to do, the king found it necessary again to interpose. He was unwilling, as he said, to violate the constitution of the university by open interference, 'considering it to exist under grant and charter from the crown as a body politic, in the ruling whereof in things to be done in the name of the whole, the number of private suffrages doth prevail.' 'He was loth, too,' he added, 'to show his displeasure, whereof he had so great cause ministered unto him, unto the whole in general, whereas the fault perchance consisted and remained in light and wilful heads,' and he trusted that it might suffice if the masters of the colleges used their private influence and authority†

\* *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 377.

† BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 430; *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 378.

in overcoming the opposition. For the effecting of this purpose, however, and in order to lend weight to their persuasion, he assisted the convocation towards a conclusion with the following characteristic missive:—

‘To our trusty and well-beloved the heads of houses, doctors, and proctors of our University of Oxford:

‘Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well; and of late being informed, to our no little marvel and discontentation, that a great part of the youth of that our university, with contentious and factious manner daily combining together, neither regarding their duty to us their sovereign lord, nor yet conforming themselves to the opinions and orders of the virtuous, wise, sage, and profound learned men of that university, wilfully do stick upon the opinion to have a great number of regents and non-regents to be associate unto the doctors, proctors, and bachelors of divinity for the determination of our question; which we believe hath not been often seen, that such a number of right small learning in regard to the other should be joined with so famous a sort, or in a manner stay their seniors in so weighty a cause. And forasmuch as this, we think, should be no small dishonour to our university there, but most especially to you the seniors and rulers of the same; and as also, we assure you, this their unnatural and unkind demeanour is not only right much to our displeasure, but much to be marvelled of, upon what ground and occasion, they being our mere subjects, should show themselves more unkind and wilful in this matter than all

CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.  
July.How Henry  
addressed  
them.



CH. 3. other universities, both in this and all other regions do: we, trusting in the dexterity and wisdom of you and other the said discreet and substantial learned men of that university, be in perfect hope that ye will conduce and frame the said young persons unto order and conformity as it becometh you to do. Whereof we be desirous to hear with incontinent diligence; and doubt you not we shall regard the demeanour of every one of the university according to their merits and deserts. And if the youth of the university will play masteries as they begin to do, we doubt not but they shall well perceive that non est bonum irritare crabrones.\*

A.D. 1530.  
July.

Non est bonum irritare crabrones.

‘Given under our hand and seal, at our Castle of Windsor.

‘HENRY R.’†

Oxford becomes obedient.

It is scarcely necessary to say, that, armed with this letter, the heads of houses subdued the recalcitrance of the overhasty ‘youth;’ and Oxford duly answered as she was required to answer.

Cambridge being similarly pressed, obeys also.

The proceedings at Cambridge were not very dissimilar; but Cambridge being distinguished by greater openness and largeness of mind on this as on the other momentous subjects of the day than the sister university, was able to preserve a more manly bearing, and escape direct humiliation. Cranmer had written a book upon the divorce in the preceding year, which, as

---

\* It is not good to stir a hornet's nest.

† BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 431.

coming from a well-known Cambridge man, had occasioned a careful ventilation of the question there; the resident masters had been divided by it into factions nearly equal in number, though unharmoniously composed. The heads of houses, as at Oxford, were inclined to the king, but they were embarrassed and divided by the presence on the same side of the suspected liberals, the party of Shaxton, Latimer, and Cranmer himself. The agitation of many months had rendered all members of the university, young and old, so well acquainted (as they supposed) with the bearings of the difficulty, that they naturally resisted, as at the other university, the demand that their power should be delegated to a committee; and the Cambridge convocation, as well as that of Oxford, threw out this resolution when it was first proposed to them. A king's letter having made them more amenable, a list of the intended committee was drawn out, which, containing Latimer's name, occasioned a fresh storm. But the number in the senate house being nearly divided, 'the labour of certain friends' turned the scale; the vote passed, and the committee was allowed, on condition that the question should be argued publicly in the presence of the whole university. Finally, judgment was obtained on the king's side, though in a less absolute form than he had required, and the commissioners did not think it prudent to press for a more extreme conclusion. They had been desired to pronounce that the pope had no power to permit a man to marry his brother's widow. They consented only

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1530.

CH. 3. to say that a marriage within those degrees was  
 A.D. 1530. contrary to the divine law; but the question of  
 the pope's power was left unapproached.\*

The Vice-  
 Chancellor  
 takes the  
 judgment  
 to Wind-  
 sor.

Hugh Latimer ap-  
 pears upon  
 the scene.

It will not be uninteresting to follow this judgment a further step, to the delivery of it into the hands of the king, where it will introduce us to a Sunday at Windsor Castle three centuries ago. We shall find present there, as a significant symptom of the time, Hugh Latimer, appointed freshly select preacher in the royal chapel, but already obnoxious to English orthodoxy, on account of his Cambridge sermons. These sermons, it had been said, contained many things good and profitable, 'on sin, and godliness, and virtue,' but much also which was disrespectful to established beliefs, the preacher being clearly opposed to 'candles and pilgrimages,' and 'calling men unto the works that God commanded in his Holy Scripture, all dreams and unprofitable glosses set aside and utterly despised.' The preacher had, therefore, been cited before consistory courts and interdicted by bishops, 'swarms of friars and doctors flocking against Master Latimer on every side.'† This also was to be noted about him, that he was one of the most fearless men who ever lived. Like John Knox, whom he much resembled, in whatever presence he might be, whether of poor or rich, of laymen or priests, of bishops or kings, he ever spoke out boldly from his pulpit what he thought, directly if necessary to particular per-

---

\* BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 48.

† Preface to LATIMER'S *Sermons*. Parker Society's edition, p. 3.

sons whom he saw before him respecting their own actions. Even Henry himself he did not spare where he saw occasion for blame; and Henry, of whom it was said that he never was mistaken in a *man*—loving a *man*\* where he could find him with all his heart—had, notwithstanding, chosen this Latimer as one of his own chaplains.

The unwilling bearer of the Cambridge judgment was Dr. Buckmaster, the vice-chancellor, who, in a letter to a friend, describes his reception at the royal castle.

‘To the right worshipful Dr. Edmonds, vicar of Alborne, in Wiltshire, my duty remembered,—

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1530.

Dr. Buckmaster's letter.

Sunday at Windsor in 1530.

‘I heartily commend me unto you, and I let you understand that yesterday week, being Sunday at afternoon, I came to Windsor, and also to part of Mr. Latimer's sermon; and after the end of the same I spake with Mr. Secretary [Cromwell], and also with Mr. Provost; and so after evensong I delivered our letters in the Chamber of Presence, all the court beholding. The king, with Mr. Secretary, did there read them; and did then give me thanks and talked with me a good while. He much lauded our wisdom and good conveyance in the matter, with the great quietness in the same. He showed me also what he had in his hands for our university, according to that which Mr. Secretary did express unto us, and so

The king receives the reply of Cambridge.

---

\* ‘King Harry loved a man,’ was an English proverb to the close of the century. See SIE ROBERT NAUNTON'S *Fragmenta Regalia*, London, 1641, p. 14.

CH. 3. he departed from me. But by and bye he greatly  
 A.D. 1530. praised Mr. Latimer's sermon; and in so praising  
 said on this wise: 'This displeaseth greatly Mr.  
 Vice-Chancellor yonder; yon same,' said he to the  
 Duke of Norfolk, 'is Mr. Vice-Chancellor of  
 Cambridge,' and so pointed unto me. Then he  
 spake secretly unto the said duke, which, after  
 the king's departure, came unto me and welcomed  
 me, saying, among other things, the king would  
 speak with me on the next day. And here is the  
 first act. On the next day I waited until it was  
 dinner time; and so at the last Dr. Butts, [king's  
 physician,] came unto me, and brought a reward,  
 twenty nobles for me, and five marks for the  
 junior proctor which was with me, saying that I  
 should take that for a resolute answer, and that I  
 might depart from the court when I would. Then  
 came Mr. Provost, and when I had shewed him  
 of the answer, he said I should speak with the  
 king after dinner for all that, and so he brought  
 me into a privy place where after dinner he would  
 have me wait. I came thither and he both; and  
 by one of the clock the king entered in. It was  
 in a gallery. There were Mr. Secretary, Mr.  
 Provost, Mr. Latimer, Mr. Proctor, and I, and  
 no more. The king then talked with us until  
 six of the clock. I assure you he was scarce con-  
 tented with Mr. Secretary and Mr. Provost, that  
 this was not also determined, *an Papa possit dis-  
 pensare*. I made the best, and confirmed the same  
 that they had shewed his Grace before; and how  
 it would never have been so obtained. He opened  
 his mind, saying he would have it determined

Latimer at  
Windsor.

after Easter, and of the same was counselled awhile. CH. 3.

A.D. 1530.

‘Much other communication we had, which were too long here to recite. Then his Highness departed, casting a little holy water of the court; and I shortly after took my leave of Mr. Secretary and Mr. Provost, with whom I did not drink, nor yet was bidden, and on the morrow departed from thence, thinking more than I did say, and being glad that I was out of the court, where many men, as I did both hear and perceive, did wonder at me. And here shall be an end for this time of this fable. The holy water of the court.

‘All the world almost crieth out of Cambridge for this act, and specially on me; but I must bear it as well as I may. I have lost a benefice by it, which I should have had within these ten days; for there hath one fallen in Mr. Throgmorton’s\* gift which he hath faithfully promised unto me many a time, but now his mind is turned and alienate from me. If ye go to court after Easter I pray you have me in remembrance. Mr. Latimer preacheth still,—quod æmuli ejus graviter ferunt.

‘Thus fare you well. Your own to his power,  
‘WILLIAM BUCKMASTER.†

‘Cambridge, Monday after Easter, 1530.’

It does not appear that Cambridge was pressed

---

\* Sir George Throgmorton, | the House of Commons. See  
who distinguished himself by his | vol. iv. Appendix.  
opposition to the Reformation in | † BURNET’S *Collect.* p. 429.

CH. 3. further, and we may, therefore, allow it to have acquitted itself creditably. If we sum up the

A. D. 1530.  
General  
result of  
Cranmer's  
expedient.

results of Cranmer's measure as a whole, it may be said that opinions had been given by about half Europe directly or indirectly unfavourable to the papal claims; and that, therefore, the king had furnished himself with a legal pretext for declining the jurisdiction of the court of Rome, and appealing to a general council. Objections to the manner in which the opinions had been gained could be answered by recriminations equally just; and in the technical aspect of the question a step had certainly been gained. It will be thought, nevertheless, on wider grounds, that the measure was a mistake; that it would have been far better if the legal labyrinth had never been entered, and if the divorce had been claimed only upon those considerations of policy for which it had been first demanded, and which formed the true justification of it. Not only might a shameful chapter of scandal have been spared out of the world's history, but the point on which the battle was being fought lay beside the real issue. Europe was shaken with intrigue, hundreds of books were written, and tens of thousands of tongues were busy for twelve months weaving logical subtleties, and all for nothing. The truth was left unspoken because it was not convenient to speak it, and all parties agreed to persuade themselves and accept one another's persuasions, that they meant something which they did not mean. Beyond doubt the theological difficulty really affected the king. We cannot read his

Unreality  
of it.

own book\* upon it without a conviction that his arguments were honestly urged, that his misgivings were real, and that he meant every word which he said. Yet it is clear at the same time that these misgivings would not have been satisfied, if all the wisdom of the world—pope, cardinals, councils, and all the learned faculties together—had declared against him, the true secret of the matter lying deeper, understood and appreciated by all the chief parties concerned, and by the English laity, whose interests were at stake; but in all these barren disputings ignored as if it had no existence.

CH. 3.  
A.D. 1530.

It was perhaps less easy than it seems to have followed the main road. The bye ways often promise best at first entrance into them, and Henry's peculiar temper never allowed him to believe beforehand that a track which he had chosen could lead to any conclusion except that to which he had arranged that it should lead. With an intellect endlessly fertile in finding reasons to justify what he desired, he could see no justice on any side but his own, or understand that it was possible to disagree with him except from folly or ill-feeling. Starting always with a foregone conclusion, he arrived of course where he wished to arrive. His 'Glasse of Truth' is a very picture of his mind. 'If the marshall of the host bids us do anything,' he said, 'shall we do it if it be against the great captain? Again, if the great captain bid us do anything, and the

Henry's  
defence of  
his own  
cause.

---

\* *A Glasse of Truth.*



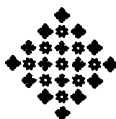
CH. 3. king or the emperor commandeth us to do  
 A.D. 1531. another, dost thou doubt that we must obey the  
 commandment of the king or emperor, and con-  
 temn the commandment of the great captain?  
 Therefore if the king or the emperor bid one  
 thing, and God another, we must obey God, and  
 contemn and not regard neither king nor emper-  
 or.' And, therefore, he argued, 'we are not to  
 obey the pope, when the pope commands what is  
 unlawful.'\* These were but many words to prove  
 what the pope would not have questioned; and  
 either they concluded nothing or the conclusion  
 was assumed.

Theology  
 an indif-  
 ferent dis-  
 cipline for  
 a states-  
 man.

We cannot but think that among the many mis-  
 fortunes of Henry's life his theological training  
 was the greatest; and that directly or indirectly it  
 was the parent of all the rest. If in this unhappy  
 business he had trusted only to his instincts as an  
 English statesman; if he had been contented him-  
 self with the truth, and had pressed no arguments  
 except those which in the secrets of his heart had  
 weight with him, he would have spared his own  
 memory a mountain of undeserved reproach, and  
 have spared historians their weary labour through  
 these barren deserts of unreality.

---

\* *Glasse of Truth*, p. 144.





## CHAPTER IV.

### CHURCH AND STATE.

**T**HE authorities of the church, after the lesson which they had received from the parliament in its first session, were now allowed a respite of two years, during which they might re-consider the complaints of the people, and consult among themselves upon the conduct which they would pursue with respect to those complaints. They availed themselves of their interval of repose in a manner little calculated to recover the esteem which they had forfeited, or to induce the legislature further to stay their hand. Instead of reforming their own faults, they spent the time in making use of their yet uncurtailed powers of persecution; and they wreaked the bitterness of their resentment upon the unfortunate heretics, who paid with their blood at the stake for the diminished revenues and blighted dignities of their spiritual lords and superiors. During the later years of Wolsey's administration, the Protestants, though threatened and imprisoned, had escaped the most cruel consequences of their faith. Wolsey had been a warm-hearted and genuine man, and although he had believed as earnestly as his brother bishops, that Protestantism was a pernicious thing, de-

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530.  
The clergy allowed a respite, of which they do not make a creditable use.

They indemnify themselves for what they have lost at the expense of the Protestants.

CH. 4.     structive alike to the institutions of the country  
 A.D. 1530.     and to the souls of mankind, his memory can be  
 reproached with nothing worse than assiduous  
 but humane efforts for the repression of it. In  
 the three years which followed his dismissal, a  
 far more bloody page was written in the history  
 of the reformers; and under the combined auspices  
 of Sir Thomas More's fanaticism, and the spleen  
 of the angry clergy, the stake re-commenced its  
 hateful activity. This portion of my subject re-  
 quires a full and detailed treatment; I reserve  
 the account of it, therefore, for a separate chapter,  
 and proceed for the present with the progress of  
 the secular changes.

Alteration  
 of the posi-  
 tion of the  
 clergy, and  
 their diffi-  
 culty in  
 compre-  
 hending it.

Although, as I said, no further legislative  
 measures were immediately contemplated against  
 the clergy, yet they were not permitted to forget  
 the alteration in their position which had followed  
 upon Wolsey's fall; and as they had shown in  
 the unfortunate document which they had sub-  
 mitted to the king, so great a difficulty in com-  
 prehending the nature of that alteration, it was  
 necessary clearly and distinctly to enforce it upon  
 them. Until that moment they had virtually  
 held the supreme power in the state. The  
 nobility, crippled by the wars of the Roses, had  
 sunk into the second place; the Commons were  
 disorganized, or incapable of a definite policy; and  
 the chief offices of the government had fallen as  
 a matter of course to the only persons who for  
 the moment were competent to hold them. The  
 jealousy of ecclesiastical encroachments, which  
 had shown itself so bitterly under the Plantage-

nets, had been superseded from the accession of Henry VII. by a policy of studied conciliation, and the position of Wolsey had but symbolized the position of his order. But Wolsey was now gone, and the ecclesiastics who had shared his greatness while they envied it, were compelled to participate also in his change of fortune.

This great minister, after the failure of a dis-  
CH. 4.  
A.D. 1530.  
 creditable effort to fasten upon him a charge of high treason,—a charge which, vindictively pressed through the House of Lords, was wisely rejected by the Commons,—had been prosecuted with greater justice for a breach of the law, in having exercised the authority of papal legate within the realm of England. His policy had broken down: he had united against him in a common exasperation all orders in the state, secular and spiritual; and the possible consequences of his adventurous transgression had fallen upon him. The parliaments of Edward I., Edward III., Richard II., and Henry IV. had by a series of statutes pronounced illegal all presentations by the pope to any office or dignity in the Anglican church, under penalty of a premunire; the provisions of these acts extending not only to the persons themselves who accepted office under such conditions, but comprehending equally whoever acknowledged their authority, ‘their executors, procurators, fautors, maintainers, and receivers.’\* The importance attached to these laws was to be

---

\* 35 Ed. I.; 25 Ed. III. stat. 4; stat. 5, cap. 22; 27 Ed. III. stat. 1; 13 Ric. II. stat. 2, cap. 2; 16 Ric. II. cap. 5; 9 Hen. IV. cap. 8.

CH. 4. seen readily in the frequent re-enactment of  
 A.D. 1530. them, with language of increasing vehemence; and although the primary object was to neutralize the supposed right of the pope to present to English benefices, and although the office of papal legate is not especially named in any one of the prohibitory clauses, yet so acute a canonist as Wolsey could not have been ignorant that it was comprehended under the general denunciation. The 5th of the 16th of Richard II. was in fact explicitly universal in its language, and dwelt especially on the importance of prohibiting the exercise of any species of jurisdiction which could encroach on the royal authority. He had therefore consciously violated a law on his own responsibility, which he knew to exist, but which he perhaps trusted had fallen into desuetude, and would not again be revived. It cannot be denied that in doing so, being at the time the highest law officer of the crown, he had committed a grave offence, and was justly liable to the full penalties of the broken statute. He had received the royal permission, but it was a plea which could not have availed him, and he did not attempt to urge it.\*

He had been licensed by the king to receive his commission as legate.

\* CAVENDISH, p. 276.

Gardiner has left some noticeable remarks on this subject.

'Whether,' he says, 'a king may command against a common law or an act of parliament, there is never a judge or other man in the realm ought to know more by experience of that the laws have said than I.

'First, my Lord Cardinal, that obtained his legacy by our

late Sovereign Lord's requirements at Rome, yet, because it was against the laws of the realm, the judges concluded the offence of Premunire, which matter I bare away, and took it for a law of the realm, because the lawyers said so, but my reason digested it not. The lawyers, for confirmation of their doings, brought in the case of Lord Tiptoft. An earl he was, and learned in the

The contingency of a possible violation of the law by the king himself had been expressly foreseen and provided against in the act under which he was prosecuted,\* and being himself the king's legal adviser, it was his duty to have kept his sovereign†

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530.

civil laws, who being chancellor, because in execution of the king's commandment he offended the laws of the realm, suffered on Tower Hill. They brought in examples of many judges that had fines set on their heads in like cases for transgression of laws by the king's commandment, and this I learned in that case.

'Since that time being of the council, when many proclamations were devised against the carriers out of corn, when it came to punish the offender, the judges would answer it might not be by the law, because the Act of Parliament gave liberty, wheat being under a price. Whereupon at last followed the Act of Proclamations, in the passing whereof were many large words spoken.'

After mentioning other cases, he goes on:—

'I reasoned once in the parliament house, where there was free speech without danger, and the Lord Audely, to satisfy me, because I was in some secret estimation, as he knew, 'Thou art a good fellow, Bishop,' quoth he; 'look at the Act of Supremacy, and there the king's doings be restrained to spiritual jurisdiction; and in another act no spiritual law shall have place contrary to a common law, or an act of parliament. And this were not,' quoth he, 'you

bishops would enter in with the king, and by means of his supremacy order the laws as ye listed. But we will provide,' quoth he, 'that the premonition shall never go off your heads.' This I bare away then, and held my peace.'—Gardiner to the Protector Somerset: *MS. Harleian*, 417.

\* 13 Ric. II. stat. 2, cap. 2.

Et si le Roi envoie par lettre ou en autre maniere a la Courte du Rome al excitacion d'aucune person, parount que la contrarie de cest estatut soit fait touchant aucune dignité de Sainte Eglise, si celui qui fait tiel excitacion soit Prelate de Sainte Eglise, paie au Roy le value de ses temporalitees dun an. The petition of parliament which occasioned the statute is even more emphatic: Perveuz tout foitz que par nulle traite ou composition a faire entre le Seint Pere le Pape et notre Seigneur le Roy que riens soit fait a contraire en prejudice de cest Estatute a faire. Et si aucune Seigneur Espirituel ou Temporel ou aucune persone quiconque de qu'elle condition q'il soit, enforme, ensence ou excite le Roi ou ses heirs, l'antientiser, adnuller ou repeller cest Estatut a faire, et de ceo soit atteint par due proces du loy que le Seigneur Espirituel eit la peyne sus dite, &c.—*Rolls of Parliament*, Ric. II. 13.

† Even further, as chancellor

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530.

But in  
granting  
that licence  
the king  
had ex-  
ceeded his  
authority.

informed of the true nature of the statute. He had neglected this, his immediate obligation, in pursuit of the interests of the church, and when Henry's eyes were opened, he did not consider himself called upon to interfere to shield his minister from the penalties which he had incurred, nor is it likely that in the face of the irritation of the country he could have done so if he had desired. It was felt, indeed, that the long services of Wolsey, and his generally admirable administration, might fairly save him (especially under the circumstances of the case) from extremity of punishment; and if he had been allowed to remain unmolested in the affluent retirement which was at first conceded to him, his treatment would not have caused the stain which we have now to lament on the conduct of the administration which succeeded his fall. He indeed himself believed that the final attack upon him was due to no influence of rival statesmen, but to the hatred of Anne Boleyn; and perhaps he was not mistaken. This, however, is a matter which does not concern us here, and I need not pursue it. It is enough that he had violated the law of England, openly and knowingly, and on the revival of the national policy by

And the  
prosecution  
therefore  
was legal  
and justi-  
fiable.

the particular duty had been assigned to him of watching over the observance of the act.

Et le chancelier que pur le temps serra a quelle heure que pleint a luy ou a conseil le Roy soit fait d'ascunes des articles sus ditz par ascune persone que pleindre soy voudra granta briefs

sur le cas ou commissions a faire au covenables persones, d'oier et terminer les ditz articles sur peyne de perdre son office et jamais estre mys en office le Roy et perdre mille livres a lever a l'oeps le Roy si de ce soit atteint par du proces.—*Rolls of Parliament*, Ric. II. 13.

which that law had been enacted, he reaped the consequences in his own person.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530.

It will be a question whether we can equally approve of the enlarged application of the statute which immediately followed. The guilt of Wolsey did not rest with himself; it extended to all who had recognised him in his capacity of legate; to the archbishops and bishops, to the two Houses of Convocation, to the Privy Council, to the Lords and Commons, and indirectly to the nation itself. It was obvious that such a state of things was not contemplated by the act under which he was tried, and where in point of law all persons were equally guilty, in equity they were equally innocent; the circumstances of the case, therefore, rendered necessary a general pardon, which was immediately drawn out. The government, however, while granting absolution to the nation, determined to make some exceptions in their lenity; and harsh as their resolution appeared, it is not difficult to conjecture the reasons which induced them to form it. The higher clergy had been encouraged by Wolsey's position to commit those excessive acts of despotism which had created so deep animosity among the people. The overthrow of the last ecclesiastical minister was an opportunity to teach them that the privileges which they had abused were at an end; and as the lesson was so difficult for them to learn, the letter of the law which they had broken was put in force to quicken their perceptions. They were to be punished indirectly for their other evil doings, and forced to surrender some portion of

The penalties of the premunire extend to the nation.

The clergy excepted in the general pardon.



CH. 4. the unnumbered exactions which they had ex-  
 A.D. 1530-1 tortured from the helplessness of their flocks.

December. In pursuance of this resolution, therefore,  
 Meeting of Convoca- official notice was issued in December, 1530, that  
 tion. the clergy lay all under a premunire, and that  
 the crown intended to prosecute. Convocation  
 was to meet in the middle of January, and this  
 comforting fact was communicated to the bishops  
 in order to divert their attention to subjects  
 which might profitably occupy their delibera-  
 tions. The church legislature had sate in the pre-  
 ceding year contemporaneously with the sitting  
 of parliament, at the time when their privileges  
 were being discussed, and when their conduct had  
 been so angrily challenged : but these matters had  
 not disturbed their placid equanimity : and while  
 the bishops were composing their answer to the  
 Occupation of Convoca- House of Commons, Convocation had been en-  
 tion in year pre- gaged in debating the most promising means of  
 ceding. persecuting heretics and preventing the circula-  
 tion of the Bible.\* The session had continued  
 into the spring of 1529-30, when the king had  
 been prevailed upon to grant an order in council  
 prohibiting Tyndale's Testament, in the preface of  
 which the clergy were spoken of disrespectfully.†

\* BURNET, vol. iii. p. 77.  
 See a summary of the acts of  
 this Convocation in a sermon  
 of Latimer's preached before the  
 two Houses in 1536. LATI-  
 MER'S *Sermons*, p. 45.

† The king, considering what  
 good might come of reading  
 of the New Testament and  
 following the same; and what

evil might come of the read-  
 ing of the same if it were evil  
 translated, and not followed;  
 came into the Star Chamber the  
 five-and-twentieth day of May;  
 and then communed with his  
 council and the prelates concern-  
 ing the cause. And after long  
 debating, it was alleged that the  
 translations of Tyndal and Joy

His consent had been obtained with great difficulty, on the representation of the bishops that the translation was faulty, and on their undertaking themselves to supply the place of it with a corrected version. But in obtaining the order, they supposed themselves to have gained a victory; and their triumph was celebrated in St. Paul's churchyard with an auto da fé, over which the Bishop of London consented to preside; when such New Testaments as the diligence of the apparitors could discover, were solemnly burned.

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1530-1  
New Testaments burnt in St. Paul's churchyard.

From occupation such as this a not unwholesome distraction was furnished by the intimation of the premunire; and that it might produce its due effect, it was accompanied with the further information that the clergy of the province of Canterbury would receive their pardon only upon payment of a hundred thousand pounds—a very considerable fine, amounting to more than a million of our money. Eighteen thousand pounds was required simultaneously from the province of York; and the whole sum was to be paid in instalments spread over a period of five years.\* The demand was serious, but the clergy had no alternative but to submit or to risk the chances of the law; and feeling that, with the

The clergy of the two provinces are required to pay 118,000*l*. They consent to pay.

were not truly translated, and also that in them were prologues and prefaces that sounded unto heresy, and railed against the bishops uncharitably. Wherefore all such books were prohibited, and commandment given by the king to the bishops, that they, calling to them the best

learned men of the universities, should cause a new translation to be made, so that the people should not be ignorant of the law of God.—HALL, p. 771. And see WARHAM's *Register* for the years 1529—1531. MS. Lambeth.

\* 22 Hen. VIII. cap. 15.

CH. 4. people so unfavourably disposed towards them,  
 A.D. 1530-1 they had no chance of a more equitable construction of their position, they consented with a tolerable grace, the Upper House of Convocation first, the Lower following. Their debates upon the subject have not been preserved. It was probably difficult to persuade them that they were treated with anything but the most exquisite injustice; since Wolsey's legatine faculties had been the object of their general dread; and if he had remained in power, the religious orders would have been exposed to a searching visitation in virtue of these faculties, from which they could have promised themselves but little advantage. But their punishment, if tyrannical in form, was equitable in substance, and we can reconcile ourselves without difficulty to an act of judicial confiscation.

They are  
 required to  
 acknow-  
 ledge the  
 king Su-  
 preme  
 Head of the  
 Church of  
 England.

The money, however, was not the only concession which the threat of the premunire gave opportunity to extort; and it is creditable to the clergy that the demand which they showed most desire to resist was not that which most touched their personal interests. In the preamble of the subsidy bill, under which they were to levy their ransom, they were required by the council to designate the king by the famous title which gave occasion for such momentous consequences, of 'Protector and only Supreme Head of the Church and Clergy of England.'\* It is not very easy to see what Henry proposed to himself by requiring

---

\* BURNET, vol. iii. p. 78.

this designation, at so early a stage in the movement. The breach with the pope was still distant, and he was prepared to make many sacrifices before he would even seriously contemplate a step which he so little desired. It may have been designed as a reply to the papal censures: it may have been to give effect to his own menaces, which Clement to the last believed to be no more than words;\* or perhaps (and this is the most likely) he desired by some emphatic act, to make his clergy understand the relation in which thenceforward they were to be placed towards the temporal authority. It is certain only that this title was not intended to imply what it implied when, four years later, it was conferred by act of parliament, and when virtually England was severed by it from the Roman communion.

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1530-1  
Possible  
object of  
the govern-  
ment in  
making  
this de-  
mand.

But whatever may have been the king's motive, he was serious in requiring that the title should be granted to him. Only by acknowledging Henry as Head of the Church should the clergy receive their pardon, and the longer they hesitated, the more peremptorily he insisted on their obedience. The clergy had defied the lion, and the lion held them in his grasp; and they could but struggle helplessly, supplicate and submit. Archbishop Warham, just drawing his life to a close, presided for the last time in the miserable scene, imagining that the clouds were gathering for the storms of the latter day, and that Antichrist was coming in his power.

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. 457.

CH. 4.

A. D. 1530-1  
Feb. 9.The  
bishops at-  
tempt to  
move the  
king.The king is  
peremp-  
tory, and  
will not be  
moved.

There had been a debate of three days, whether they should or should not consent, when, on the 9th of February, a deputation of the judges appeared in Convocation, to ask whether the Houses were agreed, and to inform them finally that the king had determined to allow no qualifications. The clergy begged for one more day, and the following morning the bishops held a private meeting among themselves, to discuss some plan to turn aside the blow. They desired to see Cromwell, to learn, perhaps, if there was a chance of melting the hard heart of Henry; and after an interview with the minister which could not have been encouraging, they sent two of their number, the Bishops of Exeter and Lincoln, to attempt the unpromising task. It was in vain; the miserable old men were obliged to return with the answer that the king would not see them—they had seen only the judges, who had assured them, in simple language, that the pardon was not to be settled until the supremacy was admitted. The answer was communicated to the House, and again ‘debated.’ Submission was against the consciences of the unhappy clergy; to obey their consciences involved forfeiture of property; and naturally in such a dilemma they found resolution difficult. They attempted another appeal, suggesting that eight of their number should hold a conference with the privy council, and ‘discover, if they might, some possible expedient.’ But Henry replied, as before, that he would have a clear answer, ‘yes,

or *no*.' They might say 'yes,' and their pardon was ready. They might say 'no'—and accept the premunire and its penalties. And now, what should the clergy have done? No very great courage was required to answer, 'This thing is wrong; it is against God's will, and therefore it must not be, whether premunire come or do not come.' They might have said it, and if they could have dared this little act of courage, victory was in their hands. With the cause against them so doubtful, their very attitude would have commanded back the sympathies of half the nation, and the king's threats would have exploded as an empty sound. But Henry knew the persons with whom he had to deal—forlorn shadows, decked in the trappings of dignity—who only by some such rough method could be brought to a knowledge of themselves. 'Shrink to the clergy'—I find in a state paper of the time—'Shrink to the clergy, and they be lions; lay their faults roundly and charitably to them, and they be as sheep, and will lightly be reformed, for their consciences will not suffer them to resist.'\*

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530-1

Feb. 9.

What the clergy might have done,

And why they could not do it.

They hesitated for another night. The day following, the archbishop submitted the clause containing the title to the Upper House, with a saving paragraph, which, as Burnet sententiously observes, the nature of things did require to be supposed.† 'Ecclesiæ et cleri Anglicani,' so it ran,

Feb. 10.  
The clause submitted to the House.

\* Memoranda relating to the Clergy: *Rolls House MS.*

† BURNET, vol. iii. p. 80.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530-1  
Feb. 10.The clergy  
yield and  
are par-  
doned.

‘singularem protectorem, et unicum et supremum Dominum, et quantum per legem Christi licet, etiam supremum caput ipsius Majestatem agnoscimus—We recognise the King’s Majesty to be our only sovereign lord, the singular protector of the church and clergy of England, and as far as is allowed by the law of Christ, also as our Supreme Head.’ The words were read aloud by the archbishop, and were received in silence. ‘Do you assent?’ he asked. The House remained speechless. ‘Whoever is silent seems to consent,’ the archbishop said. A voice answered out of the crowd, ‘Then are we all silent.’ They separated for a few hours to collect themselves. In the afternoon sitting they discussed the sufficiency of the subterfuge; and at length agreeing that it saved their consciences, the clause was finally passed, the Bishop of Rochester, among the rest, giving his unwilling acquiescence.

So for the present terminated this grave matter. The pardon was immediately submitted to parliament, where it was embodied in a statute;\* and this act of dubious justice accom-

\* The King’s Highness, having always tender eyes with mercy and pity and compassion towards his spiritual subjects, minding of his high goodness and great benignity so always to impart the same unto them, as justice being duly administered, all rigour be excluded; and the great benevolent minds of his said subjects [having been] largely and many times approved towards his Highness, and specially in their Convocation and

Synod now presently being in the Chapter House of Westminster, his Highness, of his said benignity and high liberality, in consideration that the said Convocation has given and granted unto him a subsidy of one hundred thousand pounds, is content to grant his general pardon to the clergy and the province of Canterbury, for all offences against the statute and premunire.—22 Hen. VIII. cap. 15.

plished, the Convocation was allowed to return to its usual occupations, and continue the prosecutions of the heretics.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1530-1  
Feb. 10.

The House of Commons, during their second session, had confined themselves meanwhile to secular business. They had been concerned chiefly with regulations affecting trade and labour; and the proceedings on the premunire being thought for the time to press sufficiently on the clergy, they deferred the further prosecution of their own complaints till the following year. Two measures, however, highly characteristic of the age, must not be passed over, one of which concerned a matter that must have added heavily to the troubles of the Bishop of Rochester at a time when he was in no need of any addition to his burdens.

Fisher was the only one among the prelates for whom it is possible to feel respect. He was weak, superstitious, pedantical; towards the Protestants he was even cruel; but he was a singlehearted man, who lived in honest fear of evil, so far as he understood what evil was; and he alone could rise above the menaces of worldly suffering, under which his brethren on the bench sank so rapidly into meekness and submission. We can therefore afford to compassionate him in the unexpected calamity by which he was overtaken, and which must have tried his failing spirit in no common manner.

Character  
of the  
Bishop of  
Rochester.

Feb. 18.

He lived, while his duties required his presence in London, at a house in Lambeth, and being a hospitable person, he opened his doors at



CH. 4. the dinner hour for the poor of the neighbourhood. Shortly after the matter which I have

A.D. 1530-1  
Feb. 18.  
An attempt  
is made to  
poison him.

just related, many of these people who were dependent on his bounty were reported to have become alarmingly ill, and several gentlemen of the household sickened also in the same sudden and startling manner. One of these gentlemen died, and a poor woman also died; and it was discovered on inquiry that the yeast which had been used in various dishes had been poisoned. The guilty person was the cook, a certain Richard Rouse; and inasmuch as all crimes might be presumed to have had motives, and the motive in the present instance was undiscoverable, it was conjectured by Queen Catherine's friends that he had been bribed by Anne Boleyn, or by some one of her party, to remove out of the way the most influential of the English opponents of the divorce.\* The story was possibly without foundation, although it is not unlikely that Fisher himself believed it. The shock of such an occurrence may well have unsettled his powers of reasoning, and at all times he was a person whose better judgment was easily harassed into incapacity. The origin of the crime, however, is of less importance than the effect of the discovery upon the nation, in whom horror of the action itself absorbed every other feeling. Murder of this kind was new in England. Ready as the people ever were with sword or lance—incurably given as they were to fighting in the best ordered

Poisoning  
a crime  
new to  
England.

---

\* BURNET, vol. i. p. 185.

times—an Englishman was accustomed to face CH. 4.  
his enemy, man to man, in the open day; and A.D. 1530-1  
the Italian crime (as it was called) of poisoning Feb. 18.  
had not till recent years been heard of.\* Even  
revenge and passion recognised their own laws of  
honour and fair play; and the cowardly ferocity  
which would work its vengeance in the dark, and  
practise destruction by wholesale to implicate one  
hated person in the catastrophe, was a new feature  
of criminality. Occurring in a time so excited,  
when all minds were on the stretch, and imagi-  
nations were feverish with fancies, it appeared  
like a frightful portent, some prodigy of nature,  
or enormous new birth of wickedness, not to be  
received or passed by as a common incident, and  
not to be dealt with by the process of ordinary  
law. Parliament undertook the investigation, The matter  
is brought  
before par-  
liament.  
making it the occasion, when the evidence was  
completed, of a special statute, so remarkable that  
I quote it in its detail and wording. The English  
were a stern people—a people knowing little of  
compassion where no lawful ground existed for  
it; but they were possessed of an awful and  
solemn horror of evil things,—a feeling which, in  
proportion as it exists, inevitably and necessarily  
issues in tempers of iron. The stern man is ever  
the most tender when good remains amidst evil,  
and is still contending with it; but we purchase  
compassion for utter wickedness only by doubting

---

\* An instance is reported in the Chronicle of the Grey Friars which was statutably enacted in the case of Rouse. The pu-

CH. 4. in our hearts whether wickedness is more than  
misfortune.

A. D. 1530-1  
Feb. 18.

Parliament  
considering  
the atro-  
cious na-  
ture of the  
crime,

‘The King’s royal Majesty,’ says the 9th of the 22nd of Henry VIII., ‘calling to his most blessed remembrance that the making of good and wholesome laws, and due execution of the same against the offenders thereof, is the only cause that good obedience and order hath been preserved in this realm; and his Highness having most tender zeal for the same, considering that man’s life above all things is chiefly to be favoured, and voluntary murders most highly to be detested and abhorred; and specially all kinds of murders by poisoning, which in this realm hitherto, our Lord be thanked, hath been most rare and seldom committed or practised: and now, in the time of this present parliament, that is to say, on the eighteenth day of February, in the twenty-second year of his most victorious reign, one Richard Rouse, late of Rochester, in the county of Kent, cook, otherwise called Richard Cook, of his most wicked and damnable disposition, did cast a certain venom or poison into a vessel replenished with yeast or barm, standing in the kitchen of the reverend father in God, John Bishop of Rochester, at his place in Lambeth Marsh; with which yeast or barm, and other things convenient, porridge or gruel was forthwith made for his family there being; whereby not only the number of seventeen persons of his said family, which did eat of that porridge, were mortally infected or poisoned, and one of them, that is to say, Bennet Curwan, gentleman, is thereof deceased; but also certain poor

people which resorted to the said bishop's place, and were there charitably fed with the remains of the said porridge and other victuals, were in like wise infected; and one poor woman of them, that is to say, Alice Tryppitt, widow, is also thereof now deceased: Our said sovereign lord the king, of his blessed disposition inwardly abhorring all such abominable offences, because that in manner no person can live in surety out of danger of death by that means, if practices thereof should not be eschewed, hath ordained and enacted by authority of this present parliament, that the said poisoning be adjudged and deemed as high treason; and that the said Richard, for the said murder and poisoning of the said two persons, shall stand and be attainted of high treason.

Ch. 4.  
A.D. 1530-1  
Feb. 18.

And desir-  
ing to make  
an awful  
example,

'And because that detestable offence, now newly practised and committed, requireth condign punishment for the same, it is ordained and enacted by authority of this present parliament that the said Richard Rouse shall be therefore boiled to death, without having any advantage of his clergy; and that from henceforth every wilful murder of any person or persons hereafter to be committed or done by means or way of poisoning, shall be reputed, deemed, and judged in the law to be high treason; and that all and every person or persons which shall hereafter be indicted and condemned by order of the law of such treason, shall not be admitted to the benefit of his or their clergy, but shall be immediately after such attainder or condemnation, committed to execution of death by boiling for the same.'

Condemns  
the mur-  
derer to be  
boiled to  
death.

CH. 4.

A. D. 1530-1

March.  
Temper of  
this parlia-  
ment.

The sentence was carried into effect\* in Smithfield, 'on the tenebra Wednesday following, to the terrible example of all others.' The spectacle of a living human being boiled to death, was really witnessed three hundred years ago by the London citizens, within the walls of that old cattle-market; an example terrible indeed, the significance of which is not easily to be exhausted. For the poisoners of the soul there was the stake,† for the poisoners of the body, the boiling cauldron,—the two most fearful punishments for the most fearful of crimes. The stake at which the heretic suffered was an inherited institution descending through the usage of centuries; the poisoner's cauldron was the fresh expression of the judgment of the English nation on a novel enormity; and I have called attention to it because the temper which this act exhibits is the key to all which has seemed most dark and cruel in the rough years which followed; a temper which would keep no terms with evil, or with anything which, rightly or wrongly, was believed to be evil, but dreadfully and inexorably hurried out the penalties of it.

Acts  
against  
the gipsies  
and against  
beggars and  
vagabonds.

Following the statute against poisoning, there stands 'an act for the banishment out of the country of divers outlandish and vagabond people

\* HALL, p. 78†.

† Most shocking when the *wrong persons* were made the victims; and because clerical officials were altogether incapable of detecting the *right persons*, the memory of the practice

has become abhorrent to all just men. I suppose, however, that, if the *right persons* could have been detected, even the stake itself would not have been too tremendous a penalty for the destroying of human souls.

called Egyptians;’\* and attached to it another of analogous import, ‘for the repression of beggars and vagabonds,’ the number of whom, it was alleged, was increasing greatly throughout the country, and much crime and other inconveniences were said to have been occasioned by them. We may regard these two measures, if we please, as a result of the energetic and reforming spirit in the parliament, which was dragging into prominence all forms of existing disorders, and devising remedies for those disorders. But they indicate something more than this: they point to the growth of a disturbed and restless disposition, the interruption of industry, and other symptoms of approaching social confusion; and at the same time they show us the government conscious of the momentous nature of the struggle into which it was launched; and with timely energy bracing up the sinews of the nation for its approaching trial. The act against the gipsies especially, illustrates one of the most remarkable features of the times. The air was impregnated with superstition; in a half consciousness of the impending changes, all men were listening with wide ears to rumours and prophecies and fantastic fore-shadowings of the future; and fanaticism, half deceiving and half itself deceived, was grasping the lever of the popular excitement to work out its own ends.† The power which had ruled

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1530-1  
March.

Why enacted at this time.

General excitement and anxiety in the country.

\* 22 Hen. VIII. cap. 10.

† See a very curious pamphlet on this subject, by SIR FRANCIS PALGRAVE. It is called *The Confessions of Richard Bishop*,

CH. 4. the hearts of mankind for ten centuries was shaking suddenly to its foundation. The Infal-  
 A.D. 1531. March. lible guidance of the Church was failing; its light gone out, or pronounced to be but a mere deceitful ignis fatuus; and men found themselves wandering in darkness, unknowing where to turn or what to think or believe. It was easy to clamour against the spiritual courts. From men smarting under the barefaced oppression of that iniquitous jurisdiction, the immediate outcry rose without ulterior thought; but unexpectedly the frail edifice of the church itself threatened under the attack to crumble into ruins; and many gentle hearts began to tremble and recoil when they saw what was likely to follow on their light beginnings. It was true that the measures as yet taken by the parliament and the crown professed to be directed, not to the overthrow of the church, but to the re-establishment of its strength. But the exulting triumph of the Protestants, the promotion of Latimer to a royal chaplaincy, the quarrel with the papacy, and a dim but sure perception of the direction in which the stream was flowing, foretold to earnest Catholics a widely different issue; and the simplest of them knew better than the court knew, that they were drifting from the sure moorings of the faith into the broad ocean of uncertainty. There seems, indeed, to be in religious men, whatever be their creed, and however limited

Prophetic  
anticipa-  
tion of the  
revolution.

---

*Robert Seymour, and Sir Edward Neville, before the Privy Council, touching Prophecie, Necromancy, and Treasure-trove.*

their intellectual power, a prophetic faculty of insight into the true bearings of outward things,—  
an insight which puts to shame the sagacity of statesmen, and claims for the sons of God, and only for them, the wisdom even of the world. Those only read the world's future truly who have faith in principle, as opposed to faith in human dexterity; who feel that in human things there lies really and truly a spiritual nature, a spiritual connexion, a spiritual tendency, which the wisdom of the serpent cannot alter, and scarcely can affect.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
March.The insight  
of faith.

Excitement, nevertheless, is no guarantee for the understanding; and these instincts, powerful as they are, may be found often in minds wild and chaotic, which, although they vaguely foresee the future, yet have no power of sound judgment, and know not what they foresee, or how wisely to estimate it. Their wisdom, if we may so use the word, combines crudely with any form of superstition or fanaticism. Thus in England, at the time of which we are speaking, Catholics and Protestants had alike their horoscope of the impending changes, each nearer to the truth than the methodical calculations of the statesmen; yet their foresight did not affect their convictions, or alter the temper of their hearts. They foresaw the same catastrophe, yet their faith still coloured the character of it. To the one it was the advent of Antichrist, to the other the inauguration of the millennium. The truest hearted men on all sides were deserted by

The earnest  
looking  
after judgment.



СН. 4.

A. D. 1531.  
March.

their understandings at the moment when their understandings were the most deeply needed: and they saw the realities which were round them transfigured into phantoms through the mists of their hopes and fears. The present was significant only as it seemed in labour with some gigantic issue, and the events of the outer world flew from lip to lip, taking as they passed every shape most wild and fantastical. Until 'the king's matter' was decided, there was no censorship upon speech, and all tongues ran freely on the great subjects of the day. Every parish pulpit rang with the divorce, or with the perils of the Catholic faith; at every village ale-house, the talk was of St. Peter's keys, the sacrament, or of the pope's supremacy, or of the points in which a priest differed from a layman. Ostlers quarrelled over such questions as they groomed their masters' horses; old women mourned across the village shopboards of the evil days which were come or coming; while every kind of strangest superstition, fairy stories and witch stories, stories of saints and stories of devils, were woven in and out and to and fro, like quaint, bewildering arabesques, in the tissue of the general imagination.\*

The missionaries of  
sedition.

These were the forces which were working on the surface of the English mind; while underneath, availing themselves skilfully of the excitement, the agents of the disaffected among the

---

\* Miscellaneous Depositions on the State of the Country: *Rolls House MS.*

clergy, or the friars mendicant, who to a man CH. 4.  
 were devoted to the pope and to Queen Catherine, A.D. 1537.  
 passed up and down the country, denouncing the March.  
 divorce, foretelling ruin, disaster, and the wrath  
 of God; and mingling with their prophecies more  
 than dubious language on the near destruction or  
 deposition of a prince who was opposing God and  
 Heaven. The soil was manured by treason, and  
 the sowers made haste to use their opportunity.  
 Thus especially was there danger in those  
 wandering encampments of 'outlandish people,'  
 whose habits rendered them the ready-made  
 missionaries of sedition; whose swarthy features  
 might hide a Spanish heart, and who in telling Especial  
danger  
from the  
gipsies.  
 fortunes might readily dictate policy.\* Under the  
 disguise of gipsies, the emissaries of the emperor  
 or the pope might pass unsuspected from the  
 Land's End to Berwick-upon-Tweed, penetrating  
 the secrets of families, tying the links of the  
 Catholic organization: and in the later years of  
 the struggle, as the intrigues became more de-  
 termined and a closer connexion was established  
 between the Continental powers and the dis-  
 affected English, it became necessary to increase  
 the penalty against these irregular wanderers

---

\* See the Preamble of the Bill against conjurations, witchcraft, sorceries, and enchantments.—33 Hen. VIII. cap. 8.

Also 'the Bill touching Prophecies upon Arms and Badges.'—33 Hen. VIII. cap. 14.

A similar edict expelled the gipsies from Germany. At

the Diet of Spire, June 10, 1544,

Statutum est ne vagabundum hominum genus quos vulgo Saracenos vocant per Germaniam oberrare sinatur *usu enim compertum est eos exploratores et proditores esse.*—*State Papers*, vol. ix. p. 705.

CH. 4. from banishment to death. As yet, however, the  
 A.D. 1531. milder punishment was held sufficient, and even  
 this was imperfectly enforced.\* The tendencies  
 to treason were still incipient—they were ten-  
 dencies only, which had as yet shown themselves  
 in no decisive acts; the future was uncertain, the  
 action of the government doubtful. The aim was  
 rather to calm down the excitement of the people,  
 and to extinguish with as little violence as possible  
 the means by which it was fed.

John Scott,  
 the Edin-  
 burgh  
 fanatic,  
 preaches at  
 Paul's  
 Cross.

Ominous symptoms of eccentric agitation, however, began to take shape in the confusion. A preacher, calling himself the favourite of the Virgin Mary, had started up at Edinburgh, professing miraculous powers of abstinence from food. This man was sent by James V. to Rome, where, after having been examined by Clement, and having sufficiently proved his mission, he was furnished with a priest's habit and a certificate under leaden seal.† Thus equipped, he went a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, and loaded himself with palm-leaves and with stones from the pillar at which Christ was scourged; and from thence making his way to England, he appeared at Paul's Cross an evident saint and apostle, cursing the king and his divorce, denouncing his apostacy, and threatening the anger of Heaven. He was arrested and thrown into prison, where he remained, as it was believed, fifty days without food, or fed in secret by the Virgin. At the close of the time the govern-

\* ELLIS, first series, vol. ii. p. 101.

† Bulla pro Johanne Scot, qui sine cibo et potu per centum et sex dies vixerat.—RYMER, vol. vi. part 2, p. 176.

ment thought it prudent to send him back to Scotland, without further punishment.\*

CH. 4.

Another more famous prophetess was then in the zenith of her reputation—the celebrated Nun of Kent—whose cell at Canterbury, for some three years, was the Delphic shrine of the Catholic oracle, from which the orders of Heaven were communicated even to the pope himself. This singular woman seems for a time to have held in her hand the balance of the fortunes of England. By the papal party she was universally believed to be inspired. Wolsey believed it, Warham believed it, the bishops believed it, Queen Catherine believed it, Sir Thomas More's philosophy was no protection to him against the same delusion; and finally, she herself believed the world, when she found the world believed in her. Her story is a psychological curiosity; and, interwoven as it was with the underplots of the time, we cannot observe it too accurately.

A.D. 1531.  
The Nun  
of Kent.

In the year 1525, there lived in the parish of Aldington, in Kent, a certain Thomas Cobb, bailiff or steward to the Archbishop of Canter-

Her his-  
tory.

bury, who possessed an estate there. Among the servants of this Thomas Cobb was a country girl called Elizabeth Barton—a decent person, so far as we can learn, but of mere ordinary character, and until that year having shown nothing unusual in her temperament. She was then attacked, however, by some internal disease; and after many months of suffering, she was reduced

Originally  
a servant  
girl in a  
farmhouse  
in Kent.

Subject to  
epileptic  
fits.

---

\* BUCHANAN, *History of Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 156.

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1531. into that abnormal and singular condition, in which she exhibited the phenomena known to modern wonder-seekers as those of somnambulism or clairvoyance. The scientific value of such phenomena is still undetermined, but that they are not purely imaginary is generally agreed. In the histories of all countries and of all times, we are familiar with accounts of young women of bad health and irritable nerves, who have exhibited at recurring periods certain unusual powers; and these exhibitions have had especial attraction for superstitious persons, whether they have believed in God, or in the devil, or in neither. A further feature also uniform in such cases, has been that a small element of truth may furnish a sub-structure for a considerable edifice of falsehood; human credulity being always an insatiable faculty, and its powers being unlimited when once the path of ordinary experience has been transcended. We have seen in our own time to what excesses occurrences of this kind may tempt the belief, even when defended with the armour of science. In the sixteenth century, when demoniacal possession was the explanation usually received even of ordinary insanity, we can well believe that the temptation must have been great to recognise supernatural agency in a manifestation far more uncommon; and that the difficulty of retaining the judgment in a position of equipoise must have been very great not only to the spectators but still more to the subject of the phenomenon herself. To sustain ourselves continuously under the in-

fluence of reason, even when our faculties are preserved in their natural balance, is a task too hard for most of us. We cannot easily make too great allowance for the moral derangement likely to follow, when a weak girl suddenly found herself possessed of powers which she was unable to understand. Bearing this in mind, for it is only just that we should do so, we continue the story.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.

This Elizabeth Barton, then, 'in the trances, of which she had divers and many,\* consequent upon her illness, told wondrously things done and said in other places whereat she was neither herself present, nor yet had heard no report thereof.' To simple-minded people who believed in Romanism and the legends of the saints, the natural explanation of such a marvel was, that she must be possessed either by the Holy Ghost or by the devil. The archbishop's bailiff, not feeling himself able to decide in a case of so much gravity, called in the advice of the parish priest, one Richard Masters; and together they observed carefully all that fell from her. The girl had been well disposed, as the priest probably knew. She had been brought up religiously; and her mind running upon what was most familiar to it, 'she spake words of marvellous holyness in rebuke of sin and vice;† or, as another account says, 'she spake very godly certain things concerning the seven deadly sins and the Ten Command-

In which  
fits she  
shows a  
power of  
clairvoy-  
ance.

\* *Letter of Archbishop Cranmer.*—ELLIS, second series, vol. ii. p. 314.

† *Statutes of the Realm.* 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

CH. 4. ments.\* This seemed satisfactory as to the source of the inspiration. It was clearly not a devil that spoke words against sin, and therefore, as there was no other alternative, it was plain that God had visited her. Her powers were assuredly from heaven; and it was plain, also, by a natural sequence of reasoning, that she held some divine commission, of which her clairvoyance was the miracle in attestation.

A.D. 1531.  
The parish  
priest pro-  
nounces her  
inspired,

And com-  
municates  
on the sub-  
ject with  
the Arch-  
bishop of  
Canter-  
bury.

An occurrence of such moment was not to be kept concealed in the parish of Aldington. The priest mounted his horse, and rode to Lambeth with the news to the Archbishop of Canterbury; and the story having lost nothing of its marvel by the way,† the archbishop, who was fast sinking into dotage, instead of ordering a careful inquiry, and appointing some competent person to conduct it, listened with greedy interest; he assured Father Richard that ‘the speeches which she had spoken came of God; and bidding him keep him diligent account of all her utterances, directed him to inform her in his name that she was not to refuse or hide the goodness and works of God.’ Cobb, the bailiff, being encouraged by such high authority, would not keep any longer in his kitchen a prophetess with the archbishop’s imprimatur upon her; and as soon as the girl was sufficiently recovered from her illness to leave her bed, he caused her to sit at

---

\* Extracts from a Narrative containing an Account of Elizabeth Barton: *Rolls House MS.*

† *Statutes of the Realm.*

his own mess with his mistress and the parson.\* CH. 4.  
 The story spread rapidly through the country; in-quisitive foolish people came about her to try her skill with questions; and her illness, as she subsequently confessed, having then left her, and as only her reputation was remaining, she bethought herself whether it might not be possible to preserve it a little longer. 'Perceiving herself to be much made of, to be magnified and much set by, by reason of trifling words spoken unadvisedly by idleness of her brain, she conceived in her mind that having so good success, and furthermore from so small an occasion and nothing to be esteemed, she might adventure further to enterprise and essay what she could do, being in good advisement and remembrance.'† Her fits no longer recurred naturally, but she was able to reproduce either the reality or the appearance of them; and she continued to improvise her oracles with such ability as she could command, and with tolerable success.

A.D. 1531.

Meanwhile she begins herself to counterfeit.

In this undertaking she was speedily provided with an efficient coadjutor. The Catholic church had for some time been unproductive of miracles, and as heresy was raising its head and attracting converts, so opportune an occurrence was not to be allowed to sleep. The archbishop sent his comptroller to the Prior of Christ Church at Canterbury, with directions that two monks whom he especially named, Doctor Bocking, the cellarer, and Dan William Hadley, should

Edward Bocking, monk of Canterbury, sent by the archbishop to Aldington.

\* *Rolls House MS.*

† *Ibid.*



CH. 4. go to Aldington to observe.\* At first, not knowing what was before them, both prior and monks were unwilling to meddle with the matter.† They submitted, however, 'from the obedience which they owed unto their lord;' and they had soon reason to approve the correctness of the archbishop's judgment. Bocking, selected no doubt from previous knowledge of his qualities, was a man devoted to his order, and not over-scrupulous as to the means by which he furthered the interests of it. With instinctive perception he discovered material in Elizabeth Barton too rich to be allowed to waste itself in a country village. Perhaps he partially himself believed in her, but he was more anxious to ensure the belief of others, and he therefore set himself to assist her inspiration towards more effective utterance. Conversing with her in her intervals of quiet, he discovered that she was wholly ignorant, and unprovided with any stock of mental or imaginative furniture; and that consequently her prophecies were without body, and too indefinite to be theologically available. This defect he remedied by instructing her in the Catholic legends, and by acquainting her with the revelations of St. Brigitt and St. Catherine of Sienna.‡ In these women she found an enlarged reflection of herself; the details of their visions enriched her imagery; and being provided with these fair examples, she was able to shape herself into fuller

Bocking  
takes her  
into train-  
ing.

\* *Suppression of the Monasteries*, p. 19.

† Ibid.

‡ Proceedings connected with Elizabeth Barton: *Rolls House MS.*

resemblance with the traditionary model of the saints.

As she became more proficient, Father Bocking extended his lessons to the Protestant controversy, initiating his pupil into the mysteries of justification, sacramental grace, and the power of the keys. The ready damsel redelivered his instructions to the world in her moments of possession; and the world discovered a fresh miracle in the inspired wisdom of the untaught peasant. Lists of these pregnant sayings were forwarded\* regularly to the archbishop, which still possibly lie mouldering in the Lambeth library, to be discovered by curious antiquaries. It is idle to inquire how far she was yet conscious of her falsehood. Conscious wilful deception lies far down the road in a course of this kind; and supported by the assurance of an archbishop, she was in all likelihood deep in lying before she actually knew it. Fanaticism and deceit are strangely near relations to each other, and the deceiver is often the person first deceived, and the last who is aware of the imposture.

A. D. 1531  
He instructs her  
in the art  
of vision  
and of controversy.

The instructions of the Father had made her acquainted with many stories of miraculous cures. The Catholic saints followed the type of the apostles, and to heal diseases by supernatural means was a more orthodox form of credential than clairvoyance or second sight. Being now cured of her real disorder, yet able to counterfeit the appearance of it, she could find no difficulty

Suggestions  
for the arrangement  
of a  
miracle.

---

\* 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

CH. 4. in arranging in her own case a miracle of the  
 A.D. 1531. established kind, and so striking an incident  
 would answer a further end. In the parish was  
 a chapel of the Virgin, which was a place of pil-  
 grimage; the pilgrims added something to the  
 income of the priest; and if, by a fresh demon-  
 stration of the Virgin's presence at the favoured  
 spot, the number of these pilgrims could be in-  
 creased, they would add more. For both reasons,  
 therefore, the miracle was desired; and the priest  
 and the monk were agreed that any means were  
 justifiable which would encourage the devotion  
 of the people.\* Accordingly, the girl announced,  
 in one of her trances, that 'she would never take  
 health of her body till such time as she had  
 visited the image of our Lady' in that chapel.  
 The Virgin had herself appeared to her, she said,  
 and had fixed a day for her appearance there, and  
 had promised that on her obedience she would  
 present herself in person and take away her dis-  
 order.† The day came; and as (under the cir-  
 cumstances) there was no danger of failure, the  
 holy fathers had collected a vast concourse of  
 people to witness the marvel. The girl was con-  
 ducted to the chapel by a procession of more than  
 two thousand persons, headed by the monk, the  
 clergyman, and many other religious persons, the  
 whole multitude 'singing the Litany and saying  
 divers psalms and orations by the way.'

'And when she was brought thither‡ and

\* 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

† Ibid.

‡ *Cranmer's Letter*, ELLIS, third series, vol. iii. p. 315.

laid before the image of our Lady, her face was wonderfully disfigured, her tongue hanging out, and her eyes being in a manner plucked out and laid upon her cheeks, and so greatly deformed. There was then heard a voice speaking within her belly, as it had been in a tonne, her lips not greatly moving: she all that while continuing by the space of three hours or more in a trance. The which voice, when it told of anything of the joys of heaven, spake so sweetly and so heavenly, that every man was ravished with the hearing thereof; and contrarywise, when it told anything of hell, it spake so horribly and terribly, that it put the hearers in a great fear. It spake also many things for the confirmation of pilgrimages and trentals, hearing of masses and confession, and many other such things. And after she had lyen there a long time, she came to herself again, and was perfectly whole. So this miracle was finished and solemnly sung; and a book was written of all the whole story thereof, and put into print; which ever since that time was commonly sold, and went abroad among the people.'

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
The  
miracle in  
Courthope-  
street,

In favour  
of the  
Catholic  
faith.

The miracle successfully accomplished, the residence at Aldington was no longer adapted for an acknowledged and favoured saint. The Virgin informed her that she was to leave the bailiff and devote herself to her exclusive service. She was to be Sister Elizabeth, and her especial favourite; and Father Bocking was to be her spiritual father. The priory of St. Sepulchre's, Canterbury, was chosen for the place of her profession; and as soon as she was established in her cell, she be-

She takes  
the veil,  
and be-  
comes a  
profes-  
sional pro-  
phetess.

CH. 4. came a recognised priestess or prophetess, alternately communicating revelations, or indulging the curiosity of foolish persons, and for both services consenting to be paid. The church had by this time spread her reputation through England.

A.D. 1531.

The book of her revelations carefully kept.

The book of her oracles, which extended soon to a considerable volume, was shown by Archbishop Warham to the king, who sent it to Sir Thomas More, desiring him to look at it. More's good sense had not yet forsaken him; he pronounced it 'a right poor production, such as any simple woman might speak of her own wit;\*' and Henry himself 'esteemed the matter as light as it afterwards proved lewd.' But the world were less critical censors: the saintly halo was round her head, and her most trivial words caught the reflection of the glory, and seemed divine. 'Divers and many, as well great men of the realm as mean men, and many learned men, but specially many religious men, had great confidence in her, and often resorted to her.†' They 'consulted her much as to the will of God touching the heresies and schisms in the realm;' and when the dispute arose between the bishops and the House of Commons, they asked her what judgment there was in heaven 'on the taking away the liberties of the church;' to which questions her answers, being dictated by her confessor, were all which the most eager churchman could desire. Her position becoming more and more determined,

She pronounces against heresy and against the House of Commons.

\* More to Cromwell: BURNET's *Collectanea*, p. 350.

† 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

the eccentric periods of her earlier visions subsided into regularity. Once a fortnight she was taken up into heaven into the presence of God and the saints, with heavenly lights, heavenly voices, heavenly melodies and joys. The place of ascent was usually the priory chapel, to which it was essential, therefore, that she should have continual access: and she was allowed, in consequence, to pass the dormitory door when she pleased—a privilege of which the Statute uncharitably hints that she availed herself for a less respectable purpose. But whatever was her secret conduct, her outward behaviour was in full keeping with her language and profession. She related many startling stories, not always of the most decent kind, of the attempts which the devil made to lead her astray. The devil and the angels were in fact alternate visitors to her cell, and the former, on one occasion, burnt a mark upon her hand, which she exhibited publicly, and to which the monks were in the habit of appealing, when there were any signs of scepticism in the visitors to the priory. On the occasion of these infernal visits, ‘great stinking smokes’ were seen to issue from her chamber, ‘savouring grievously through all the dorture;’ with which, however, it was suspected subsequently that a paper of brimstone and assafœtida, found among her property after her arrest, had been in some way connected. We smile at these stories, looking back at them with eyes enlightened by scientific scepticism; but they furnished matter for something else than smiles when the accounts of them

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
She goes to  
heaven  
once a fort-  
night.

The devil  
attempts to  
lead her  
astray,  
making  
stinking  
smoke in  
the dor-  
mitory.

## CH. 4.

A. D. 1531.  
She be-  
comes the  
witness of  
the church.

could be exhibited by the clergy as a living proof of the credibility of the *Aurea Legenda*,—when the subject of them could be held up as a witness, accredited by miracles, to the truth of the old faith, a living evidence to shame the incredulity of the Protestant sectaries. She became a figure of great and singular significance; a ‘wise woman,’ to whom persons of the highest rank were not ashamed to have recourse to inquire of her the will of God, and to ask the benefit of her intercessory prayers, for which also they did not fail to pay at a rate commensurate with their credulity.\*

She takes  
the side of  
Queen Ca-  
therine.

This position the Nun of Kent, as she was now called, had achieved for herself, when the divorce question was first agitated. The monks at the Canterbury priory, of course, eagerly espoused the side of the queen, and the Nun’s services were at once in active requisition. Absurd as the stories of her revelations may seem to us, she had already given evidence that she was no vulgar impostor, and in the dangerous career on which she now entered, she conducted herself with the utmost skill and audacity. Far from imitating the hesitation of the pope and the bishops, she issued boldly, ‘in the name and by the authority of God,’ a solemn prohibition against the king; threatening that, if he

She threat-  
ens Henry  
with depo-  
sition and  
death.

\* Confessions of Elizabeth Barton: *Rolls House MS.* Sir Thomas More gave her a double ducat to pray for him and his. BURNET’S *Collectanea*, p. 352. Moryson, in his *Apomaxis*, declares that she had a regular understanding with the confessors

at the Priory. When penitents came to confess, they were detained while a priest conveyed what they had acknowledged to the Nun; and when afterwards they were admitted to her presence, she amazed them with repeating their own confessions.

divorced his wife, he should not 'reign a month, but should die a villain's death.'\* Burdened with this message, she forced herself into the presence of Henry himself;† and when she failed to produce an effect upon Henry's obdurate scepticism, she turned to the hesitating ecclesiastics, and roused their flagging spirits. The archbishop bent under her denunciations, and at her earnest request introduced her to Wolsey, then tottering on the edge of ruin.‡ He, too, in his confusion and perplexity, was frightened, and doubted. She made herself known to the papal ambassadors, and through

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.

She threatens Wolsey and the pope.

\* The said Elizabeth subtilly and craftily conceiving the opinion and mind of the said Edward Bocking, willing to please him, revealed and showed unto the said Edward that God was highly displeased with our said sovereign lord the king for this matter; and in case he desisted not from his proceeding in the said divorce and separation, but pursued the same and married again, that then within one month after such marriage, he should no longer be king of this realm; and in the reputation of Almighty God he should not be a king one day nor one hour, and that he should die a villain's death. Saying further, that there was a root with three branches, and till they were plucked up it should never be merry in England: interpreting the root to be the late lord cardinal, and the first branch to be the king our sovereign lord, the second the Duke of Norfolk, and the third the Duke of Suffolk.—25 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

† Revelations of Elizabeth Barton: *Rolls House MS.* In the epitome of the book of her Revelations it is stated that there was a story in it 'of an angel that appeared, and bade the Nun go unto the king, that infidel prince of England, and say that I command him to amend his life, and that he leave three things which he loveth and pondereth upon, i.e., that he take none of the pope's right nor patrimony from him; the second that he destroy all these new folks of opinion and the works of their new learning; the third, that if he married and took Anne to wife, the vengeance of God should plague him; and as she sayth she shewed this unto the king.'—Paper on the Nun of Kent: *MS. Cotton. Cleopatra*, E 4.

‡ ELLIS, third series, vol. ii. p. 137. Warham had promised to marry Henry to Anne Boleyn. The Nun frightened him into a refusal by a pretended message from an angel.—*MS. ibid.*



CH. 4. them she took upon herself to threaten Clement,\*  
 A. D. 1531. assuming, in virtue of her divine commission, an authority above all principalities and powers. If it were likely that she could have heard the story of the Maid of Orleans, it might be supposed that her imagination tempted her to play again a similar career on an English stage, and that she fancied herself the destined saviour of the Church of Christ, as the Maid had been the saviour of France.

It would indeed be a libel on the fair fame of Joan of Arc, if she were to be compared to a confessed impostor; but Joan of Arc might have been the reality which the Nun attempted to counterfeit; and the history of the true heroine might have suggested easily to the imitator the outline of her part. A revolution had been effected in Europe by a somnambulist peasant girl; another peasant girl, a somnambulist also, might have seen in the achievement which had been already accomplished, an earnest of what might be done by herself. While we call the Nun, too, an im-

---

\* The Nun hath practised with two of the pope's ambassadors within this realm, and hath sent to the pope that if he did not his duty in reformation of kings, God would destroy him at a certain day which he had appointed. By reason whereof it is supposed that the pope hath showed himself so double and so deceivable to the King's Grace in his great cause of marriage as he hath done, contrary to all truth, justice, and equity. As likewise the late cardinal of England,

and the Archbishop of Canterbury, being very well-minded to further and set at an end the marriage which the King's Grace now enjoyeth, according to their spiritual duty, were prevented by the false revelations of the said Nun. And that the said Bishop of Canterbury was so minded may be proved by divers which knew then his towardness.—  
 Narrative of the Proceedings of Elizabeth Barton: *Rolls House MS.*

postor, we are bound to believe that she first imposed upon herself, and that her wildest adventures into falsehood were compatible with a belief that she was really and truly inspired. Nothing short of such a conviction would have enabled her to play a part among kings and queens, and so many of the ablest statesmen of that most able age. Nothing else could have tempted her, on the failure of her prophecies, into the desperate career of treason into which we are soon to see her launched.

CH. 4.  
—  
D. 1531.

Her proceedings were known partially, but partially only, to the king; and the king seems to have been the only person whose understanding was proof against her influence. To him she appeared nothing worse than an excited fanatic, and he allowed her to go her own way, as the best escapement of a frenzy. Until parliament had declared it illegal to discuss the marriage question further, he interfered with no one, and therefore not with her. If her own word was to be taken, he even showed her much personal kindness, having offered to make her an abbess, which is difficult to believe, especially as she said that she had refused his offer. She stated also that at the time of Lord Wiltshire's mission to the emperor, the Countess of Wiltshire endeavoured to persuade her to accept a place at the court, as a companion to Anne; which again is unsupported by other evidence, and sounds improbable.\* But it is plain, that

The king  
treats her  
as a harm-  
less fanatic.

---

\* Note of the Revelations of Elizabeth Barton: *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 4. until she was found to be meditating treason, she  
 A.D. 1531. experienced no treatment from the government  
 of which she had cause to complain; and thus  
 for the present we may leave her pursuing her  
 machinations with the Canterbury friars, and re-  
 turn to the parliament.

March 30.  
 The Lord  
 Chancellor  
 reads the  
 judgment  
 of the uni-  
 versities in  
 the House  
 of Com-  
 mons.

The second session had been longer than the first; it had commenced on the 16th of January, and continued for ten weeks. On the 30th of March, which was to be its last day, Sir Thomas More came down to the House of Commons, and there read aloud to the members the decision of the various universities on the papal power, and the judgment of European learning on the general question of the king's divorce. The country, he said, was much disturbed, and the king desired them each to report what they had heard in their several counties and towns, 'in order that all men might perceive that he had not attempted this matter of his own will or pleasure, as some strangers reported, but only for the discharge of his conscience and surety of the succession of his realm.'\* This appears to have been the first time that the subject was mentioned before parliament, and the occasion was reasonably and sensibly chosen. The clergy having possession of the pulpits, had used their opportunity to spread a false impression where the ignorance of the people would allow them to venture the experiment; the king having resolved to fall back upon the support of his subjects, naturally desired the

---

\* HALL, p. 780.

assistance of the country gentlemen and the nobles to counteract the efforts of disaffection, and provided them with accurate information in the simplest manner which he could have chosen.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.

But the desire expressed by Henry was no more than an unnecessary form, for as a body, the educated laity were as earnestly bent upon the divorce as the king himself could be, and might have been trusted to use all means by which to further it. The parliament was prorogued, but the Lords, shortly after the separation, united with such of the Commons as remained in London, to give a proof of their feeling by a voluntary address to the pope. The meaning of this movement was not to be mistaken. On one side, the Nun of Kent was threatening Clement, speaking, perhaps, the feelings of the clergy and of all the women in England ; on the other side, the parliament thought well to threaten him, speaking for the great body of English *men*, for all persons of substance and property, who desired above all things peace and order and a secured succession.

The House of Lords volunteer a letter of warning to the pope.

The language of this remarkable document\* was as follows :—

\* RYMER, vol. vi. p. 160. We are left to collateral evidence to fix the place of this petition, the official transcriber having contented himself with the substance, and omitted the date. The original, as appears from the pope's reply (LORD HERBERT, p. 145), bore the date of July 13 ; and unless a mistake

was made in transcribing the papal brief, this was July, 1530. I have ventured to assume a mistake, and to place the petition in the following year, because the judgment of the universities, to which it refers, was not completed till the winter of 1530 ; they were not read in parliament till March 30, 1531 ;

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
July 13.

‘To the Most Holy Lord our Lord and Father in Christ, Clement, by Divine Providence the seventh of that name, we desire perpetual happiness in our Lord Jesus Christ.

Since, notwithstanding the interests which are at issue, the country has expected vainly the pope’s assistance,

They are no longer able to keep silence.

To them and to all the nation delay is unjust.

The merits of the case ought to have been sufficient without need of entreaty,

‘Most blessed Father, albeit the cause concerning the marriage of the most invincible prince, our sovereign lord, the King of England and of France, Defender of the Faith, and Lord of Ireland, does for sundry great and weighty reasons require and demand the aid of your Holiness, that it may be brought to that brief end and determination which we with so great and earnest desire have expected, and which we have been contented hitherto to expect, though so far vainly, at your Holiness’s hands; we have been unable, nevertheless, to keep longer silence herein, seeing that this kingdom and the affairs of it are brought into so high peril through the unseasonable delay of sentence. His Majesty, who is our head, and by consequence the life of us all, and we through him as subject members by a just union annexed to the head, have with great earnestness entreated your Holiness for judgment; we have however entreated in vain: we are by the greatness of our grief therefore forced separately and distinctly by these our letters most humbly to demand a speedy determination. There ought,

and it seems unlikely that a petition of so great moment would have been presented on an incomplete case, or before the additional support of the House of Commons had been secured. I am far from satisfied, however,

that I am right in making the change. The petition must have been drawn up (though it need not have been presented) in 1530; since it bears the signature of Wolsey, who died in the November of that year.

indeed, to have been no need of this request on our part. The justice of the cause itself, approved to be just by the sentence of so many learned men, by the suffrage of the most famous universities in England, France, and Italy, should have sufficed alone to have induced your Holiness to confirm the sentence given by others; especially when the interests of a king and kingdom are at stake, which in so many ways have deserved well of the apostolic see. This we say ought to have been motive sufficient with you, without need of petition on our part; and if we had added our entreaties, it should have been but as men yielding to a causeless anxiety, and wasting words for which there was no occasion. Since, however, neither the merit of the cause nor the recollection of the benefits which you have received, nor the assiduous and diligent supplications of our prince have availed anything with your Holiness; since we cannot obtain from you what it is your duty as a father to grant; the load of our grief, increased as it is beyond measure by the remembrance of the past miseries and calamities which have befallen this nation, makes vocal every member of our commonwealth, and compels us by word and letter to utter our complaints.

‘For what a misfortune is this,—that a sentence which our own two universities, which the University of Paris, and many other universities in France, which men of the highest learning and probity everywhere, at home and abroad, are ready to defend with word and pen, that

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1531.

But since they are of no weight with the pope, the danger of the nation forces them to urge his duty upon him.

Except for the support of Henry, the papal see would not have been in existence.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
July 13.

Yet gratitude is so little considered that the pope looks on idly while civil war threatens to destroy England.

The hope of the kingdom lies in the birth of a male heir,

And therefore they require the pope to make it possible.

If the pope refuses, they must seek their remedy elsewhere.

such sentence, we say, cannot be obtained from the apostolic see by a prince to whom that see owes its present existence. Amidst the attacks of so many and so powerful enemies, the King of England ever has stood by that see with sword and pen, with voice and with authority.

Yet he alone is to reap no benefit from his labours. He has saved the papacy from ruin, that others might enjoy the fruits of the life which he has preserved for it. We see not what answer can be made to this; and meanwhile we perceive a flood of miseries impending over the commonwealth, threatening to bring back upon us the ancient controversy on the succession, which had been extinguished only with so much blood and slaughter. We have now a king most eminent for his virtues, and reigning by unchallenged title, who will secure assured tranquillity to the realm if he leave a son born

of his body to succeed him. The sole hope that such a son may be born to him lies in the being found for him some lawful marriage into which he may enter; and to such marriage the only obstacle

lies with your Holiness. It cannot be until you shall confirm the sentence of so many learned men on the character of his former connexion. This if you will not do, if you who ought to be our

father have determined to leave us as orphans, and to treat us as castaways, we shall interpret such conduct to mean only that we are left to care for ourselves, and to seek our remedy elsewhere. We do not desire to be driven to this extremity, and therefore we beseech your Holiness

without further delay to assist his Majesty's just and reasonable desires. We entreat you to confirm the judgment of these learned men; and for the sake of that love and fatherly affection which your office requires you to show towards us, not to close your bowels of compassion against us, your most dutiful, most loving, most obedient children. The cause of his Majesty is the cause of each of ourselves; the head cannot suffer, but the members must bear a part. We have all our common share in the pain and in the injury; and as the remedy is wholly in the power of your Holiness, so does the duty of your fatherly office require you to administer it. If, however, your Holiness will not do this, or if you choose longer to delay to do it, our condition hitherto will have been so much the more wretched, that we have so long laboured fruitlessly and in vain. But it will not be wholly irremediable; extreme remedies are ever harsh of application; but he that is sick will by any means be rid of his distemper; and there is hope in the exchange of miseries, when, if we cannot obtain what is good, we may obtain a lesser evil, and trust that time may enable us to endure it.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
July 13.

'These things we beseech your Holiness, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to consider with yourself. You profess that on earth you are His vicar. Endeavour, then, to show yourself so to be, by pronouncing your sentence to the glory and praise of God, and giving your sanction to that truth which has been examined, approved, and after much deliberation confirmed by the

They entreat his Holiness to consider their words,



CH. 4. most learned men of all nations. We meanwhile will pray the all-good God, whom we know by most sure testimony to be truth itself, that He will deign so to inform and direct the counsels of your Holiness, that we obtaining by your authority what is holy, just, and true, may be spared from seeking it by other more painful methods.'

A.D. 1531.  
And meanwhile they will pray for him.

Thus was the great crisis steadily maturing itself, and the cause by this petition was made to rest upon its proper merits. The justification of the demand for the divorce was the danger of civil war; and into civil war the nation had no intention of permitting themselves to be drifted by papal imbecility. Whatever was the origin of Henry's resolution, it was acted out with calmness, and justified by sober reason; and backed by the good sense of his lay subjects, he proceeded bravely, in spite of excommunication, interdict, and the Nun of Kent, towards the object which his country's interests, as well as his own, required.

The right and the wrong in Henry's conduct.

It would have been well if his private behaviour as a man had been as unobjectionable as his conduct as a sovereign. Hitherto he had remained under the same roof with Queen Catherine, but with that indelicacy which was the singular blemish on his character, he had maintained her rival in the same household with the state of a princess,\* and needlessly wounded feel-

---

\* Mademoiselle de Boleyn est fort beau logis; et qu'il a faict venue; et l'a le Roy logée en bien accoustrer tout auprès du

ings which he was bound to have spared to the utmost which his duty permitted. The circumstances of the case, if they were known to us, though they could never excuse such a proceeding, might perhaps partially palliate it. Catherine was harsh and offensive, and it was by her own determination, and not by Henry's desire, that she was unprovided with an establishment elsewhere. There lay, moreover, as I have said, behind the scenes a whole drama of contention and bitterness, which now is happily concealed from us; but which being concealed, leaves us without the clue to these painful doings. Indelicate, however, the position given to Anne Boleyn could not but be; and, if it was indelicate in Henry to grant such a position, what shall we say of the lady who consented, in the presence of her sovereign and mistress, to wear such ignominious splendour?

But in these most offensive relations there was henceforth to be a change. In June, 1531, two months after the prorogation of parliament, a deputation of the privy council went to the apartments of Catherine at Greenwich, and laying before her the papers which had been read by Sir Thomas More to the two Houses, demanded

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1531.

June.  
A deputation from the privy council wait on Queen Catherine.

sien. Et luy est la cour faicte ordinairement tous les jours plus grosse que de long temps elle ne fut faicte a la Roïne. Je crois bien qu'on veult accoutumer par les petie ce peuple à l'endurer, afin que quand ivendra à donner les grands coups, il ne les trouve si estrange. Toutefois il demeure tous jours endurey, et croy bien qu'il feroit plus qu'il ne faict si plus il avoit de puissance; mais grand ordre se donne par tout.—Bishop of Bayonne to the Grand Master: LE-GRAND, vol. iii. p. 231.

CH. 4. formally, whether, for the sake of the country, and for the quiet of the king's conscience, she would withdraw her appeal to Rome, and submit to an arbitration in the kingdom. It was, probably, but an official request, proposed without expectation that she would yield. After rejecting a similar entreaty from the pope himself, she was not likely, inflexible as she had ever been, to yield when the pope had admitted her appeal, and the emperor, victorious through Europe, had promised her support. She refused, of course, like herself, proudly, resolutely, gallantly, and not without the scorn which she was entitled to feel. The nation had no claims upon her, and 'for the king's conscience,' she answered, 'I pray God send his Grace good quiet therein, and tell him I say I am his lawful wife, and to him lawfully married; and in that point I will abide till the court of Rome, which was privy to the beginning, hath made thereof a determination and a final ending.\*' The learned councillors retired with their answer. A more passive resistance would have been more dignified; but Catherine was a queen, and a queen she chose to be; and in defence of her own high honour, and of her daughter's, by no act of hers would she abate one tittle of her dignity, or cease to assert her claim to it. Her reply, however, appears to have been anticipated, and the request was only preparatory to ulterior measures. For the sake of public decency, and certainly in no unkind spirit towards

A.D. 1531.  
They request her  
to withdraw her  
appeal,  
which she  
refuses.

---

\* HALL, p. 781.

herself, a retirement from the court was now to be forced upon her. At Midsummer she accompanied the king to Windsor; in the middle of July he left her there, and never saw her again. She was removed to the More, a house in Hertfordshire, which had been originally built by George Neville, Archbishop of York, and had belonged to Wolsey, who had maintained it with his usual splendour.\* Once more an attempt was made to persuade her to submit; but with no better result, and a formal establishment was then provided for her at Ampthill, a large place belonging to Henry not far from Dunstable. There at least she was her own mistress, surrounded by her own friends, who were true to her as queen, and she attracted to her side from all parts of England those whom sympathy or policy attached to her cause. The court, though keeping a partial surveillance over her, did not dare to restrict her liberty; and as the measures against the church became more stringent, and a separation from the papacy more nearly imminent, she became the nucleus of a powerful political party. Her injuries had deprived the king and the nation of a right to complain of her conduct. She owed nothing to England. Her allegiance, politically, was to Spain; spiritually she was the subject of the pope; and this dubious position gave her an advantage which she was not slow to perceive. Rapidly every one rallied to her who

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
June.  
She leaves  
the king for  
the last  
time.

She be-  
comes the  
nucleus of  
the Catho-  
lic party,

---

\* It seems to have been his favourite place of retirement. The gardens and fishponds were peculiarly elaborate and beautiful. —Sir John Russell to Cromwell: *MS. State Paper Office.*

CH. 4.

A. D. 1531.

July.

And ultimately of the party of insurrection.

Perilous position of England.

adhered to the old faith, and to whom the measures of the government appeared a sacrilege. Through herself, or through her secretaries and confessors, a correspondence was conducted which brought the courts of the continent into connexion with the various disaffected parties in England, with the Nun of Kent and her friars, with the Poles, the Nevilles, the Courtenays, and all the remaining faction of the White Rose. And so first the great party of sedition began to shape itself, which for sixty years, except in the shortlived interlude of its triumph under Catherine's daughter, held the nation on the edge of civil war. We shall see this faction slowly and steadily organizing itself, starting from scattered and small beginnings, till at length it overspread all England and Ireland and Scotland, exploding from time to time in abortive insurrections, yet ever held in check by the tact and firmness of the government, and by the inherent loyalty of the English to the land of their birth. There was a proverb then current that 'the treasons of England should never cease.'\* It was perhaps fortunate that the papal cause was the cause of a foreign power, and could only be defended by a betrayal of the independence of the country. In Scotland and Ireland the insurrectionists were more successful, being supported in either instance by the national feeling. But the strength of Scotland had been broken at Flodden; and Ire-

---

\* Also it is a proverb of old date—'The pride of France, the treason of England, and the war of Ireland, shall never have end.'—*State Papers*, vol. ii. p. 11.

land, though hating 'the Saxons' with her whole heart, was far off and divided. The true danger was at home; and when the extent and nature of it is fairly known and weighed, we shall understand better what is called the 'tyranny' of Henry VIII. and of Elizabeth; and rather admire the judgment than condemn the resolution which steered the country safe among those dangerous shoals. Elizabeth's position is more familiar to us, and is more reasonably appreciated because the danger was more palpable. Henry has been hardly judged because he trampled down the smouldering fire, and never allowed it to assume the form which would have justified him with the foolish and the unthinking. Once and once only the flame blazed out; but it was checked on the instant, and therefore it has been slighted and forgotten. But with despatches before his eyes, in which Charles V. was offering James of Scotland the hand of the Princess Mary, with the title for himself of Prince of England and Duke of York\*—with Ireland, as we shall speedily see it, in flame from end to end, and Dublin castle

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.  
The Tudor  
difficulty.

The success  
of Henry's  
administra-  
tion, by its  
complete-  
ness, has  
led us to  
condemn  
him.

---

\* There was a secret ambassador with the Scots king from the emperor, who had long communicated with the king alone in his privy chamber. And after the ambassador's departure the king, coming out into his outer chamber, said to his chancellor and the Earl Bothwell, 'My lords, how much are we bounden unto the emperor that in the matter concerning our style, which so long he hath set about for our honour, that shall be by him discussed on Easter day, and that we may lawfully write ourself Prince of England and Duke of York.' To which the chancellor said, 'I pray God the pope confirm the same.' The Scots king answered, 'Let the emperor alone.'—Earl of Northumberland to Henry VIII.: *State Papers*, vol. iv. p. 599.

CH. 4. the one spot left within the island on which the  
 A.D. 1531. banner of St. George still floated—with a corps  
 of friars in hair shirts and chains, who are also  
 soon to be introduced to us, and an inspired  
 prophetess at their head preaching rebellion in  
 the name of God—with his daughter, and his  
 daughter's mother in league against him, some  
 forty thousand clergy to be coerced into honest  
 dealing, and the succession to the crown floating  
 in uncertainty—finally, with excommunication  
 hanging over himself, and at length falling, and  
 his deposition pronounced, Henry, we may be  
 sure, had no easy time of it, and no common  
 work to accomplish; and all these things ought  
 to be present before our minds, as they were  
 present before his mind, if we would see him as  
 he was, and judge him as we would be judged  
 ourselves.

What he  
 was con-  
 tending  
 against.

The levy of  
 the fine for  
 the pre-  
 munire.

Leaving disaffection to mature itself, we re-  
 turn to the struggle between the House of Com-  
 mons and the bishops, which recommenced in the  
 following winter; first pausing to notice a clerical  
 interlude of some illustrative importance which  
 took place in the close of the summer. The  
 clergy, as we saw, were relieved of their pre-  
 munire on engaging to pay 118,000 pounds within  
 five years. They were punished for their general  
 offences; the formal offence for which they were  
 condemned being one which could not fairly be  
 considered an offence at all. When they came to  
 discuss therefore the manner in which the money  
 was to be levied, they naturally quarrelled among  
 themselves as to where the burden of the fine

should fairly rest, and a little scene has been pre-  
served to us by Hall, through which, with mo-  
mentary distinctness, we can look in upon those  
poor men in their perplexity. The bishops had  
settled among themselves that each diocese should  
make its own arrangements; and some of these  
great persons intended to spare their own  
shoulders to the utmost decent extremity. With  
this object, Stokesley, Bishop of London, who  
was just then very busy burning heretics, and  
therefore in bad odour with the people, resolved  
to call a meeting of five or six of his clergy, on  
whom he could depend; and passing quietly with  
their assistance such resolutions as seemed con-  
venient, to avoid in this way the more doubtful  
expedient of a large assembly.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.

Private ar-  
rangements  
of the  
bishops.

The necessary intimations were given, and  
the meeting was to be held on the 1st of Sep-  
tember, in the Chapter-house of St. Paul's. The  
bishop arrived at the time appointed, but un-  
happily for his hopes, not only the chosen six,  
but with them six hundred of the clergy of  
Middlesex, accompanied by a mob of the London  
citizens, all gathered in a crowd at the Chapter-  
house door, and clamouring to be admitted.

Sept. 1.  
Meeting at  
the Chap-  
ter-house of  
St. Paul's.

The bishop, trusting in the strength of the  
chains and bolts, and still hoping to manage the  
affair officially, sent out a list of persons who  
might be allowed to take part in the proceedings,  
and these with difficulty made their way to the  
entrance. A rush was made by the others, as  
they were going in, and there was a scuffle, which  
ended for the moment in the victory of the

An indeco-  
rous pro-  
ceeding.



CH. 4. officials: but the triumph was of brief duration;  
 A.D. 1531. the excluded clergy were now encouraged by the people; they returned vigorously to the attack, broke down the doors, 'struck the bishop's officers over the face,' and the whole crowd, priests and laity, rushed together, storming and shouting, into the Chapter-house. The scene may be easily imagined; dust flying, gowns torn, heads broken, well-fed faces in the hot September weather steaming with anger and exertion, and every voice in loudest outcry. At length the clamour was partially subdued, and the bishop, beautifully equal to the emergency, arose bland and persuasive.

The bishop  
 with the  
 silver  
 tongue.

'My brethren,' he said, 'I marvel not a little why ye be so heady. Ye know not what shall be said to you, therefore I pray you keep silence, and hear me patiently. My friends, ye all know that we be men, frail of condition and no angels; and by frailty and lack of wisdom we have misdeemed ourselves towards the king our sovereign lord and his laws; so that all we of the clergy were in premunire, by reason whereof all our promotions, lands, goods, and chattels were to him forfeit, and our bodies ready to be imprisoned. Yet his Grace, moved with pity and compassion, demanded of us what we could say why he should not extend his laws upon us.

'Then the fathers of the clergy humbly besought his Grace for mercy, to whom he answered he was ever inclined to mercy. Then for all our great offences we had but little penance; for when he might, by the rigour of his laws,

have taken all our livelihoods, he was contented with one hundred thousand pounds, to be paid in five years. And though this sum may be more than we may easily bear, yet, by the rigour of his law, we should have borne the whole burden; whereupon, my brethren, I charitably exhort you to bear your parts of your livelihood and salary towards payment of this sum granted.\*

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531.

The ingenuity of this address deserved all praise; but the beauty of the form was insufficient to disguise the inconclusiveness of the reasoning. It confessed an offence which the hearers knew to be none; the true provocation which had led to the penalty—the unjust extortion of the high church officials—was ignored.

The sanitary fines.

The crowd laughed and hooted. The clergy fiercely tightened their purse-strings, and the bishop was heard out with hardly restrained indignation. 'My lord,' it was shortly answered by one of them, 'twenty nobles a year is but a bare living for a priest. Victual and all else is now so dear that poverty enforceth us to say nay. Besides that, my lord, we never meddled with the cardinal's faculties. Let the bishops and abbots which have offended pay.' Loud clamour followed and shouts of applause. The bishop's officers gave the priests high words. The priests threw back the taunts as they came; and the London citizens, delighting in the scandalous quarrel, hounded on the opposition. From words they passed to blows; the bedell and vergers tried

The clergy will give no money,

But only high words and hard blows.

CH. 4. to keep order, but 'were buffeted and stricken,'\*  
 A.D. 1531-2 and the meeting broke up in wild uproar and  
 confusion. For this matter five of the lay crowd  
 and fifteen London curates were sent to the  
 Tower by Sir Thomas More; but the undignified  
 manœuvre had failed, and the fruit of it was but  
 fresh disgrace. United, the clergy might have  
 defied the king and the parliament; but in the  
 The race of selfishness. race of selfishness the bishops and high dignita-  
 ries had cared only for their own advantage.  
 They had left the poorer members of their order  
 with no interest in common with that of their  
 superiors, beyond the shield which the courts  
 consented to extend over moral delinquency; and  
 in the hour of danger they found themselves left  
 naked and alone to bear the storm as they were  
 able.

Jan. 15. Meeting of parliament and of convocation. This incident, and it was perhaps but one of  
 many, is not likely to have softened the disposi-  
 tion of the Commons, or induced them to enter-  
 tain more respectfully the bishops' own estimate  
 of their privileges. The convocation and the par-  
 liament met simultaneously, on the 15th of  
 January, and the conflict, which had been for two  
 years in abeyance, recommenced. The initial  
 measure was taken by convocation, and this body  
 showed a spirit still unsubdued, and a resolution  
 to fight in their own feebly tyrannical manner to  
 the last. A gentleman in Gloucestershire had  
 lately died, by name Tracy. In his last testa-

---

\* 'The bishop was brought in desperation of his life.'—*Rolls House MS.*, second series, 532. This paper confirms Hall's account in every point.

ment he had bequeathed his soul to God through the mercies of Christ, declining the mediatorial offices of the saints, and leaving no money to be expended in masses.\* Such notorious heresy could not be passed over with impunity, and the first step of the assembled clergy† was to issue a commission to raise the body and burn it. Their audacity displayed at once the power which they possessed, and the temper in which they were disposed to use it. The Archbishop of Canterbury seems to have been responsible for this monstrous order, which unfortunately was carried into execution before Henry had time to interfere.‡ It was the last act of the kind, however, in which he was permitted to indulge, and the legislature made haste to take away such authority from hands so incompetent to use it. From their debates upon burning the dead Tracy, convocation were proceeding to discuss the possibility of burning the living Latimer,§ when they were recalled to their senses by a summons to prepare some more reasonable answer than that which the bishops had made for them on their privilege of making laws. Twenty more years of work were to be lived by Latimer before they were to burn him, and their own delinquencies were for the present of a more pressing nature. The House of Commons at the same time pro-

CH. 4.

A.D. 1531-2  
Jan. 15.

The clergy  
open the  
campaign.

They burn  
the body of  
the dead  
Tracy, and  
attempt to  
burn that  
of the living  
Latimer.

\* HALL, p. 796.

† BURNET, vol. iii. p. 115.

‡ Warham was however fined 300*l.* for it.—HALL, 796. A letter of Richard Tracy, son of the dead man, is in the *MS.*

*State Paper Office*, first series, vol. iv. He says the King's Majesty had committed the investigation of the matter to Cromwell.

§ LATIMER'S *Sermons*, p. 46.

CH. 4. ceeded to frame necessary bills on the other points of their complaint.

A. D. 1532.  
The Commons re-consider the immunities of the clergy from secular jurisdiction.

The first act upon the roll recalls the Constitutions of Clarendon and the famous quarrel between Becket and the Crown. When Catholicism was a living belief, when ordained priests were held really and truly to possess those awful powers which the mystery of transubstantiation assigns to them, they were acknowledged by common consent to be an order apart from the rest of mankind, and being spiritual men, to be amenable only to spiritual jurisdiction. It was not intended that, if they committed crimes, they should escape the retributive consequences of those crimes: offenders against the law might (originally at least) be degraded, if the bishops thought good, and stripped of their commission be delivered thus to the secular arm. But the more appropriate punishment for such persons was of a more awful kind, proportioned to the magnitude of the fault; and was conveyed or held to be conveyed in the infliction of the spiritual death of excommunication. Excommunication was, in real earnest, the death of the soul, at a time when communion with the church was the only means by which the soul could be made partaker of the divine life; and it was a noble thing to believe that there was something worse for a man than legal penalties on his person or on his mortal body; it was beautiful to recognise in an active living form, that the heaviest ill which could befall a man was to be cut off from God. But it is only for periods that humanity can endure the atmosphere of these

The death of the soul and the death of the body.

high altitudes of morality. The early Christians attempted a community of goods, but they were unequal to it for more than a generation. The discipline of Catholicism was assisted by superstition,—it remained vigorous for many hundreds of years, but it languished at last; and although there was so great virtue in a living idea, that its forms preserved the reverence of mankind unabated, even when in their effect and working they had become as evil as they once were noble; yet reverence and endurance were at length exhausted, and these forms were to submit to alteration in conformity with the altered nature of the persons whom they affected.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1532.

The idea  
dies and  
the form  
perishes.

I have already alluded to the abuse of ‘benefit of clergy;’\* we have arrived at the first of those many steps by which at length it was finally put away,—a step which did not, however, as yet approach the heart of the evil, but touched only its extreme outworks. The clergy had monopolized the learning of the middle ages, and few persons external to their body being able to read or write, their privileges became co-extensive, as I above stated, with these acquirements. The exemption from secular jurisdiction, which they obtained in virtue of their sacred character, had been used as a protection in villany for every scoundrel who could write his name. Under this plea, felons of the worst kind might claim, till this time, to be taken out of the hands of the law judges, and to be tried at the bishops’ tri-

Benefit of  
clergy a  
licence to  
villany.

---

\* Cap. iii.

CH. 4. bunals; and at these tribunals, such a monstrous  
 A.D. 1532. solecism had Catholicism become, the payment  
 of money was ever welcomed as the ready expia-  
 tion of crime. To prevent the escape of the  
 Bishop of Rochester's cook, who was a 'clerk,'  
 parliament had specially interfered, and sentenced  
 him without trial, by attainder. They now  
 passed a general act, remarkable alike in what it  
 provided as in what, for the present, it omitted  
 to provide.\* The preamble related the nature of  
 the evil which was to be remedied, and the histo-  
 Broken promises of  
 the ordi-  
 naries. rical position of it. It dwelt upon the assurances  
 which had been given again and again by the  
 ordinaries that their privileges should not be  
 abused; but these promises had been broken as  
 often as they had been made; so that 'con-  
 tinually manifest thieves and murderers, indicted  
 and found guilty of their misdeeds by good and  
 substantial inquests, and afterwards, by the usages  
 of the common lawes of the land, delivered to  
 the ordinaries as clerks convict, were speedily and  
 hastily delivered and set at large by the ministers  
 Corruption of the  
 Consistory  
 Courts. of the said ordinaries for corruption and lucre;  
 or else because the ordinaries enclaining such  
 offenders by the liberties of the church would in  
 no wise take the charges in safe keeping of them,  
 but did suffer them to make their purgation by  
 such as nothing knew of their misdeeds, and by  
 such fraud did annul and make void the good and  
 provable trial which was used against such offen-  
 ders by the king's law; to the pernicious example,

---

\* 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 1.

increase, and courage of such offenders, if the King's Highness by his authority royal put not speedy remedy thereto.' CH. 4.  
A.D. 1532.

To provide such necessary remedy, it was enacted that thenceforward no person under the degree of subdeacon, if guilty of felony, should be allowed to plead 'his clergy' any more, but should be proceeded against by the ordinary law. So far it was possible to go—an enormous step if we think of what the evil had been ; and in such matters to make a beginning was the true difficulty—it was the logical premise from which the conclusion could not choose but follow. Yet such was the mystical sacredness which clung about the ordained clergy, that their patent profligacy had not yet destroyed it—a priest might still commit a murder, and the profane hand of the law might not reach to him. No person under the degree of subdeacon allowed to commit murder with impunity.

The measure, however, if imperfect, was excellent in its degree ; and when this had been accomplished, the House proceeded next to deal with the Arches Court—the one enormous grievance of the time. The petition of the Commons has already exhibited the condition of this institution ; but the act by which the power of it was limited added more than one particular to what had been previously stated, and the first twenty lines of the statute which was now passed\* may be recommended to the consideration of the modern censors of the Reformation. The framer of the resolution was no bad friend to the bishops, if Reform of the Archbishop's Court.

---

\* 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 9.



CH. 4. they had possessed the faculty of knowing who  
 A.D. 1532. their true friends were, for the statement of complaint was limited, mild, and moderate. Again, as with the 'benefit of clergy,' the real ground for surprise is that any fraction of a system so indefensible should have been permitted to continue. The courts were nothing else but the vicious sources of unjust revenue; and with the opportunity so fairly offered, it is strange indeed that they were not swept utterly away. But sweeping measures have never found favour in England. There has ever been in English legislation, even when most reforming, that temperate spirit of equity which has refused to visit the sins of centuries upon a single generation. The statute limited its accusations to the points which it was designed to correct, and touched these with a hand firmly gentle.

Temperate  
spirit of  
English  
legislation.

Parties  
summoned  
out of the  
diocese in  
which they  
live.

'Whereas great numbers of the king's subjects,' says the preamble, 'as well men, wives, servants, or others dwelling in divers dioceses of the realm of England and Wales, heretofore have been at many times called by citations and other processes compulsory to appear in the Arches, Audience, and other high Courts of the archbishops of this realm, far from and out of the dioceses where such persons are inhabitant and dwelling; and many times to answer to surmised and feigned causes and matters, which have been sued more for vexation and malice than from any just cause of suit; and when certificate hath been made by the sumners, apparitors, or any such light litterate persons, that the party against

whom such citations have been awarded hath been cited or summoned; and thereupon the same party so certified to be cited or summoned hath not appeared according to the certificate, the same party therefore hath been excommunicated, or, at the least, suspended from all divine service; and thereupon, before that he or she could be absolved, hath been compelled, not only to pay the fees of the court whereunto he or she was so called, amounting to the sum of two shillings, or twenty pence at the least; but also to pay to the sumner, for every mile distant from the place where he or she then dwelled unto the same court whereunto he or she was summoned to appear, twopence; to the great charge and impoverishment of the king's subjects, and to the great occasion of misbehaviour of wives, women, and servants, and to the great impairment and diminution of their good names and honesties—be it enacted——' We ask what?—looking with impatience for some large measure to follow these solemn accusations; and we find parliament contenting itself with forbidding the bishops, under heavy penalties, to cite any man out of his own diocese, except for specified causes (heresy being one of them), and with limiting the fees which were to be taken by the officers of the courts.\* It could hardly be said that in this

CH. 4.

A.D. 1532.

General extortion and injustice.

---

\* Be it further enacted that no archbishop or bishop, official, commissary, or any other minister, having spiritual jurisdiction, shall ask, demand, or receive of any of the king's subjects any sum or sums of money for the seal of any citizen, but only threepence sterling.—23 Hen. VIII. cap. 9.

CH. 4. parliament there was any bitter spirit against the church. This act showed only mild forbearance and complacent endurance of all tolerable evil.

A.D. 1532.  
Extreme  
forbearance  
of parliament.  
Act for the  
assurances  
of lands for  
the use of  
parish  
churches  
and cha-  
pels.

Another serious matter was dealt with in the same moderate temper. The Mortmain Act had prohibited the church corporations from further absorbing the lands; but the Mortmain Act was evaded in detail, the clergy using their influence to induce persons on their deathbeds to leave estates to provide a priest for ever 'to sing for their souls.' The arrangement was convenient possibly for both parties, or if not for both, certainly for one; but to tie up lands for ever for a special service was not to the advantage of the country; and it was held unjust to allow a man a perpetual power over the disposition of property to atone for the iniquities of his life. But the privilege was not abolished altogether; it was submitted only to reasonable limitation. Men might still burden their lands to find a priest for twenty years. After twenty years the lands were to relapse for the service of the living, and sinners were expected in equity to bear the consequence in their own persons of such offences as remained after that time unexpiated.\*

The work  
which was  
done.

Thus, in two sessions, the most flagrant of the abuses first complained of were in a fair way of being remedied. The exorbitant charges for

---

\* 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 10.—  
By a separate clause all cove-  
nants to defraud the purposes of  
this act were declared void, and  
the act itself was to be inter-

preted 'as beneficially as might  
be, to the destruction and utter  
avoiding of such uses, intents,  
and purposes.'

mortuaries, probate duties, legacy duties, the illegal exactions for the sacraments, the worst injustices of the ecclesiastical courts, the non-residence, pluralities, neglect of cures, the secular occupations and extravagant privileges of the clergy, were either terminated or brought within bounds. There remained yet to be disposed of the legislative power of the convocation and the tyrannical prosecutions for heresy. The last of these was not yet ripe for settlement; the former was under reconsideration by the convocation itself, which at length was arriving at a truer conception of its position; and this question was not therefore to be dealt with by the legislature.

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1532.  
  
The work which remained to be done.

One more important measure, however, was passed by parliament before it separated, and it is noticeable as the first step which was taken in the momentous direction of a breach with the See of Rome. A practice had existed for some hundreds of years in all the churches of Europe, that bishops and archbishops, on presentation to their sees, should transmit to the pope, on receiving their bulls of investment, one year's income from their new preferments. It was called the payment of annates, or firstfruits, and had originated in the time of the crusades, as a means of providing a fund for the holy wars. Once established, it had settled into custom,\* and was

Annates and firstfruits.  
The origin of them.

---

\* Annates or firstfruits were first suffered to be taken within the realm for the only defence of Christian people against infidels; and now they be claimed and demanded as mere duty only for lucre, against all right and conscience.—23 Hen. VIII. cap. 20.

CH. 4. one of the chief resources of the papal revenue.

A. D. 1532.

From England alone, as much as 160,000 pounds had been paid out of the country in fifty years;\* and the impost was alike oppressive to individuals and injurious to the state. Men were appointed to bishopricks frequently at an advanced age, and dying, as they often did, within two or three years of their nomination, their elevation had sometimes involved their families and friends in debt and embarrassment;† while the annual export of so much bullion was a serious evil at a time when the precious metals formed the only

Evils of the practice, and efforts for an amicable composition.

currency, and were so difficult to obtain. Before a quarrel with the court of Rome had been thought of as a possible contingency, the king had laboured with the pope to terminate the system by some equitable composition; and subsequently cessation of payment had been mentioned more than once in connexion with the threats of a separation. The pope had made light of these threats, believing them to be no more than words; there was an opportunity, therefore, of proving that the English government was really in earnest, in a manner which would touch him in a point where he was naturally sensitive, and would show him at the same time that he could not wholly count on the attachment even of the clergy themselves. For, in fact, the church itself was fast

\* 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 20.

† It hath happened many times by occasion of death unto archbishops or bishops newly promoted within two or three years after their consecration,

that their friends by whom they have been holpen to make payment have been utterly undone and impoverished.—23 Henry VIII. cap. 20.

disintegrating, and the allegiance even of the bishops and the secular clergy to Rome had begun to waver: they had a stronger faith in their own privileges than in the union of Christendom; and if they could purchase the continuance of the former at the price of a quarrel with the pope, some among them were not disinclined to venture the alternative. The Bishop of Rochester held aloof from such tendencies, and Warham, though he signed the address of the House of Lords to the pope, regretted the weakness to which he had yielded: but in the other prelates there was little seriousness of conviction; and the constitution of the bench had been affected also by the preferment of Gardiner and Edward Lee to two of the sees made vacant by the death of Wolsey. Both these men had been active agents in the prosecution of the divorce; and Gardiner, followed at a distance by the other, had shaped out, as the pope grew more intractable, the famous notion that the English church could and should subsist as a separate communion, independent of foreign control, self governed, self organized, and at the same time adhering without variation to Catholic doctrine. This principle (if we may so abuse the word) shot rapidly into popularity: a party formed about it strong in parliament, strong in convocation, strong out of doors among the country gentlemen and the higher clergy—a respectable, wealthy, powerful body, trading upon a solecism, but not the less, therefore, devoted to its maintenance, and in their artificial horror of being

CH. 4.

A.D. 1532.

The bishops waver in their allegiance to Rome.

Invention of the Anglican solecism.

CH. 4. identified with heresy, the most relentless persecutors of the Protestants. This party, unreal as they were, and influential perhaps in virtue of their unreality, became for the moment the arbiters of the Church of England; and the bishops belonging to it, and each rising ecclesiastic who hoped to be a bishop, welcomed the resistance of the annates as an opportunity for a demonstration of their strength. On this question, with a fair show of justice, they could at once relieve themselves of a burden which pressed upon their purses, and as they supposed, gratify the king. The conservatives were still numerically the strongest, and for a time remained in their allegiance to the Papacy,\* but their convictions were too feeble to resist the influence brought to bear upon them, and when Parliament re-assembled after the Easter recess, the two Houses of Convocation presented an address to the crown for the abolition of the impost, and with it of all other

A.D. 1532.  
The convocation  
petitions  
against the  
annates.

\* *M. de la Pomeroy to Cardinal Tournon.*

‘London, March 23, 1531-2.

‘My Lord,—I sent two letters to your lordship on the 20th of this month. Since that day Parliament has been prorogued, and will not meet again till after Easter.

‘It has been determined that the Pope’s Holiness shall receive no more annates, and the collectors’ office is to be abolished. Everything is turning against the Holy See, but the King has shown no little skill; the Lords and Commons have left the final decision of the question at his

personal pleasure, and the Pope is to understand that, if he will do nothing for the King, the King has the means of making him suffer. The clergy in convocation have consented to nothing, nor will they, till they know the pleasure of their master the Holy Father; but the other estates being agreed, the refusal of the clergy is treated as of no consequence.

‘Many other rights and privileges of the Church are abolished also, too numerous to mention.’—MS. Bibliot. Impér. Paris.

exactions, direct and indirect,—the indulgences, dispensations, delegacies, and the thousand similar forms and processes by which the privileges of the Church of England were abridged for the benefit of the Church of Rome, and weighty injury of purse inflicted both on the clergy and the laity.\*

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1532.

That they contemplated a conclusive revolt from Rome as a consequence of the refusal to pay annates, appears positively in the close of their address: 'May it please your Grace,' they concluded, after detailing their occasions for complaint,—'may it please your Grace to cause the said unjust exactions to cease, and to be foredone for ever by act of your high Court of Parliament; and in case the pope will make process against this realm for the attaining those annates, or else will retain bishops' bulls till the annates be paid; forasmuch as the exaction of the said annates is against the law of God and the pope's own laws, forbidding the buying or selling of spiritual gifts or promotions; and forasmuch as all good Christian men be more bound to obey God than any man; and forasmuch as St. Paul willeth us to withdraw from all such as walk inordinately; may it please your Highness to ordain in this present parliament that the obedience of your Highness and of the people be withdrawn from the See of Rome.'†

It was perhaps cruel to compel the clergy to

---

\* STYRE, *Eccles. Mem.*, vol. i. part 2, p. 158.

† Ibid.



CH. 4. be the first to mention separation—or the lan-  
 A.D. 1532. guage may have been furnished by the Erastian  
 party in the Church, who hoped to gratify the  
 King by it, and save the annates for themselves;  
 but there was no intention, if the battle was really  
 to be fought, of decorating the clergy with the  
 spoils. The bill was passed, but passed conditionally,  
 leaving power to the Crown if the pope would consent to a compromise of settling the question by a composition. There was a Papal party in the House of Commons whose opposition had perhaps to be considered,\* and the annates were left suspended before Clement at once as a menace and a bribe.

Annates  
 Act passed  
 conditionally.

‘Forasmuch,’ concluded the statute, ‘as the King’s Highness and this his high Court of Parliament neither have nor do intend in this or any other like cause any manner of extremity or violence, before gentle courtesy and friendly ways and means be first approved and attempted, and without a very great urgent cause and occasion given to the contrary; but principally coveting to disburden this Realm of the said great exactions and intolerable charges of annates and firstfruits: [the said Court of Parliament] have therefore thought convenient to commit the

\* Sir George Throgmorton, Sir William Essex, Sir John Giffard, Sir Marmaduke Constable, with many others, spoke and voted in opposition to the government. They had a sort of club at the Queen’s Head by Temple Bar, where they held discussions in secret, ‘and when

we did commence,’ said Throgmorton, ‘we did bid the servants of the house go out, and likewise our own servants, because we thought it not convenient that they should hear us speak of such matters.’—Throgmorton to the King: *MS. State Paper Office*.

final order and determination of the premises unto the King's Highness, so that if it may seem to his high wisdom and most prudent discretion meet to move the Pope's Holiness and the Court of Rome, amicably, charitably, and reasonably, to compound either to extinct the said annates, or by some friendly, loving, and tolerable composition to moderate the same in such way as may be by this his Realm easily borne and sustained, then those ways of composition once taken shall stand in the strength, force, and effect of a law.\*

CH. 4.

A.D. 1532.  
The pope urged to consent to an arrangement.

The business of the session was closing. It remained to receive the reply of convocation on the limitation of its powers. The convocation, presuming, perhaps, upon its concessions on the annates question, and untamed by the premunire, had framed their answer in the same spirit which had been previously exhibited by the bishops. They had re-asserted their claims as resting on divine authority, and had declined to acknowledge the right of any secular power to restrain or meddle with them.† The second answer, as may be supposed, fared no better than the first. It was returned with a peremptory demand for submission; and taught by experience the uselessness of further opposition, the clergy with a bad grace complied. The form was again drawn by the

Legislative power of convocation,

At length surrendered conclusively.

\* 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 20.

† Printed in STRYPE, *Eccles. Mem.*, vol. i. p. 201. Strype, knowing nothing of the first answer, and perceiving in the second an allusion to one pre-

ceding, has supposed that this answer followed the third and last, and was in fact a retraction of it. All obscurity is removed when the three replies are arranged in their legitimate order.

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1532.

bishops, and it is amusing to trace the workings of their humbled spirit in their reluctant descent from their high estate. They still laboured to protect their dignity in the terms of their concession:—

The  
bishops  
make their  
submis-  
sion,

In conse-  
quence of  
their con-  
viction of  
the incom-  
parable  
wisdom of  
his Ma-  
jesty.

‘As concerning such constitutions and ordinances provincial,’ they wrote, ‘as shall be made hereafter by your most humble subjects, we having our special trust and confidence in your most excellent wisdom, your princely goodness, and fervent zeal for the promotion of God’s honour and Christian religion, and specially in your incomparable learning far exceeding in our judgment the learning of all other kings and princes that we have read of; and not doubting but that the same should still continue and daily increase in your Majesty; do offer and promise here unto the same, that from henceforth we shall forbear to enact, promulge, or put in execution any such constitutions and ordinances so by us to be made in time coming, unless your Highness by your Royal assent shall license us to make, promulge, and execute such constitutions, and the same so made be approved by your Highness’s authority.

‘And whereas your Highness’s most honourable Commons do pretend that divers of the constitutions provincial, which have been heretofore enacted, be not only much prejudicial to your Highness’s prerogative royal, but be also overmuch onerous to your said Commons, we, your most humble servants for the consideration before said, be contented to refer all the said constitu-

tions to the judgment of your Grace only. And whatsoever of the same shall finally be found prejudicial and overmuch onerous as is pretended, we offer and promise your Highness to moderate or utterly to abrogate and annul the same, according to the judgment of your Grace. Saving to us always such liberties and immunities of this Church of England as hath been granted unto the same by the goodness and benignity of your Highness and of others your most noble progenitors; with such constitutions provincial as do stand with the laws of Almighty God and of your Realm heretofore made, which we most humbly beseech your Grace to ratify and approve by your most Royal assent for the better execution of the same in times to come.\*

CH. 4.  
A.D. 1532.

The acknowledgment appeared to be complete, and might perhaps have been accepted without minute examination, except for the imprudent acuteness of the Lower House of Convocation. As it passed through their hands, they discovered—what had no doubt been intended as a loophole for future evasion—that the grounds which were alleged to excuse the submission were the virtues of the reigning king: and therefore, as they sagaciously argued, the submission must only remain in force for his life. They introduced a limitation to that effect. Some further paltry dabbling was also attempted with the phraseology: and at length, impatient with such dishonest trifling, and weary of a discussion

Yet not without a last attempt at subterfuge.

---

\* STYRPE, *Eccles. Mem.*, vol. i. p. 199, &c.

CH. 4. in which they had resolved to allow but one conclusion, the king and the legislature thought it well to interfere with a high hand, and cut short such unprofitable folly. The language of the bishops was converted into an act of parliament; a mixed commission was appointed to revise the canon law, and the clergy with a few brief strokes were reduced for ever into their fit position of subjects.\* Thus with a moderate hand this great revolution was effected, and, to outward appearance, with offence to none except the sufferers, whose misuse of power when they possessed it deprived them of all sympathy in their fall.

Conclusion  
of the  
legislative  
revolution.

Various  
effects of  
the change.

But no change of so vast a kind can be other than a stone of stumbling to those many persons for whom the beaten ways of life alone are tolerable, and who, when these ways are broken, are bewildered and lost. Religion, when men are under its influence at all, so absorbs their senses, and so pervades all their associations, that no faults in the ministers of it can divest their persons of reverence; and just and necessary as all these alterations were, many a pious and noble heart was wounded, many a man was asking himself in his perplexity where things would end, and still more sadly, where, if these quarrels deepened, would lie his own duty. Now the Nun of Kent grew louder in her Cassandra wailings. Now the mendicant friars mounted the pulpits exclaiming sacrilege; bold men, who feared nothing that men could do to them, and

---

\* 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 20.

who dared in the king's own presence, and in his own chapel, to denounce him by name.\* CH. 4.  
A.D. 1532.  
The sacred associations of twelve centuries were tumbling into ruin; and hot and angry as men had been before the work began, the hearts of numbers sank in them when they 'saw what was done;' and they fell away slowly to doubt, disaffection, distrust, and at last treason.

The first outward symptom of importance pointing in this direction, was the resignation of the seals by Sir Thomas More.† Sir Thomas More resigns the seals. More had not been an illiberal man; when he wrote the *Utopia*, he seemed even to be in advance of his time. None could see the rogue's face under the cowl clearer than he, or the proud bad heart under the scarlet hat; and few men had ventured to speak their thoughts more boldly. But there was in More a want of Character of More. confidence in human nature, a scorn of the

\* Stow, p. 562.

† 'In connexion with the Annates Act, the question of appeals to Rome had been discussed in the present session. Sir George Throgmorton had spoken on the papal side, and in his subsequent confession he mentioned a remarkable interview which he had had with More.

'After I had reasoned to the Bill of Appeals,' he said, 'Sir Thomas More, then being chancellor, sent for me to come and speak with him in the parliament chamber. And when I came to him he was in a little chamber within the parliament chamber, where, as I remember,

stood an altar, or a thing like unto an altar, whereupon he did lean and, as I do think, the same time the Bishop of Bath was talking with him. And then he said this to me, I am very glad to hear the good report that goeth of you, and that ye be so good a Catholic man as ye be. And if ye do continue in the same way that ye begin, and be not afraid to say your conscience, ye shall deserve great reward of God, and thanks of the King's Grace at length, and much worship to yourself.—Throgmorton to the King: *MS. State Paper Office.*

CH. 4. follies of his fellow creatures which, as he  
 A.D. 1532. became more earnestly religious, narrowed and  
 hardened his convictions, and transformed the  
 genial philosopher into the merciless bigot.  
 'Heresy' was naturally hateful to him; his  
 mind was too clear and genuine to allow him  
 to deceive himself with the delusions of An-  
 glicanism; and as he saw the inevitable tendency  
 of the Reformation to lead ultimately to a change  
 of doctrine, he attached himself with increasing  
 determination to the cause of the pope and  
 of the old faith. As if with an instinctive pre-  
 science of what would follow from it, he had  
 from the first been opposed to the divorce; and  
 he had not concealed his feeling from the king at  
 the time when the latter had pressed the seals on  
 his unwilling acceptance. In consenting to be-  
 come chancellor, he had yielded only to Henry's  
 entreaties; he had held his office for two years  
 and a half—and it would have been well for his  
 memory if he had been constant in his refusal—  
 for in his ineffectual struggles against the stream,  
 he had attempted to counterpoise the attack upon  
 the church by destroying the unhappy Protes-  
 tants. At the close of the session, however, the  
 acts of which we have just described, he felt that  
 he must no longer countenance, by remaining in  
 an office so near to the crown, measures which  
 he so intensely disapproved and deplored; it was  
 time for him to retire from a world not moving  
 to his mind; and in the fair tranquillity of his  
 family prepare himself for the evil days which  
 May. he foresaw. In May, 1532, he petitioned for

permission to resign, resting his request unobtrusively on failing health; and Henry sadly consented to lose his services.

CH. 4.

A.D. 1532.  
Unwilling-  
ness of  
Henry to  
part with  
him.

Parallel to More's retirement, and though less important, yet still noticeable, is a proceeding of old Archbishop Warham under the same trying circumstances. In the days of his prosperity, Warham had never reached to greatness as a man. He had been a great ecclesiastic, successful, dignified, important, but without those highest qualities which command respect or interest. The iniquities of Warham's spiritual courts were greater than those of any other in England. He had not made them what they were. They grew by their own proper corruption; and he was no more responsible for them than every man is responsible for the continuance of an evil by which he profits, and which he has power to remedy. We must look upon him as the leader of the bishops in their opposition to the reform; and he was the probable author of the famous answer to the Commons' petition, which led to such momentous consequences.\* These consequences he had lived partially to see. Powerless to struggle against the stream, he had seen swept away one by one those gigantic privileges to which he had asserted for his order a claim divinely sanctioned; and he withdrew himself heartbroken, into his palace at Lambeth, and there entered his solemn protest against all which had been done. Too ill to write, and trembling on the edge of the grave,

Archbishop  
Warham  
prepares  
also to  
retire.

He draws  
up his  
protest,

\* In part of it he speaks in his own person. Vide *supra*, cap. 3.



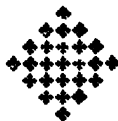
CH. 4. he dictated to his notaries from his bed these not  
 A.D. 1532. unaffecting words:—

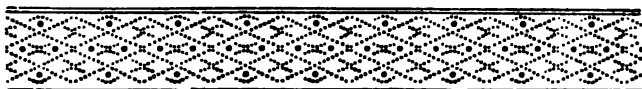
‘In the name of God, Amen. We, William, by Divine Providence Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate of all England, Legate of the Apostolic See, hereby publicly and expressly do protest for ourselves and for our Holy Metropolitan Church of Canterbury, that to any statute passed or hereafter to be passed in this present Parliament, begun the third of November, 1529, and continued until this present time; in so far as such statute or statutes be in derogation of the Pope of Rome or the Apostolic See, or be to the hurt, prejudice, or limitation of the powers of the Church, or shall tend to the subverting, enervating, derogating from, or diminishing the laws, customs, privileges, prerogatives, pre-eminence of liberties of our Metropolitan Church of Canterbury; we neither will, nor intend, nor with clear conscience are able to consent to the same, but by these writings we do dissent from, refuse, and contradict them.’\*

And dies. Thus formally having delivered his soul, he laid himself down and died.

---

\* BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 435.





## CHAPTER V.

### MARRIAGE OF HENRY AND ANNE BOLEYN.

**A**LTHOUGH in the question of the divorce CH. 5.  
the king had interfered despotically to con- A.D. 1532.  
trol the judgment of the universities, he had  
made no attempt, as we have seen, to check the  
tongues of the clergy. Nor if he had desired  
to check them, is it likely that at the present  
stage of proceedings he could have succeeded.  
No law had as yet been passed which made a Liberty of  
opinion.  
crime of a difference of opinion on the pope's  
dispensing powers; and so long as no definitive  
sentence had been pronounced, every one had  
free liberty to think and speak as he pleased.  
So great, indeed, was the anxiety to disprove  
Catherine's assertion that England was a *locus*  
*suspectus*, and therefore that the cause could not  
be equitably tried there, that even in the distri-  
bution of patronage there was an ostentatious Ostenta-  
tion of im-  
partiality.  
display of impartiality. Not only had Sir Thomas  
More been made chancellor, although emphati-  
cally on Catherine's side; but Cuthbert Tunstal,  
who had been her counsel, was promoted to the  
see of Durham. The Nun of Kent, if her word  
was to be believed, had been offered an abbey,\* and  
that Henry permitted language to pass unnoticed

---

\* Note of the Revelations of Elizabeth Barton : *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 5. of the most uncontrolled violence, appears from

A.D. 1532.

System of  
espionage.

a multitude of informations which were forwarded to the government from all parts of the country. But while imposing no restraint on the expression of opinion, the council were careful to keep themselves well informed of the opinions which were expressed, and an instrument was ready made to their hands, which placed them in easy possession of what they desired. Among the many abominable practices which had been introduced by the ecclesiastical courts, not the least hateful was the system of espionage with which they had saturated English society; encouraging servants to be spies on their masters, children on their parents, neighbours on their neighbours, inviting every one who heard language spoken anywhere of doubtful allegiance to the church, to report the words to the nearest official, as an occasion of instant process. It is not without a feeling of satisfaction, that we find this detestable invention recoiling upon the heads of its authors. Those who had so long suffered under it, found an opportunity in the turning tide, of revenging themselves on their oppressors; and the country was covered with a ready-made army of spies, who, with ears ever open, were on the watch for impatient or disaffected language in their clerical superiors, and furnished steady reports of such language to Cromwell.\*

---

\* It has been thought that the Tudor princes and their ministers carried out the spy system to an iniquitous extent,—

that it was the great instrument of their Machiavellian policy, introduced by Cromwell, and afterwards developed by Cecil and

Specimens of these informations will throw CH. 5.  
curious light on the feelings of a portion at least A.D. 1532.  
of the people. The English licence of speech, if  
not recognised to the same extent as it is at pre-

Walsingham. That both Cromwell and Walsingham availed themselves of secret information, is unquestionable,—as I think it is also unquestionable that they would have betrayed the interests of their country if they had neglected to do so. Nothing, in fact, except their skill in fighting treason with its own weapons, saved England from a repetition of the wars of the Roses, envenomed with the additional fury of religious fanaticism. But the agents of Cromwell, at least, were all volunteers;—their services were rather checked than encouraged; and when I am told, by high authority, that in those times an accusation was equivalent to a sentence of death, I am compelled to lay so sweeping a charge of injustice by the side of a document which forces me to demur to it. ‘In the reign of the Tudors,’ says a very eminent writer, ‘the committal, arraignment, conviction, and execution of any state prisoner, accused or *suspected*, or *under suspicion of being suspected* of high treason, were only the regular terms in the series of judicial proceedings.’ This is scarcely to be reconciled with the 10th of the 37th of Hen. VIII., which shows no desire to welcome accusations, or exaggerated readiness to listen to them,

‘Whereas,’ says that Act, ‘divers malicious and evil dis-

posed persons, of their perverse, cruel, and malicious intents, minding the utter undoing of some persons to whom they have and do bear malice, hatred, and evil will, have of late most devilishly practised and devised divers writings, wherein hath been comprised that the same persons to whom they bear malice should speak traitorous words against the King’s Majesty, his crown and dignity, or commit divers heinous and detestable treasons against the King’s Highness, where, in very deed, the persons so accused never spake nor committed any such offence; by reason whereof divers of the king’s true, faithful, and loving subjects have been put in fear and dread of their lives and of the loss and forfeiture of their lands and chattels—for reformation hereof, be it enacted, that if any person or persons, of what estate, degree, or condition he or they shall be, shall at any time hereafter devise, make, or write, or cause to be made any manner of writing comprising that any person has spoken, committed, or done any offence or offences which now by the laws of this realm be made treason, or that hereafter shall be made treason, and do not subscribe, or cause to be subscribed, his true name to the said writing, and within twelve days next after ensuing do not personally come before

CH. 5. sent, was certainly as fully practised. On the return of the Abbot of Whitby from the convocation at York in the summer of 1532, when the premunire money was voted, the following conversation was reported as having been overheard in the abbey.

A.D. 1532.  
The Abbot  
of Whitby  
returns  
from the  
convoca-  
tion at  
York.

His opinion  
of Anne  
Boleyn.

The prior of the convent asked the abbot what the news were. 'What news,' said the abbot, 'evil news. The king is ruled by a common — Anne Boleyn, who has made all the spirituality to be beggared, and the temporalty also. Further he told the prior of a sermon that he had heard in York, in which it was said, when a great wind rose in the west we should hear news. And he asked what that was; and he said a great man told him at York, and if he knew as much as three in England he would tell what the news were. And he said who were they? and he said the Duke of Norfolk, the Earl of Wiltshire, and the common — Anne Boleyn.'\*

The dates of these papers cannot always be determined; this which follows, probably, is something later, but it shows the general temper in which the clergy were disposed to meet the measures of the government.

the king or his council, and affirm the contents of the said writings to be true, and do as much as in him shall be for the approvment of the same, that then all and every person or persons offending as aforesaid, shall be deemed and adjudged a felon or felons; and being lawfully convicted of such offence, after the laws of the realm, shall

suffer pains of death and loss and forfeiture of lands, goods, and chattels, without benefit of clergy or privilege of sanctuary to be admitted or allowed in that behalf.'

\* Accusation brought by Robert Wodehouse, Prior of Whitby, against the Abbot, for slanderous words against Anne Boleyn: *Rolls House MS.*

'Robert Legate, friar of Furness, deposeth CH. 5.  
 that the monks had a prophecy among them, that A.D. 1532.  
 'in England shall be slain the decorate rose in  
 his mother's belly,' and this they interpret of his  
 Majesty, saying that his Majesty shall die by The king  
 shall die by  
 the hands  
 of priests.  
 the hands of priests; for the church is the mother,  
 and the church shall slay his Grace. The said  
 Robert maintaineth that he hath heard the monks  
 often say this. Also, it is said among them that  
 the King's Grace was not the right heir to the  
 crown; for that his Grace's father came in by no  
 line, but by the sword. Also, that no secular  
 knave should be head of the church; also that the  
 abbot did know of these treasons, and had made  
 no report thereof.\*

Nor was it only in the remote abbeys of the Language  
 of the  
 London  
 clergy.  
 North that such dangerous language was ventured.  
 The pulpit of St. Paul's rang Sunday after Sunday  
 with the polemics of the divorce; and if 'the  
 holy water of the court' made the higher clergy  
 cringing and cowardly, the rank and file, even in  
 London itself, showed a bold English front, and  
 spoke out their thoughts with entire recklessness.  
 Among the preachers on Catherine's side, Father Father  
 Forest.  
 Forest, famous afterward in Catholic martyr-  
 ologies, began to distinguish himself. Forest  
 was warden of a convent of Observants at Green- The con-  
 vent of Ob-  
 servants, at  
 Greenwich.  
 wich attached to the royal chapel, and having  
 been Catherine's confessor, remained, with the  
 majority of the friars, faithful to her interests,

---

\* Deposition of Robert Legate concerning the Language of the  
 Monks of Furness: *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 5. and fearless in the assertion of them. From their  
 A.D. 1532. connexion with the palace, the intercourse of these  
 monks with the royal household was considerable;  
 their position gave them influence, and Anne  
 Boleyn tried the power of her charms, if possible,  
 to gain them over. She had succeeded with a  
 few of the weaker brothers, but she was unable  
 (and her inability speaks remarkably for Henry's  
 endurance of opposition through the early stages  
 of the controversy) to protect those whose ser-  
 vices she had won from the anger of their supe-  
 riors. One monk in whom she was interested  
 the warden imprisoned,\* another there was an  
 effort to expel,† because he was ready to preach  
 on her side; and Forest himself preached a  
 violent sermon at Paul's Cross, attacking Crom-  
 well and indirectly the king.‡ He was sent for  
 to the court, and the persecuted brothers expected  
 their triumph; but he returned, as one of them  
 wrote bitterly to Cromwell, having been received  
 with respect and favour, as if, after all, the enmity  
 of a brave man found more honour at the court  
 than the complacency of cowardice. Father  
 Forest, says this letter, has been with the king.  
 'He says he spake with the king for half an hour  
 and more, and was well retained by his Grace;  
 and the King's Grace did send him a great piece  
 of beef from his own table; and also he met with

How Father  
 Forest was  
 treated by  
 the king.

\* ELLIS, third series, vol. ii.  
 p. 254.

† Father Forest hath laboured  
 divers manner of ways to ex-  
 pulse Father Laurence out of the  
 convent, and his chief cause is,

because he knoweth that Father  
 Laurence will preach the king's  
 matter whensoever it shall please  
 his Grace to command him.—  
 Ibid. p. 250.

‡ Ibid. p. 251.

my Lord of Norfolk, and he says he took him in his arms and bade him welcome.\*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.

Forest, unfortunately for himself, misconstrued forbearance into fear, and went his way at last, through treason and perjury, to the stake. In the mean time the Observants were left in possession of the royal chapel, the weak brother died in prison, and the king, when at Greenwich, continued to attend service, submitting to listen, as long as submission was possible, to the admonitions which the friars used the opportunity to deliver to him.

In these more courteous days we can form little conception of the licence which preachers in the sixteenth century allowed themselves, or the language which persons in high authority were often obliged to bear. Latimer spoke as freely to Henry VIII. of neglected duties, as to the peasants in his Wiltshire parish. St. Ambrose did not rebuke the Emperor Theodosius more haughtily than John Knox lectured Queen Mary and her ministers on the vanities of Holyrood; and Catholic priests, it seems, were not afraid to display even louder disrespect.

The preachers of the 16th century.

On Sunday, the first of May, 1532, the pulpit at Greenwich† was occupied by Father Peto, afterwards Cardinal Peto, famous through Europe as a Catholic incendiary; but at this time an undistinguished brother of the Observants convent. His sermon had been upon the story of

May 1. Father Peto's sermon.

---

\* Lyst to Cromwell. ELLIS, third series, vol. ii. p. 255. STYPER, *Eccles. Memor.*, vol. i. Appendix, No. 47.

† See vol. iv. Appendix.



CH. 5. Ahab and Naboth, and his text had been, 'Where

A.D. 1532.

the dogs licked the blood of Naboth, even there shall they lick thy blood, O king.' Henry, the court, and most likely Anne Boleyn herself, were present; the first of May being the great holy-day of the English year, and always observed at Greenwich with peculiar splendour. The preacher had dilated at length upon the crimes and the fall of Ahab, and had drawn the portrait in all its magnificent wickedness. He had described the scene in the court of heaven, and spoken of the lying prophets who had mocked the monarch's hopes before the fatal battle. At the end, he turned directly to Henry, and assuming to himself the mission of Micaiah, he closed his address in the following audacious words:—'And now, O king,' he said, 'hear what I say to thee. I

He assumes  
the cha-  
racter of  
Micaiah.

am that Micaiah whom thou wilt hate, because I must tell thee truly that this marriage is unlawful, and I know that I shall eat the bread of affliction and drink the waters of sorrow, yet because the Lord hath put it in my mouth I must speak it. There are other preachers, yea too many, which preach and persuade thee otherwise, feeding thy folly and frail affections upon hopes of their own worldly promotion; and by that means they betray thy soul, thy honour, and thy posterity; to obtain fat benefices, to become rich abbots and bishops, and I know not what. These I say are the four hundred prophets who, in the spirit of lying, seek to deceive thee. Take heed lest thou, being seduced, find Ahab's punishment, who had his blood licked up by the dogs.'

The bishops  
and clergy  
are the four  
hundred  
lying pro-  
phets.

Henry must have been compelled to listen to many such invectives. He left the chapel without noticing what had passed; and in the course of the week Peto went down from Greenwich to attend a provincial council at Canterbury, and perhaps to communicate with the Nun of Kent. Meantime a certain Dr. Kirwan was commissioned to preach on the other side of the question the following Sunday.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.

Kirwan was one of those men of whom the preacher spoke prophetically, since by the present and similar services he made his way to the archbishopric of Dublin and the bishopric of Oxford, and accepting the Erastian theory of a Christian's duty, followed Edward VI. into heresy, and Mary into popery and persecution. He regarded himself as an official of the state religion; and his highest conception of evil in a Christian was disobedience to the reigning authority. We may therefore conceive easily the burden of his sermon in the royal chapel. 'He most sharply reprehended Peto,' calling him foul names, 'dog, slanderer, base beggarly friar, rebel, and traitor,' saying 'that no subject should speak so audaciously to his prince:' he 'commended' Henry's intended marriage, 'thereby to establish his seed in his seat for ever; and having won, as he supposed, his facile victory, he proceeded with his peroration, addressing his absent antagonist. 'I speak to thee, Peto,' he exclaimed, 'to thee, Peto, which makest thyself Micaiah, that thou mayest speak evil of kings; but now art not to be found, being fled for fear and shame, as unable to answer my argument.' In the royal chapel at Green-

Zedekiah,  
the son of  
Chenaanah.

CH. 5. wick there was more reality than decorum. A voice out of the rood-loft cut short the eloquent declamation. 'Good sir,' it said, 'you know Father Peto is gone to Canterbury to a provincial council, and not fled for fear of you; for to-morrow he will return again. In the mean time I am here as another Micaiah, and will lay down my life to prove those things true which he hath taught. And to this combat I challenge thee; thee Kirwan, I say, who art one of the four hundred into whom the spirit of lying is entered, and thou seekest by adultery to establish the succession, betraying thy king for thy own vain glory into endless perdition.'

A.D. 1532.  
A voice out  
of the rood-  
loft.

Henry  
commands  
silence.

The friars  
before the  
council.

A scene of confusion followed, which was allayed at last by the king himself, who rose from his seat and commanded silence. It was thought that the limit of permissible licence had been transcended, and the following day Peto and Elstowe, the other speaker, were summoned before the council to receive a reprimand. Lord Essex told them they deserved to be sewn into a sack and thrown into the Thames. 'Threaten such things to rich and dainty folk, which have their hope in this world,' answered Elstowe, gallantly, 'we fear them not; with thanks to God we know the way to heaven to be as ready by water as by land.'\* Men of such metal might be broken, but they could not be bent. The two offenders were

---

\* Stow's *Annals*, p. 562. | were the last which the good Sir  
This expression passed into a | Humfrey Gilbert was heard to  
proverb, although the words were | utter before his ship went down.  
first spoken by a poor friar; they

hopelessly unrepentant and impracticable, and it was found necessary to banish them. They retired to Antwerp, where we find them the following year busy procuring copies of the Bishop of Rochester's book against the king, which was broadly disseminated on the continent, and secretly transmitting them into England; in close correspondence also with Fisher himself, with Sir Thomas More, and for the ill fortune of their friends, with the court at Brussels, between which and the English Catholics the intercourse was dangerously growing.\*

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.  
They are  
banished.

The Greenwich friars, with their warden, went also a bad way. The death of the persecuted brother was attended with circumstances in a

The convent  
dis-  
solved.

\* Vaughan to Cromwell: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 489-90. 'I learn that this book was first drawn by the Bishop of Rochester, and so being drawn, was by the said bishop afterwards delivered in England to two Spaniards, being secular and laymen. They receiving his first draught, either by themselves or some other Spaniards, altered and perfinished the same into the form that it now is; Peto and one Friar Elstowe of Canterbury, being the only men that have and do take upon themselves to be conveyers of the same books into England, and conveyers of all other things into and out of England. If privy search be made, and shortly, peradventure in the house of the same bishop shall be found his first copy. Master More hath sent often-

times and lately books unto Peto, in Antwerp—as his book of the confutation of Tyndal, and of Frith's opinion of the sacrament, with divers other books. I can no further learn of More's practices, but if you consider this well, you may perchance espy his craft. Peto laboureth busyer than a bee in the setting forth of this book. He never ceaseth running to and from the court here. The king never had in his realm traitors like his friars—[Vaughan wrote 'clergy.' The word in the original is dashed through, and 'friars' is substituted, whether by Cromwell or by himself in an afterthought, I do not know]—and so I have always said, and yet do. Let his Grace look well about him, for they seek to devour him. They have blinded his Grace.'

CH. 5. high degree suspicious.\* Henry ordered an  
 A.D. 1532. enquiry, which did not terminate in any actual exposure; but a cloud hung over the convent, which refused to be dispelled; the warden was deposed, and soon after it was found necessary to dissolve the order.

If the English monks had shared as a body the character of the Greenwich Observants, of the Carthusians of London and Richmond, and of some other establishments,—which may easily be numbered,—the resistance which they might have offered to the government, with the sympathy which it would have commanded, would have formed an obstacle to the Reformation that no power could have overcome. It was time, however, for the dissolution of the monasteries, when the few among them, which on other grounds might have claimed a right to survive, were driven by their very virtues into treason. The majority perished of their proper worthlessness; the few remaining contrived to make their existence incompatible with the safety of the state.

European  
 diplomacy.

Leaving for the present these disorders to mature themselves, I must now return to the weary chapter of European diplomacy, to trace the tortuous course of popes and princes, duping one another with false hopes; saying what they did not mean, and meaning what they did not say. It is a very Slough of Despond, through which we must plunge desperately as we may; and we can cheer ourselves in this dismal region

---

\* ELLIS, third series, vol. ii. p. 262, &c.

only by the knowledge that, although we are now approaching the spot where the mire is deepest, the hard ground is immediately beyond.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.

We shall, perhaps, be able most readily to comprehend the position of the various parties in Europe, by placing them before us as they stood severally in the summer of 1532, and defining briefly the object which each was pursuing.

Henry only, among the great powers, laid his conduct open to the world, declaring truly what he desired, and seeking it by open means. He was determined to proceed with the divorce, and he was determined also to continue the Reformation of the English Church. If consistently with these two objects he could avoid a rupture with the pope, he was sincerely anxious to avoid it. He was ready to make great efforts, to risk great sacrifices, to do anything short of surrendering what he considered of vital moment, to remain upon good terms with the See of Rome. If his efforts failed, and a quarrel was inevitable, he desired to secure himself by a close maintenance of the French alliance; and having induced Francis to urge compliance upon the pope by a threat of separation if he refused, to prevail on him, in the event of the pope's continued obstinacy, to put his threat in execution, and unite with England in a common schism. All this is plain and straightforward—Henry concealed nothing, and, in fact, had nothing to conceal. In his threats, his promises, and his entreaties, we feel entire certainty that he was speaking his real thoughts.

The various parties.

Henry the Eighth.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.  
Charles the  
Fifth.

The emperor's position, also, though not equally simple, is intelligible, and commands our respect. Although if he had consented to sacrifice his aunt, he might have spared himself serious embarrassment; although both by the pope and by the consistory such a resolution would probably have been welcomed with passionate thankfulness; yet at all hazards Charles was determined to make her his first object, even with the risk of convulsing Europe. At the same time his position was encumbered with difficulty. The Turks were pressing upon him in Hungary and in the Mediterranean; his relations with Francis—fortunately for the prospects of the Reformation—were those of inveterate hostility; while in Germany he had been driven to make terms with the Protestant princes; he had offended the pope by promising them a general council, in which the Lutheran divines should be represented; and the pope, taught by recent experience, was made to fear that these symptoms of favour towards heresy, might convert themselves into open support.

Francis the  
First.

With Francis the prevailing feeling was rivalry with the emperor, combined with an eager desire to recover his influence in Italy, and to restore France to the position in Europe which had been lost by the defeat of Pavia, and the failure of Lautrec at Naples. This was his first object, to which every other was subsidiary. He was disinclined to a rupture with the pope; but the possibility of such a rupture had been long contemplated by French statesmen. It was a

contingency which the pope feared:—which the hopes of Henry pictured as more likely than it was—and Francis, like his rivals in the European system, held the menace of it extended over the chair of St. Peter, to coerce its unhappy occupant into compliance with his wishes. With respect to Henry's divorce, his conduct to the University of Paris, and his assurances repeated voluntarily on many occasions, show that he was sincerely desirous to forward it. He did not care for Henry, or for England, or for the cause itself; he desired only to make the breach between Henry and Charles irreparable; to make it impossible for ever that 'his two great rivals' should become friends together; and by inducing the pope to consent to the English demand, to detach the court of Rome conclusively from the imperial interests.

The two princes who disputed the supremacy of Europe, were intriguing one against the other, each desiring to constitute himself the champion of the church; and to compel the church to accept his services, by the threat of passing over to her enemies. By a dexterous use of the cards which were in his hands, the King of France proposed to secure one of two alternatives. Either he would form a league between himself, Henry, and the pope, against the emperor, of which the divorce, and the consent to it, which he would extort from Clement, should be the cement; or, if this failed him, he would avail himself of the vantage ground which was given to him by the English alliance to obtain such concessions for

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.

The church  
menaced by  
each of the  
three sove-  
reigns.



CH. 5. himself at the emperor's expense as the pope could  
 A.D. 1532. be induced to make, and the emperor to tolerate.

Such, in so far as I can unravel the web of the diplomatic correspondence, appear to have been the open positions and the secret purposes of the great European powers.

The pope's  
policy to  
detach  
France  
from Eng-  
land.

There remains the fourth figure upon the board, the pope himself, labouring with such means as were at his disposal to watch over the interests of the church, and to neutralize the destructive ambition of the princes, by playing upon their respective selfishnesses. On the central question, that of the divorce, his position was briefly this. Both the emperor and Henry pressed for a decision. If he decided for Henry, he lost Germany; if he decided for Catherine, while Henry was supported by Francis, France and England threatened both to fall from him. It was therefore necessary for him to induce the emperor to consent to delay, while he worked upon the King of France; and, if France and England could once be separated, he trusted that Henry would yield in despair. This most subtle and difficult policy reveals itself in the transactions open and secret of the ensuing years. It was followed with a dexterity as extraordinary as its unscrupulousness, and with all but perfect success. That it failed at all, in the ordinary sense of failure, was due to the accidental delay of a courier; and Clement, while he succeeded in preserving the allegiance of France to the Roman see, succeeded also—and this is no small thing to have accomplished—in weaving the most curious

His success  
and his  
failure.

tissue of falsehood which will be met with even in the fertile pages of Italian subtlety. CH. 5.

With this general understanding of the relation between the great parties in the drama, let us look to their exact position in the summer of 1532.

A.D. 1532.

Charles was engaged in repelling an invasion of the Turks, with an anarchical Germany in his rear, seething with fanatical anabaptists, and clamouring for a general council.

Invasion of the Turks.

Anarchy in Germany.

Henry and Francis had been called upon to furnish a contingent against Solyman, and had declined to act with the emperor. They had undertaken to concert their own measures between themselves, if it proved necessary for them to move; and in the mean time Cardinal Grammont and Cardinal Tournon were sent by Francis to Rome, to inform Clement that unless he gave a verdict in Henry's favour, the Kings of France and England, being *une mesme chose*, would pursue some policy with respect to him,\*

France and England decline to act with Charles against Solyman.

June. Mission of the two French cardinals to Rome.

Ostensively to further the divorce.

\* The wishes of the French Court had been expressed emphatically to Clement in the preceding January. Original copies of the two following letters are in the Bibliothèque Impériale at Paris:—

*The Cardinal of Lorraines to Cardinal — at Rome.*

'Paris, Jan. 8, 1531-2.

'RIGHT REVEREND FATHER AND LORD IN CHRIST.—After our most humble commendations—The King of England complains loudly that his cause is not remanded into his own

country; he says that it cannot be equitably dealt with at Rome, where he cannot be present. He himself, the Queen, and the other witnesses, are not to be dragged into Italy to give their evidence; and the suits of the Sovereigns of England and France have always hitherto been determined in their respective countries.

'Nevertheless, by no entreaty can we prevail on the Pope to nominate impartial judges who will decide the question in England.

'The King's personal indignation is not the only evil which

CH. 5. to which he would regret that he had compelled them to have recourse. So far their instructions

A.D. 1532.

has to be feared. When these proceedings are known among the people, there will, perhaps, be a revolt, and the Apostolic See may receive an injury which will not afterwards be easily remedied.

‘I have explained these things more at length to his Holiness, as my duty requires. Your affection towards him, my lord, I am assured is no less than mine. I beseech you, therefore, use your best endeavours with his Holiness, that the King of England may no longer have occasion to exclaim against him. In so doing you will gratify the Most Christian King, and you will follow the course most honourable to yourself and most favourable to the quiet of Christendom.

‘From Abbeville.’

*Francis the First to Pope Clement the Seventh.*

‘Paris, Jan. 10, 1531-2.

‘MOST HOLY FATHER,—You are not ignorant what our good brother and ally the King of England demands at your hands. He requires that the cognizance of his marriage be remanded to his own realm, and that he be no further pressed to pursue the process at Rome. The place is inconvenient from its distance, and there are other good and reasonable objections which he assures us that he has urged upon your Holiness’s consideration.

‘Most Holy Father, we have written several times to you, especially of late from St. Cloud,

and afterwards from Chantilly, in our good brother’s behalf; and we have further entreated you, through our ambassador residing at your Court, to put an end to this business as nearly according to the wishes of our said good brother as is compatible with the honour of Almighty God. We have made this request of you as well for the affection and close alliance which exist between ourselves and our brother, as for the filial love and duty with which we both in common regard your Holiness.

‘Seeing, nevertheless, Most Holy Father, that the affair in question is still far from settlement, and knowing our good brother to be displeased and dissatisfied, we fear that some great scandal and inconvenience may arise at last which may cause the diminution of your Holiness’s authority. There is no longer that ready obedience to the Holy See in England which was offered to your predecessors; and yet your Holiness persists in citing my good brother the King of England to plead his cause before you in Rome. Surely it is not without cause that he calls such treatment of him unreasonable. We have ourselves examined into the law in this matter, and we are assured that your Holiness’s claim is unjust and contrary to the privilege of kings. For a sovereign to leave his realm and plead as a suitor in Rome, is a thing wholly impossible,\* and therefore, Holy

\* Chose beaucoup plus impossible que possible.

were avowed and open. A private message revealed the secret means by which the pope might escape from his dilemma; the cardinals were to negotiate a marriage between the Duke of Orleans and the pope's niece (afterwards so infamously famous), Catherine de Medicis. The marriage, as Francis represented it to Henry, was beneath the dignity of a prince of France, he had consented to it, as he professed, only for Henry's sake;\* but the pope had made it palatable by a secret article in the engagement, for the grant of the duchy of Milan as the lady's dowry.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.  
Secretly to arrange a marriage between the Duke of Orleans and Catherine de Medicis.

Henry, threatened as we have seen with domestic disturbance, and with further danger on the side of Scotland, which Charles had succeeded in agitating, concluded, on the 23rd of June, a league, offensive and defensive, with Francis, the latter engaging to send a fleet into the Channel, and to land 15,000 troops in England if the emperor should attempt an invasion from the sea.† For the better consolidation of this league, and to consult upon the measures which they would pursue on the great questions at issue in Christendom, and lastly to come to a final un-

League offensive and defensive between France and England. June 23.

Proposed interview between Henry and Francis.

Father, we have thought good to address you once more in this matter. Bear with us, we entreat you. Consider our words, and recall to your memory what by letter and through our ministers we have urged upon you. Look promptly to our brother's matter, and so act that your Holiness may be seen to value and esteem our friendship. What you do for him, or what you do

against him, we shall take it as done to ourselves.

'Holy Father, we will pray the Son of God to pardon and long preserve your Holiness to rule and govern our Holy Mother the Church.—FRANCIS.'

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 428. LEGRAND, vol. iii.

† LORD HERBERT, p. 160. RYMER, vol. vi. part ii. p. 171.

CH. 5. derstanding on the divorce, it was agreed further  
 A.D. 1532. that in the autumn the two kings should meet at Calais. The conditions of the interview were still unarranged on the 22nd of July, when the Bishop of Paris, who remained ambassador at the English court, wrote to Montmorency to suggest that Anne Boleyn should be invited to accompany the King of England on this occasion, and that she should be received in state. The letter was dated from Ampthill, to which Henry had escaped for a while from his Greenwich friars and other troubles, and where the king was staying a few weeks before the house was given up to Queen Catherine. Anne Boleyn was with him; she now, as a matter of course, attended him everywhere. Intending her, as he did, to be the mother of the future heir to his crown, he preserved what is technically called her honour unimpeached and unimpaired. In all other respects she occupied the position and received the homage due to the actual wife of the English sovereign; and in this capacity it was the desire of Henry that she should be acknowledged by a foreign prince.

Letter of  
 the Bishop  
 of Paris  
 from  
 Ampthill.

The bishop's letter on this occasion is singularly interesting and descriptive. The court were out hunting, he said, every day; and while the king was pursuing the heat of the chase, he and Mademoiselle Anne were posted together, each with a crossbow, at the point to which the deer was to be driven. The young lady, in order that the appearance of her reverend cavalier might correspond with his occupation, had made him

a present of a hunting cap and frock, a horn and a greyhound. Her invitation to Calais he pressed with great earnestness, and suggested that Marguerite de Valois, the Queen of Navarre, should be brought down to entertain her. The Queen of France being a Spaniard, would not, he thought, be welcome: 'the sight of a Spanish dress being as hateful in the King of England's eyes as the devil himself.' In other respects the reception should be as magnificent as possible, 'and I beseech you,' he concluded, 'keep out of the court, *deux sortes de gens*, the imperialists, and the wits and mockers; the English can endure neither of them.'\*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.  
Anne  
Boleyn to  
be invited  
to Bou-  
logne.

\* Francis seems to have desired that the intention of the interview should be kept secret. Henry found this impossible. 'Monseigneur,' wrote the Bishop of Paris to the Grand Master, 'quant à tenir la chose secrette comme vous le demandez, il est mal aisé; combien que ce Roy fust bien de cest advis, sinon qu'il le treuve impossible; car a cause de ces provisions et choses, qu'il fault faire en ce Royaulme, incontinent sera sceu a Londres, et de la par tout le monde. Pourquoy ne faictes vostre compte qu'on le puisse tenir secret.'

'Monseigneur, je scay veritablement et de bon lieu que le plus grant plaisir que le Roy pourroit faire au Roy son frere et a Madame Anne, c'est que le dit seigneur m'escripre que je requiere le Roy son dit frere qu'il veuille mener la dicte Dame Anne avec luy a Callais pour la veoir et pour la festoyer, afin

qu'ils ne demeurent ensembles sans compagnie de dames, pour ce que les bonnes cheres en sont tous jours meilleures: mais il faudroit que en pareil le Roy menast la Royne de Navarre à Boulogne, pour festoyer le Roy d'Angleterre.

'Quant à la Royne pour rien ce Roy ne vouldroit qu'elle vint: Il häit cest habillement à l'Espagnolle, tant qu'il luy semble veoir un diable. Il desireroit qu'il pleust au Roy mener à Boulogne, messeigneurs ses enfans pour les veoir.

'Surtout je vous prie que vous ostez de la court deux sortes de gens, ceulx qui sont imperiaux, s'aucuns en y a, et ceulx qui ont la reputation d'estre mocqueurs et gaudisseurs, car c'est bien la chose en ce monde autant häie de ceste nation.'—Bishop of Paris to the Grand Master: LEGRAND, vol. iii. pp. 555, 556.

## CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.  
European  
aspect of  
her recep-  
tion by the  
French  
court.

Francis  
gives proofs  
of his at-  
tachment.

Through the tone of this language the contempt is easily visible with which the affair was regarded in the French court. But for Francis to receive in public the rival of Queen Catherine, to admit her into his family, and to bring his sister from Paris to entertain her, was to declare in the face of Europe, in a manner which would leave no doubt of his sincerity, that he intended to countenance Henry. With this view only was the reception of Anne desired by the King of England; with this view it was recommended by the bishop, and assented to by the French court. Nor was this the only proof which Francis was prepared to give, that he was in earnest. He had promised to distribute forty thousand crowns at Rome, in bribing cardinals to give their voices for Henry in the consistory, with other possible benefactions.\*

\* Sir Gregory Cassalis to Henry VIII.: BURNET's *Col-lectanea*, p. 433. Valde existimabam necessarium cum hoc Principe (i.e., Francis) agere ut duobus Cardinalibus daret in mandatis ut ante omnes Cardinalis de Monte meminissent, eique pensionem annuam saltem trium millium aureorum ex quadraginta millibus quæ mihi dixerat velle in Cardinales distribuere, assignaret. Et Rex quidem hæc etiam scribi ad duos Cardinales jussit secretario Vitandri. Quicum ego postmodo super iis pensionibus sermonem habui, cognovique sic in animo Regem habere ut duo Cardinales cum Romæ fuerint, videant, qui

potissimum digni hâc Regiâ sint liberalitate; in eosque quum quid in Regno Galliæ ecclesiasticum vacare contigerit ex meritis uniuscujusque pensiones conferantur. Tunc autem nihil in promptu haberi quod Cardinali de Monte dari possit—verum Regio nomine illi de futuro esse promittendum quod mihi certe summopere displicuit; et secretario Vitandri non reticui ostendens pollicitationes hujusmodi centies jam Cardinali de Monte factas fuisse; et modo si iterum fiant nihil effecturas nisi ut illius viri quasi ulcera pertractent; id quod Vitandris verum esse fatebatur pollicitusque est se, quum Rex a venatu rediisset velle ei suadere

He had further volunteered his good offices with the court of Scotland, where matters were growing serious, and where his influence could be used to great advantage. The ability of James the Fifth to injure Henry happily fell short of his inclination, but encouraged by secret promises from Clement and from the emperor, he was waiting his opportunity to cross the Border with an army; and in the meantime he was feeding with efficient support a rebellion in Ireland. Of what was occurring at this time in that perennially miserable country I shall speak in a separate chapter. It is here sufficient to mention, that on the 23rd of August, Henry received information that McConnell of the Isles, after receiving knighthood from James, had been despatched into Ulster with four thousand men,\* and was followed by Mackane with seven thousand more on the 3rd of September.† Peace with England nominally continued; but the Kers, the Humes, the Scotts of Buccleugh, the advanced guard of the Marches, were nightly making forays across the Border, and open hostilities appeared to be on the point of explosion.‡ If war was to follow, Henry was prepared for it. He had a powerful force at Berwick, and in Scotland itself a large party were secretly attached to the English in-

Chr. 5.

A.D. 1532.  
State of  
Scotland.

And of  
Ireland.

Disorders  
on the  
Scottish  
Border.

English  
party  
among the  
Scotch  
nobles.

ut Cardinalem de Monte aliquâ presenti pensione prosecutur; quâ quidem tibi nihil conducibilis aut opportunius fieri possit.

\* *State Papers*, vol. iv. p. 612.

† Ibid. p. 616.

‡ The *State Papers* contain

a piteous picture of this business, the hereditary feuds of centuries bursting out on the first symptoms of ill-will between the two governments, with fire and devastation.—*State Papers*, vol. iv. p. 620–644.



CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.

Policy of  
the Tudors  
towards  
Scotland.Francis  
mediates.

October.

terests. The clan of Douglas, with their adherents, were even prepared for open revolt, and open transfer of allegiance.\* But, although Scottish nobles might be gained over, and Scottish armies might be defeated in the field, Scotland itself, as the experience of centuries had proved, could never be conquered. The policy of the Tudors had been to abstain from aggression, till time should have soothed down the inherited animosity between the two countries; and Henry was unwilling to be forced into extremities which might revive the bitter memories of Flodden. The Northern counties also, in spite of their Border prejudices, were the stronghold of the papal party, and it was doubtful how far their allegiance could be counted upon in the event of an invasion sanctioned by the pope. The hands of the English government were already full without any superadded embarrassment, and the offered mediation of Francis was gratefully welcomed.

These were the circumstances under which the second great interview was to take place between Francis the First and Henry of England.\*

\* If the said Earl of Angus do make unto us oath of allegiance, and recognises us as Supreme Lord of Scotland, and as his prince and sovereign, we then, the said earl doing the premises, by these presents bind ourself to pay yearly to the said earl the sum of one thousand pounds sterling.—Henry VIII. to the Earl of Angus: *State Papers*, vol. iv. p. 615.

† A letter of Queen Catherine to the Emperor, written on the occasion of this visit, will be read with interest:—

‘HIGH AND MIGHTY LORD, —Although your Majesty is occupied with your own affairs and with your preparations against the Turk, I cannot, nevertheless, refrain from troubling you with mine, which perhaps in substance and in the

Twelve years had passed since their last meeting, and the experience which those years had brought

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.

sight of God are of equal importance. Your Majesty knows well, that God hears those who do him service, and no greater service can be done than to procure an end in this business. It does not concern only ourselves—it concerns equally all who fear God. None can measure the woes which will fall on Christendom, if his Holiness will not act in it and act promptly. The signs are all around us in new printed books full of lies and dishonesty—in the resolution to proceed with the cause here in England—in the interview of these two princes, where the king, my lord, is covering himself with infamy through the companion which he takes with him. The country is full of terror and scandal; any evil may be looked for if nothing be done, and inasmuch as our only hope is in God's mercy, and in the favour of your Majesty, for the discharge of my conscience, I must let you know the strait in which I am placed.

'I implore your Highness for the service of God, that you urge his Holiness to be prompt in bringing the cause to a conclusion. The longer the delay the harder the remedy will be.

'The particulars of what is passing here are so shocking, so outrageous against Almighty God, they touch so nearly the honour of my Lord and husband, that for the love I bear him, and for the good that I desire for

him, I would not have your Highness know of them from me. Your ambassador will inform you of all.'—Queen Catherine to Charles V. September 18. —MS. Simancaa.

The Emperor, who was at Mantua, was disturbed at the meeting at Boulogne, on political grounds as well as personal. On the 24th of October he wrote to his sister, at Brussels.

*Charles the Fifth to the Regent Mary.*

Mantua, October 16, 1532.

I found your packets on arriving here, with the ambassadors' letters from France and England. The ambassadors will themselves have informed you of the intended conference of the Kings. The results will make themselves felt ere long. We must be on our guard, and I highly approve of your precautions for the protection of the frontiers.

As to the report that the King of England means to take the opportunity of the meeting to marry Anne Boleyn, I can hardly believe that he will be so blind as to do so, or that the King of France will lend himself to the other's sensuality. At all events, however, I have written to my ministers at Rome, and I have instructed them to lay a complaint before the Pope, that, while the process is yet pending, in contempt of the authority of the Church, the King of England is scandalously bring-

CH. 5. to both of them, had probably subdued their inclination for splendid pageantry. Nevertheless, in honour of the occasion, some faint revival was attempted of the magnificence of the Field of the Cloth of Gold. Anne Boleyn was invited duly; and the Queen of Navarre, as the Bishop of Paris recommended, came down to Boulogne to receive her. The French princes came also to thank Henry in person for their deliverance out of their Spanish prison; and he too, on his side, brought with him his young Marcellus, the Duke of Richmond, his only son—illegitimate unfortunately—but whose beauty and noble promise were at once his father's misery and pride; giving point to his bitterness at the loss of his sons by Catherine; quickening his hopes of what might be, and deepening his discontent with that which was. If this boy had lived, he would have been named to follow Edward the Sixth in the succession, and would have been King of England;\* but he too passed away in the flower of

A. D. 1532.  
Henry and  
Anne  
Boleyn  
cross the  
Channel.

The Duke  
of Rich-  
mond one  
of the  
party.

ing over the said Anne with him, as if she were his wife.

His Holiness and the Apostolic See will be the more inclined to do us justice, and to provide as the case shall require.

Should the King indeed venture the marriage—as I cannot think he will—I have desired his Holiness not only not to sanction such conduct openly, but not to pass it by in silence. I have demanded that severe and fitting sentence be passed at once on an act so wicked and so derogatory to the Apostolic See.—*The Pilgrim*, p. 89.

\* There can be little doubt of this. He was the child of the only intrigue of Henry VIII. of which any credible evidence exists. His mother was Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Blunt, an accomplished and most interesting person; and the offspring of the connexion, one boy only, was brought up with the care and the state of a prince. Henry Fitz Roy, as he was called, was born in 1519, and when six years old was created Earl of Nottingham and Duke of Richmond and Somerset, the title of the king's father.

In 1527, before the com-

his loveliness, one more evidence of the blight which rested upon the stem of the Tudors. CH. 5.

The English court was entertained by Francis at Boulogne. The French court was received in

A.D. 1532.  
Alternate  
receptions  
at Boulogne  
and Calais.

mencement of the disturbance on the divorce, Henry endeavoured to negotiate a marriage for him with a princess of the imperial blood ; and in the first overtures gave an intimation which could not be mistaken, of his intention, if possible, to place him in the line of the succession. After speaking of the desire which was felt by the King of England for some connexion in marriage of the Houses of England and Spain, the ambassadors charged with the negotiation were to say to Charles, that—

‘ His Highness can be content to bestow the Duke of Richmond and Somerset (who is near of his blood, and of excellent qualities, and is already furnished to keep the state of a great prince, *and yet may be easily by the king’s means exalted to higher things*) to some noble princess of his near

blood.’—ELLIS, third series, vol. ii. p. 121.

Hewas a gallant, high-spirited boy. A letter is extant from him to Wolsey, written when he was nine years old, begging the cardinal to intercede with the king, ‘ for an harness to exercise myself in arms according to my erudition in the Commentaries of Cæsar.’—Ibid. p. 119.

He was brought up with Lord Surrey, who has left a beautiful account of their boyhood at Windsor—their tournaments, their hunts, their young loves, and passionate friendship. Richmond married Surrey’s sister, but died the year after, when only seventeen ; and Surrey revisiting Windsor, recalls his image among the scenes which they had enjoyed together, in the most interesting of all his poems. He speaks of

The secret grove, which oft we made resound  
Of pleasant plaint and of our ladies’ praise ;  
Recording oft what grace each one had found,  
What hope of speed, what dread of long delays.  
The wild forest ; the clothed holts with green ;  
With reins availed, and swift y-breathed horse,  
With cry of hounds, and merry blasts between,  
Where we did chase the fearful hart of force.  
The void walls eke that harboured us each night,  
Wherewith, alas ! reviveth in my breast  
The sweet accord, such sleeps as yet delight  
The pleasant dream, the quiet bed of rest ;  
The secret thoughts imparted with such trust,  
The wanton talk, the divers change of play,  
The friendship sworn, each promise kept so just,  
Wherewith we past the winter nights away.

CH. 5. return at Calais by the English. The outward description of the scene, the magnificent train of the princes, the tournaments, the feasts, the dances, will be found minutely given in the pages of Hall, and need not be repeated here.

A.D. 1532.

Character  
of Hall, the  
historian.

To Hall indeed, the outward life of men, their exploits in war, and their pageantries in peace, alone had meaning or interest; and the backstairs secrets of Vatican diplomacy, the questionings of opinion, and all the brood of mental sicknesses then beginning to distract the world, were but impertinent interferences with the true business of existence. But the healthy objectiveness of an old English chronicler is no longer possible for us; we may envy where we cannot imitate; and our business is with such features of the story as are of moment to ourselves.

Political  
questions  
debated at  
the inter-  
view.  
October.  
The  
Turkish  
invasion of  
Hungary.

The political questions which were to be debated at the conference, were three; the Turkish Invasion, the General Council, and King Henry's divorce.

On the first, it was decided that there was no immediate occasion for France and England to move. Solyman's retreat from Vienna had relieved Europe from present peril; and the enormous losses which he had suffered, might prevent him from repeating the experiment. If the danger became again imminent, however, the two kings agreed to take the field in person the following year at the head of eighty thousand men.

The general  
council.

On the second point they came to no conclusion, but resolved only to act in common.

The di-  
vorce.

On the third and most important, they

parted with a belief that they understood each other; but their memories, or the memory of one of them, proved subsequently treacherous; and we can only extract what passed between them out of their mutual recriminations. CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.

It was determined certainly that at the earliest convenient moment, a meeting should take place between the pope and Francis; and that at this meeting Francis should urge in person concession to Henry's demands. If the pope professed himself unable to risk the displeasure of the emperor, it should be suggested that he might return to Avignon, where he would be secure under the protection of France and England. If he was still reluctant, and persisted in asserting his right to compel Henry to plead before him at Rome, or if he followed up his citations by inhibitions, suspensions, excommunications, or other form of censure, Francis declared that he would support Henry to the last, whether against the pope himself or against any prince or potentate who might attempt to enforce the sentence. On this point the promises of the King of France were most profuse and decided; and although it was not expressly stated in words, Henry seems to have persuaded himself that, if the pope pressed matters to extremities, Francis had engaged further that the two countries should pursue a common course, and unite in a common schism. The two princes did in fact agree, that if the general council which they desired was refused, they would summon provincial councils on their own authority. Each of

The language which was to be held by Francis at his impending conference with the pope.

CH. 5. them perhaps interpreted their engagements by their own wishes or interests.\*

A.D. 1532.  
Francis advises Henry to marry at once.

We may further believe, since it was affirmed by Henry, and not denied by Francis, that the latter advised Henry to bring the dispute to a close, by a measure from which he could not recede; that he recommended him to act on the general opinion of Europe that his marriage with Queen Catherine was null, and at once upon his return to England to make Anne Boleyn his wife.†

So far the account is clear. This advice was certainly given, and as certainly Francis undertook to support Henry through all the conse-

\* Compare LORD HERBERT with A Paper of Instructions to Lord Rochfort on his Mission to Paris: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 427, &c.; and A Remonstrance of Francis I. to Henry VIII.: LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 571, &c. It would be curious to know whether Francis ever actually wrote to the pope a letter of which Henry sent him a draft. If he did, there are expressions contained in it which amount to a threat of separation. In case the pope was obstinate Francis was to say, 'Lors force seroit de pourvoir audict affaire, par autres voyes et façons, qui peut estre, ne vous seroint gueres agreable.'—*State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 436.

† A nostre derniere entrevue sur la fraternele et familiere communication que nous eumes ensemble de noz affaires venant aux nostres, Luy declarasmes comme a tord et injustment nous estions affligez, dilayez, et fort

ingratement manniez et troublez, en nostre dicte grande et pesante matiere de mariage par la particuliere affection de l'empereur et du pape. Lesquelz sembloient par leurs longues retardations de nostre dicte matiere ne sercher autre chose, sinon par longue attente et laps de temps, nous frustrer malicieusement du propos, qui plus nous induit a poursuivre et mettre avant la dicte matiere; c'est d'avoir masculine succession et posterite en laquelle nous establirons (Dieu voulant) le quiet repos et tranquillite de notre royaume et dominion. Son fraternele, plain, et entier advis (et a bref dire le meilleur qui pourroit estre) fut tel; il nous conseilla de ne dilayer ne protracter le temps plus longuement, mais en toute celerite proceder effectivement a l'accomplissement et consummation de nostre mariage.—Henry VIII. to Rochfort: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 428-9.

quences in which the marriage might involve him. But a league for mutual defence fell short of what Henry desired, and fell short also of what Francis, by the warmth of his manner, had induced Henry for the moment to believe that he meant. It is probable that the latter pressed upon him engagements which he avoided by taking refuge in general professions; and no sooner had Henry returned to England, than either misgivings occurred to him as to the substantial results of the interview, or he was anxious to make the French king commit himself more definitely. He sent to him to beg that he would either write out, or dictate and sign, the expressions which he had used; professing to wish it only for the comfort which he would derive from the continual presence of such refreshing words—but surely for some deeper reason.\*

Francis had perhaps said more than he meant; Henry supposed him to have meant more than

\* The extent of Francis's engagements, as Henry represents them, was this:—He had promised qu'en icelle nostre dicte cause jamais ne nous abandonneroit quelque chose que sen ensuyt; ainsi de tout son pouvoir l'establiroit, supporterait, aideroit et maintiendrait notre bon droit, et le droit de la posterite et succession qui sen pourroit ensuyr; et a tous ceulz qui y voudroyent mettre trouble, empeschement, encombrance, ou y procurer deshonneur, vitupere, ou infraction, il seroit enemy et adversaire de tout son pouvoir,

de quelconque estat qu'il soit, fust pape ou empereur,—avecque plusieurs autres consolatives paroles. This he wished Francis to commit to paper. Car autant de fois, que les verrions, he says, qui seroit tous les jours, nous ne pourrions, si non les liscent, imaginer et reduire a notre souvenance la bonne grace facunde et geste, dont il les nous prononçait, et estimer estre comme face a face, parlans avecque luy.—*State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 437. Evidently language of so wide a kind might admit of many interpretations.



CH. 5. he said. Yet some promise was made, which was not afterwards observed; and Francis acknowledged some engagement in an apology which he offered for the breach of it. He asserted, in defence of himself, that he had added a stipulation which Henry passed over in silence,—that no steps should be taken towards annulling the marriage with Catherine in the English law courts until the effect had been seen of his interview with the pope, provided the pope on his side remained similarly inactive.\* Whatever it was which he had bound himself to do, this condition, if made at all, could be reconciled only with his advice that Henry should marry Anne Boleyn without further delay, on the supposition that the interview in question was to take place immediately; for the natural consequences of the second marriage would involve, as a matter of course, some speedy legal declaration with respect to the first. And when on various pretexts the pope postponed the meeting, and on the other part of his suggestion Henry had acted within a few months of his return from Calais, it became impossible that such a condition could be observed. It availed for a formal excuse; but Francis vainly endeavoured to disguise his own infirmity of purpose behind the language of a negotiation which conveyed, when it was used, a meaning widely different.

Counter-stipulation said to have been made by Francis,  
  
Urged by him as the excuse for the breach of his engagements.

The return of the court delayed by gales in the Channel.

The conference was concluded on the 1st of November, but the court was detained at Calais

---

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 571, &c.

for a further fortnight by violent gales in the Channel. In the excited state of public feeling, events in themselves ordinary assumed a preternatural significance. The friends of Queen Catherine, to whom the meeting between the kings was of so disastrous augury, and the nation generally, which an accident to Henry at such a time would have plunged into a chaos of confusion, alike watched the storm with anxious agitation; on the king's return to London, Te Deums were offered in the churches, as if for his deliverance from some extreme and imminent peril. The Nun of Kent on this great occasion was admitted to conferences with angels. She denounced the meeting, under celestial instruction, as a conspiracy against Heaven. The king, she said, but for her interposition, would have proceeded, while at Calais, to his impious marriage;\* and God was so angry with him,

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.

Te Deums  
offered in  
London on  
the king's  
safe land-  
ing.

\* Note of the Revelations of Eliz. Barton: *Rolls House MS. Suppression of the Monasteries*, p. 17.

The intention was really perhaps what the Nun said. An agent of the government at Brussels, who was watching the conference, reported on the 12th of November:—'The King of England did really cross with the intention of marrying; but, happily for the Emperor, the ceremony is postponed. Of other secrets, my informant has learned thus much. They have resolved to demand as the portion of the Queen of France, Artois, Tournay, and part of Burgundy.

They have also sent two cardinals to Rome to require the Pope to relinquish the tenths, which they have begun to levy for themselves. If his Holiness refuse, the King of England will simply appropriate them throughout his dominions. Captain ——— heard this from the King's proctor at Rome, who has been with him at Calais, and from an Italian named Jeronymo, whom the Lady Anne has roughly handled for managing her business badly. She trusted that she would have been married in September.

'The proctor told her the Pope delayed sentence for fear of the

CH. 5. that he was not permitted to profane with his unholy eyes the blessed Sacrament. 'It was written in her revelations,' says the statute of her attainder, 'that when the King's Grace was at Calais, and his Majesty and the French king were hearing mass in the Church of Our Lady, that God was so displeased with the King's Highness, that his Grace saw not at that time the blessed sacrament in the form of bread, for it was taken away from the priest, being at mass, by an angel, and was ministered to the said Elizabeth, there being present and invisible, and suddenly conveyed and rapt thence again into the nunnery where she was professed.'\*

A.D. 1532.  
The Nun of  
Kent pre-  
sent in-  
visibly at  
Calais.

She meets  
the king on  
his return  
through  
Canter-  
bury.

She had an interview with Henry on his return through Canterbury, to try the effect of her Cassandra presence on his fears;† but if he still delayed his marriage, it was probably neither because he was frightened by her denunciations, nor from alarm at the usual occurrence of an equinoctial storm. Many motives combined to dissuade him from further hesitation. Six years of trifling must have convinced him that by decisive action alone he could force the pope to a conclusion. He was growing old, and the exigencies of the succession, rendered doubly

Emperor. The two Kings, when they heard this, despatched the cardinals to quicken his movements; and the demand for the tenths is thought to have been invented to frighten him.

'They are afraid that the Emperor may force his Holiness into giving sentence before the car-

dinals arrive. Jeronymo has been therefore sent forward by post to give him notice of their approach, and to require him to make no decision till they have spoken with him.'—*The Pilgrim*, p. 89.

\* 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

† Revelations of Eliz. Barton: *Rolls House MS.*

pressing by the long agitation, required immediate resolution. He was himself satisfied that he was at liberty to marry whom he pleased and when he pleased, his relationship to Catherine, according to his recent convictions, being such as had rendered his connexion with her from the beginning invalid and void. His own inclinations and the interests of the nation pointed to the same course. The King of France had advised it. Even the pope himself, at the outset of the discussion, had advised it also. 'Marry freely,' the pope had said; 'fear nothing, and all shall be arranged as you desire.' He had forborne to take the pope at his word; he had hoped that the justice of his demands might open a less violent way to him; and he had shrunk from a step which might throw even a causeless shadow over the legitimacy of the offspring for which he longed. The case was now changed; no other alternative seemed to be open to his choice, and it was necessary to bring the matter to a close once and for all.

But Henry, as he said himself, was past the age when passion or appetite would be likely to move him, and having waited so many years, he could afford to wait a little longer, till the effects of the Calais conferences upon the pope should have had time to show themselves. In December, Clement was to meet the emperor at Bologna. In the month following, it might be hoped that he would meet Francis at Marseilles or Avignon, and from their interview would be seen conclusively the future attitude of the papal and

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.  
To marry  
or not to  
marry.

He will still  
wait for the  
effect upon  
the pope of  
the Calais  
confer-  
ences.

**CH. 5.** imperial courts. Experience of the past forbade anything like sanguine expectation; yet it was not impossible that the pope might be compelled at last to yield the required concessions. The terms of Henry's understanding with Francis were not perhaps made public, but he was allowed to dictate the language which the French cardinals were to make use of in the consistory;\* and the reception of Anne Boleyn by the French king was equivalent to the most emphatic declaration that if the censures of the church were attempted in defence of Catherine, the enforcement of them would be resisted by the combined arms of France and England.

Actual em-  
barrass-  
ment of the  
pope.

And the pope did in fact feel himself in a dilemma from which all his address was required to extricate him. He had no support from his conscience, for he knew that he was acting unjustly in refusing the divorce; while to risk the emperor's anger, which was the only honest course before him, was perhaps for that very reason impossible. He fell back upon his Italian cunning, and it did not fail him in his need. But his conduct, though creditable to his ingenuity, reflects less pleasantly on his character; and when it is traced through all its windings, few reasonable persons will think that they have need to blush at the causes which led to the last breach between England and the papacy.

From the time of Catherine's appeal and the retirement of Campeggio, Clement, with rare exceptions, had maintained an attitude of im-

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. pp. 435, 468.

passive reserve. He had allowed judgment to be delayed on various pretexts, because until that time delay had answered his purposes sufficiently. But to the English agents he had been studiously cold, not condescending even to hold out hopes to them that concession might be possible. Some little time before the meeting at Calais, however, a change was observed in the language both of the pope himself and of the consistory. The cardinals were visibly afraid of the position which had been taken by the French king; questions supposed to be closed were once more admitted to debate in a manner which seemed to show that their resolution was wavering; and one day, at the close of a long argument, the following curious conversation took place between some person (Sir Gregory Cassalis, apparently), who reported it to Henry, and Clement himself. 'I had desired a private interview with his Holiness,' says the writer, 'intending to use all my endeavours to persuade him to satisfy your Majesty. But although I did my best, I could obtain nothing from him; he had an answer for everything which I advanced, and it was in vain that I laboured to remove his difficulties. At length, however, in reply to something which I had proposed, he said shortly,—*Multo minus scandalosum fuisset dispensare cum majestate vestrâ super duabus uxoribus, quam ea cedere quæ ego petebam, it would have created less scandal to have granted your Majesty a dispensation to have two wives than to concede what I was then demanding.* As I did not know how far this

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.

A change had been for some time observed both in the pope and in the cardinals.

The question reopened in a more conciliatory spirit.

Conversation between the pope and an English agent.

The pope falls back upon the project of the two wives;

CH. 5. alternative would be pleasing to your Majesty, I endeavoured to divert him from it, and to lead him back to what I had been previously saying. He was silent for a while, and then, paying no regard to my interruption, he continued to speak of the 'two wives,' admitting however that there were difficulties in the way of such an arrangement, principally it seemed because the emperor would refuse his consent from the possible injury which it might create to his cousin's prospects of the succession. I replied, that as to the succession, I could not see what right the emperor had to a voice upon the matter. If some lawful means could be discovered by which your Majesty could furnish yourself with male offspring, the emperor could no more justly complain than if the queen were to die and the prospects of the princess were interfered with by a second marriage of an ordinary kind. To this the pope made no answer. I cannot tell what your Majesty will think, nor how far this suggestion of the pope would be pleasing to your Majesty. Nor indeed can I feel sure, in consequence of what he said about the emperor, that he actually would grant the dispensation of which he spoke. I have thought it right, however, to inform you of what passed.\*

The principal difficulty lying in the probable objections of the emperor.

The writer uncertain of the pope's real intentions;

This letter is undated, but it was written, as appears from internal evidence, some time in the year 1532.†

\* Letter from —, containing an account of an interview with his Holiness: *Rolls House MS.*

† The proposal was originally the king's (see chapter 2), but it had been dropped because one of the conditions of it had been

The pope's language was ambiguous, and the writer did not allow himself to derive from it any favourable augury; but the tone in which the suggestions had been made was by many degrees more favourable than had been heard for a very long time in the quarter from which they came, and the symptoms which it promised of a change of feeling were more than confirmed in the following winter.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.  
But there was an evident softening of tone.

Charles was to be at Bologna in the middle of December, where he was to discuss with Clement the situation of Europe, and in particular of Germany, with the desirableness of fulfilling the engagements into which he had entered for a general council.

The pope and the emperor to meet at Bologna in December.

Catherine's 'entrance into religion.' The pope, however, had not lost sight of the alternative, as one of which, in case of extremity, he might avail himself; and, in 1530, in a short interval of relaxation, he had definitely offered the king a dispensation to have two wives, at the instigation, curiously, of the imperialists. The following letter was written on that occasion to the king by Sir Gregory Cassalis:—

Serenissime et potentissime domine rex, domine mi supreme humillimâ commendatione premissâ, salutem et felicitatem. Superioribus diebus Pontifex secreto, veluti rem quam magni faceret, mihi proposuit conditionem hujusmodi; concedi posse vestræ majestati, ut duas uxores habeat; cui dixi nolle me provinciam suscipere eâ de re scribendi, ob eam causam quod ignorarem an inde vestræ conscientiæ satisfieri posset quam vestra ma-

jestas imprimis exonerare cupit. Cur autem sic responderem, illud in causâ fuit, quod ex certo loco, unde quæ Cæsariani moliantur aucupari soleo exploratum certumque habebam Cæsarianos illud ipsum quærere et procurare. Quem vero ad finem id quærant pro certo exprimere non ausim. Id certe totum vestræ prudentiæ considerandum relinquo. Et quamvis dixerim Pontifici, nihil me de eo scripturum, nolui tamen majestati vestræ hoc reticere; quæ sciat omni me industriâ laborâsse in iis quæ nobis mandat exequendis et cum Anconitano qui me familiariter uti solet, omnia sum conatus. De omnibus autem me ad communes literas rejicio. Optime valeat vestra majestas.—Romæ die xviii. Septembris, 1530.

Clarissimi vestrai Majestatis,  
Humillimus servus,  
GREGORIUS CASSALIS.  
—LORD HERBERT, p. 140.



CH. 5. This was the avowed object of the meeting.

A.D. 1532.

Dr. Bonner  
in the papal  
train.

The pope  
reaches  
Bologna,  
Dec. 8.

The emper-  
or enters,  
Dec. 12.

But, however important the question of holding a council was becoming, it was not immediately pressing; and we cannot doubt that the disquiet occasioned by the alliance of England and France was the cause that the conference was held at so inconvenient a season. The pope left Rome on the 18th of November, having in his train a person who afterwards earned for himself a dark name in English history, Dr. Bonner, then a famous canon lawyer attached to the embassy. The journey in the wild weather was extremely miserable; and Bonner, whose style was as graphic as it was coarse, sent home a humorous account of it to Cromwell.\* Three wretched weeks the party were upon the road, plunging through mire and water. They reached Bologna on the 8th of December, where, four days after them, arrived Charles V. It is important, as we shall presently see, to observe the dates of these movements. I shall have to compare with them the successive issues of several curious documents. On the 12th of December the pope and the emperor met at Bologna; on the 24th Dr. Bennet, Henry's able secretary, who had been despatched from England to be present at the conference, wrote to report the result of his observations. He had been admitted to repeated interviews with the pope, as well before as after the emperor's arrival; and the language which the former made use of could only be understood, and was of course intended to be under-

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 394, &c.

stood, as expressing the attitude in which he was placing himself towards the imperial faction. CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532.  
Bennet's letter was as follows:—

‘I have been sundry and many times with the pope, as well afore the coming of the emperour as sythen, yet I have not at any time found his Holiness more tractable or propense to show gra-Dec. 24.  
Bonner's  
letter to  
the king ;  
the change  
in the  
pope's tone  
becomes  
still more  
remark-  
able.tuity unto your Highness than now of late,—inso-  
much that he hath more freely opened his mind  
than he was accustomed, and said also that he  
would speak with me frankly without any  
observance or respect at all. At which time, I  
greatly lamented that (your Highness's cause  
being so just) no means could be found and taken  
to satisfy your Highness therein; and I said also  
that I doubted not but that (if his Holiness  
would) ways might be found by his wisdom, now  
at the emperour's being with him, to satisfy your  
Highness; and that done, his Holiness should  
not only have your Highness in as much or more  
friendship than he hath had heretofore, but also  
procure thereby that thing which his Holiness  
hath chiefly desired, which is, as he hath said, a  
universal concord among the princes of Christen-  
dom. His Holiness answered, that he would it  
had cost him a joint of his hand that such a way  
might be excogitate; and he said also, that the  
best thing which he could see to be done therein  
at this present, for a preparation to that purpose,  
was the thing which is contained in the first part  
of the cipher.\* Speaking of the justness of your  
cause, he called to his remembrance the thing

The pope  
would give  
a joint of  
his hand  
to satisfy  
Henry.

---

\* The obtaining the opinion of Ancona, and submitting it in writing of the late Cardinal to the emperor. This minister,

CH. 5. which he told me two years past; which was, that the opinion of the lawyers was more certain, favourable, and helping to your cause than the opinion of the divines; for he said that as far as he could perceive, the lawyers, though they held quod Papa possit dispensare in this case, yet they commonly do agree quod hoc fieri debeat ex maximâ causâ, adhibitâ causæ cognitione, which in this case doth not appear; and he said, that to come to the truth herein he had used all diligence possible, and enquired the opinion of learned men, being of fame and indifferency both in the court here and in other places. And his Holiness promised me that he would herein use all good policy

A.D. 1532.  
December.  
The opinion  
of the law-  
yers was in  
Henry's  
favour;  
for, though  
holding  
that the  
pope had  
power to  
dispense,  
they never-  
theless  
were agreed  
that he  
might not  
use it, ex-  
cept under  
conditions  
which had  
not existed.

the most aged as well as the most influential member of the conclave, had latterly been supposed to be inclined to advise a conciliatory policy towards England; and his judgment was of so much weight that it was thought likely that the emperor would have been unable to resist the publication of it, if it was given against him. At the critical moment of the Bologna interview this cardinal unfortunately died: he had left his sentiments, however, in the hands of his nephew, the Cardinal of Ravenna, who, knowing the value of his legacy, was disposed to make a market of it. It was a knavish piece of business. The English ambassadors offered 3000 ducats; Charles bid them out of the field with a promise of church benefices to the extent of 6000 ducats; he did not know precisely the terms of the

judgment, or even on which side it inclined, but in either case the purchase was of equal importance to him, either to produce it or to suppress it. The French and English ambassadors then combined, and bid again with church benefices in the two countries, of equal value with those offered by Charles, with a promise of the next English bishopric which fell vacant, and the original 3000 ducats as an initiatory fee. There was a difficulty in the transaction, for the cardinal would not part with the paper till he had received the ducats, and the ambassadors would not pay the ducats till they had possession of the paper. The Italian, however, proved an overmatch for his antagonists. He got his money, and the judgment was not produced after all.—*State Papers*, vol. vii. pp. 397-8, 464. BURNET, vol. iii. p. 108.

and dexterity to imprint the same in the emperor's head; which done, he reckoneth many things to be invented that may be pleasant and profitable to your Highness; adding yet that this is not to be done with a fury, but with leisure and as occasion shall serve, lest if he should otherwise do, he should let and hinder that good effect which peradventure might ensue thereby.\*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.

Dec. 24.  
He promises to use his best influence with the emperor.

This letter has all the character of truth about it. The secretary had no interest in deceiving Henry, and it is quite certain that, whether honestly or not, the pope had led him to believe that his sympathies were again on the English side, and that he was using his best endeavours to subdue the emperor's opposition.

On the 26th of December, two days later, Sir Gregory Cassalis, who had also followed the papal court to Bologna, wrote to the same effect. He, too, had been with the pope, who had been very open and confidential with him. The emperor, the pope said, had complained of the delay in the process, but he had assured him that it was impossible for the consistory to do more than it had done. The opinion of the theologians was on the whole against the papal power of dispensation in cases of so close relationship; of the canon lawyers part agreed with the theologians, and those who differed from them were satisfied that such a power might not be exercised unless there were most urgent cause, unless, that is, the safety of a kingdom were dependent upon it. Such occasion he had

Dec. 26.  
Cassalis to Henry.

The pope has assured the emperor that both the lawyers and the theologians were against him.

---

\* Bennet to Henry VIII. : *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 402.

CH. 5. declared that he could not find to have existed for the dispensation granted by his predecessor. The

A.D. 1532. The emperor had endeavoured to prove that the required conditions had existed;

But the pope had set aside his argument,

And had entreated him to grant permission to satisfy Henry. Cassalis doubts the pope's sincerity.

occasion: the dispensation had been granted to prevent war between Spain and England; and that otherwise great calamities would have befallen both countries. But this was manifestly untrue; and his Holiness said that he had answered, It was a pity, then, that these causes had not been submitted at the time, as the reason for the demand, which it was clear that they had not been: as the case stood, it was impossible for him to proceed further. Upon which he added, 'Se vidisse Cæsarem obstupefactum.' 'I write the words,' continued Sir Gregory, 'exactly as the pope related them to me. Whether he really spoke in this way, I cannot tell; of this, however, I am sure, that on the day of our conversation he had taken the blessed sacrament. He assured me further, that he had laboured to induce the emperor to permit him to satisfy your Majesty. I recommended him that when next the emperor spoke with him upon the subject, he should enter at greater length on the question of *justice*, and that some other person should be present at the conference, that there might be no room left for suspicion.'\*

The manner of Clement was so unlike what Cassalis had been in the habit of witnessing in him, that he was unable, as we see, wholly to persuade himself that the change was sincere: the

---

\* Sir Gregory Cassalis to the King: *Rolls House MS.*, endorsed by Henry, *Litteræ in Pontificis dicta declaratoris quæ maxime causam nostram probant.*

letter, however, was despatched to England, and was followed in a few days by Bonner, who brought with him the result of the pope's good will in the form of definite propositions—instructions of similar purport having been forwarded at the same time to the papal nuncio in England. The pope, so Henry was informed, was now really well disposed to do what was required; he had urged upon the emperor the necessity of concessions, and the cause might be settled in one of two ways, to either of which he was himself ready to consent. Catherine had appealed against judgment being passed in England, as a place which was not indifferent. Henry had refused to allow his cause to be heard anywhere but in his own realm; pleading first his privilege as a sovereign prince; and secondly, his exemption as an Englishman.\* The pope, with appearance of openness, now suggested that Henry should either 'send a mandate requiring the remission of his cause to an indifferent place, in which case he would himself surrender his claim to have it tried in the courts at Rome, and would appoint a legate and two auditors to hear the trial elsewhere;' or else, a truce of three or four years being concluded between England, France, and Spain, the pope would 'with all celerity indict a general council, to which he would absolutely and wholly remit the consideration of the question.'†

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532.  
Bonner  
despatched  
to England  
with pro-  
posals.

Dec. 26.  
Two plans  
suggested :  
Either that  
Henry  
should send  
a mandate  
requiring  
the remis-  
sion of the  
cause *ad*  
*locum in-*  
*differe-*  
*ntem*,  
Or that it  
should be  
referred to  
a general  
council.

\* There was a tradition (it cannot be called more), that no Englishman could be compelled against his will to plead at a foreign tribunal. 'Ne Angli

extra Angliam litigare cogantur.'

† Henry VIII. to the Ambassadors with the Pope: *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532-3  
January.Neither of  
these plans  
admissible;But Henry  
replies gra-  
tiously.He may not  
plead out of  
England  
without  
consent of  
parliament.

Both proposals carried on their front a show of fair dealing, and if honestly proffered, were an evidence that something more might at length be hoped than words. But the true obstacle to a settlement lay, as had been long evident, rather in the want of an honest will, than in legal difficulties or uncertainty as to the justice of the cause; and while neither of the alternatives as they stood were admissible or immediately desirable, there were many other roads, if the point of honesty were once made good, which would lead more readily to the desired end. Once for all Henry could not consent to plead out of England; while an appeal to a council would occupy more time than the condition of the country could conveniently allow. But the offer had been courteously made; it had been accompanied with language which might be sincere; and the king replied with grace, and almost with cordiality; not wholly giving Clement his confidence, but expressing a hope that he might soon be no longer justified in withholding it. He was unable, he said, to accept the first condition, because it was contrary to his coronation oath; 'it so highly touched the prerogative royal of the realm, that though he were minded to do it, yet must he abstain without the assent of the court of parliament, which he thought verily would never condescend to it.'\*

The other suggestion he did not absolutely reject, but the gathering of a council was too serious a

---

\* Henry VIII. to the Ambassadors with the Pope: *Rolls House MS.*

matter to be precipitated, and the situation of Christendom presented many obstacles to a measure which would be useless unless it were carried through by all the great powers in a spirit of cordial unanimity. He trusted therefore that if the pope's intentions were really such as he pretended to entertain, he would find some method more convenient of proving his sincerity.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532-3  
January.  
The council  
requires  
more time  
than can be  
afforded.

It was happy for Henry that experience had taught him to be distrustful. Events proved too clearly that Clement's assumed alteration of tone was no more than a manœuvre designed to entice him to withdraw from the position in which he had entrenched himself, and to induce him to acknowledge that he was amenable to an earthly authority exterior to his own realm.\* In his offer to refer the cause to a general council, he proved that he was insincere, when in the following year he refused to allow a council to be a valid tribunal for the trial of it. The course which he would have followed if the second alternative had been accepted, may be conjectured from the measures which, as I shall presently show, he was at this very moment secretly pursuing. Henry, however, had happily resolved that he would be trifled with no further; he felt instinctively that only action would cut the net in which he was entangled; and he would not hesitate any longer to take a step which, in one

Henry's  
fortunate  
distrust.

Henry ultimately  
appealed to a  
council, and  
his appeal  
was re-  
jected.

---

\* So at least the English government was at last convinced, as appears in the circular to the clergy, printed in BUR-  
NET's *Collectanea*, p. 447, &c. I try to believe, however, that the pope's conduct was rather weak than treacherous.



CH. 5. way or another, must bring the weary question  
 A.D. 1532-3 to a close. If the pope meant well, he would  
 welcome a resolution which made further procrastination impossible; if he did not mean well, he could not be permitted to dally further with  
 January 25. the interests of the English nation. Within a few days, therefore, of Bonner's return from Bologna, he took the final step from which there was no retreat, and 'somewhere about St. Paul's day,'\* Anne Boleyn received the prize for which she had thirsted seven long years, in the hand of the King of England. The ceremony was private. No authentic details are known either of the scene of it or the circumstances under which it took place; but it is said to have been performed by the able Rowland Lee, Bishop of Lichfield, summoned up for the purpose from the Welsh Marches, of which he was warden. It was done, however—in one way or other finally done—the cast was thrown, and a match was laid to the train which now at length could explode the spell of intrigue, and set Henry and England free.

The king marries Anne Boleyn,

And the match is lighted which must spring the mine.

We have arrived at a point from which the issue of the labyrinth is clearly visible. The course of it has been very dreary; and brought in contact as we have been with so much which is painful, so much which is discreditable to all parties concerned, we may perhaps have lost our

---

\* So at least Cranmer says; but he was not present, nor was he at the time informed that it was to take place.—ELLIS, first series, vol. ii. p. 32. The belief, however, generally was, that the marriage took place in November; and though Cranmer's evidence is very strong, his language is too vague to be decisive.

sense of the broad bearings of the question in CH. 5.  
indiscriminate disgust. It will be well, there-  
fore, to pause for a moment to recapitulate those  
features of the story which are the main indica-  
tions of its character, and may serve to guide our  
judgment in the censure which we shall pass.

A.D. 1532-3  
January.  
Recapitu-  
lation of  
the general  
bearings of  
the ques-  
tion.

It may be admitted, or it ought to be  
admitted, that if Henry VIII. had been con-  
tented to rest his demand for a divorce merely  
on the interests of the kingdom, if he had for-  
borne, while his request was pending, to affront  
the princess who had for many years been his  
companion and his queen; if he had shown her  
that respect which her high character gave her a  
right to demand, and which her situation as a  
stranger ought to have made it impossible to him  
to refuse; his conduct would have been liable to  
no imputation, and our sympathies would without  
reserve have been on his side. He could not  
have been expected to love a person to whom he  
had been married as a boy for political con-  
venience, merely because she was his wife; espe-  
cially when she was many years his senior in age,  
disagreeable in her person, and by the conscious-  
ness of it embittered in her temper. His king-  
dom demanded the security of a stable succes-  
sion; his conscience, it may not be doubted, was  
seriously agitated by the loss of his children;  
and looking upon it as the sentence of Heaven  
upon a connexion, the legality of which had from  
the first been violently disputed, he believed that  
he had been living in incest, and that his misfor-  
tunes were the consequence of it. Under these

Henry was  
substan-  
tially right.

The state  
required a  
stable suc-  
cession,

CH. 5. circumstances he had a full right to apply for a divorce.\*

A.D. 1532-3  
January.  
And the  
condition  
of England  
met the re-  
quisitions  
of the  
canon law.

So far as  
he was in-  
fluenced by  
personal  
feeling, he  
was wrong.

The *causa urgentissima* of the canon law for which, by the pope's own showing, the dispensing powers had been granted to him, had arisen in an extreme form; and when the vital interests of England were sacrificed to the will of a foreign prince, sufficient reason had arisen for the nation to decline submission to so emphatic injustice, and to seek within itself its own remedies for its own necessities. These considerations must be allowed all their weight; and except for them, it is not to be supposed that Henry would have permitted private distaste or inclination to induce him to create a scandal in Europe. In his conduct, however, as in that of most men, good was chequered with evil, and sincerity with self-deception. Personal feeling can be traced from the first, holding a subsidiary, indeed, but still an influential place, among his motives; and exactly so far as he was influenced by it, his course was wrong, as the consequence miserably proved. The position which, in his wife's presence, he assigned to another woman, however he may have persuaded himself that Catherine had no claim to be con-

---

\* Individual interests have to yield necessarily and justly to the interests of a nation, provided the conduct or the sacrifice which the nation requires is not sinful. That there would have been any sin on Queen Catherine's part if she had consented to a separation from the king, was never pretended; and

although it is a difficult and delicate matter to decide how far unwilling persons may be compelled to do what they ought to have done without compulsion, yet the will of a single man or woman cannot be allowed to constitute itself an irremovable obstacle to a great national good.

sidered his wife, admits neither of excuse nor of palliation; and he ought never to have shared his throne with a person who consented to occupy that position. He was blind to the coarseness of Anne Boleyn, because, in spite of his chivalry, his genius, his accomplishments, in his relations with women he was without delicacy himself. He directed, or attempted to direct, his conduct by the broad rules of what he thought to be just; and in the wide margin of uncertain ground where rules of action cannot be prescribed, and where men must guide themselves by consideration for the feelings of others, he—so far as women were concerned—was altogether or almost a stranger. Such consideration is a virtue which can be learned only in the society of equals, where necessity obliges men to practise it. Henry had been a king from his boyhood; he had been surrounded by courtiers who had anticipated all his desires; and exposed as he was to an ordeal from which no human being could have escaped uninjured, we have more cause, after all, to admire him for those excellences which he conquered for himself, than to blame the defects which he retained.

Ch. 5.  
A.D. 1532-3  
January.

Henry's great fault, a want of consideration in his transactions with private persons.

He had never been in circumstances where he could learn it.

But if in his private relations the king was hasty and careless, towards the pope to whom we must now return, he exhausted all resources of forbearance: and although, when separation from Rome was at length forced upon him, he then permitted no half measures, and swept into his new career with the strength of irresistible will, it was not till he had shown resolution no less

His forbearance with the pope,

CH. 5. great in the endurance of indignity; and of the  
 A.D. 1532-3 three great powers in Europe, the prince who was  
 January. compelled to break the unity of the Catholic  
 church, was evidently the only one who was  
 capable of real sacrifices to preserve it unbroken.  
 And how Clement comprehended his reluctance, but pre-  
 far the pope sumed too far upon it; and if there was sin in the  
 presumed upon it. 'great schism' of the Reformation, the guilt must  
 rest where it is due. We have now to show the  
 reverse side of the transactions at Bologna, and  
 explain what a person wearing the title of his  
 Holiness, in virtue of his supposed sanctity, had  
 been secretly doing.

Pastoral In January, 1532, some little time before his  
 letter conversation with Sir Gregory Cassalis on the  
 written by subject of the two wives, the pope had composed  
 Clement to a pastoral letter to Henry, which had never been  
 Henry in issued. From its contents it would seem to have  
 January, been written on the receipt of an indignant  
 1531-2. remonstrance of Queen Catherine, in which she  
 had complained of her desertion by her husband,  
 and of the public position which had been given  
 to her rival. She had supposed (and it was the  
 natural mistake of an embittered and injured  
 woman) that Anne Boleyn had been placed in  
 possession of the rights of an actual, and not only  
 of an intended wife; and the pope, accepting her  
 account of the situation, had written to implore  
 the king to abstain, so long as the cause remained  
 undetermined, from creating so great a scandal in  
 Christendom, and to restore his late queen to her  
 place at his side. This letter, as it was originally  
 written, was one of Clement's happiest composi-

tions.\* He abstained in it from using any expres- CH. 5.  
sion which could be construed into a threat: he A.D. 1532-3  
appealed to Henry's honourable character, which  
no blot had hitherto stained; and dwelling upon  
the general confusion of the Christian world, he  
urged with temperate earnestness the ill effects  
which would be produced by so open a defiance of  
the injunctions of the Holy See in a person of so  
high a position. So far all was well. Henry had  
deserved that such a letter should be written to  
him; and the pope was more than justified in  
writing it. The letter, however, if it was sent,  
produced no effect, and on the 15th of November,  
three days before Clement's departure to Bologna,  
where he pretended (we must not forget) that he  
considered Henry substantially right; he added  
a postscript, in a tone not contrasting only with  
his words to the ambassadors, but with the Postscript  
appended  
to it.  
Nov. 15.  
language of the brief itself.

Again urging Henry's delinquencies, his  
separation from his wife, and the scandal of his  
connexion with another person, he commanded Declaring  
Henry, if  
he does not  
immediate-  
ly separate  
from Anne  
Boleyn,  
him, under penalty of excommunication, within  
one month of the receipt of those injunctions, to  
restore the queen to her place, and to abstain  
thenceforward from all intercourse with Anne  
Boleyn pending the issue of the trial. 'Other-  
wise,' the pope continued, 'when the said term  
shall have elapsed, we pronounce thee, Henry  
King of England, and the said Anne, to be *ipso* To be *ipso*  
*facto* ex-  
communi-  
cate;  
*facto* excommunicate, and command all men to

---

\* It is printed by LORD HERBERT, and in LEGRAND, vol. iii.

CH. 5. shun and avoid your presence; and although our

A. D. 1532-3  
January.

And warn-  
ing him at  
his peril not  
to proceed  
with the  
cause in  
England.

mind shrinks from allowing such a thought of your Serenity, although by ourselves and by our auditory of the Rota an inhibition has been already issued against you; although the act of which you are suspected be in itself forbidden by all laws human and divine, yet the reports which are brought to us do so move us, that once more we do inhibit you from dissolving your marriage with the aforesaid Catherine, or from continuing process, in your own courts, of divorce from her. And we do also hereby warn you, that you presume not to contract any new marriage with the said or with any other woman; we declare such marriage, if you still attempt it, to be vain and of none effect, and so to be regarded by all persons in obedience to the Apostolic see.\*

An inhibitory mandate, was a natural consequence of the conference of Calais, provided that the pope intended to proceed openly and uprightly; and if it had been sent upon the spot, Henry could have complained of nothing worse than of an honourable opposition to his wishes. But the mystery was not yet exhausted.

The letter  
again not  
issued, but  
carried to  
Bologna,

The postscript was not issued, it was not spoken of; it was carried secretly to Bologna, and it bears at its foot a further date of the 23rd of December, the very time, that is to say, at which the pope was representing himself to Bennet as occupied only in devising the best means of satisfying Henry, and to Sir Gregory

And bears  
the fresh  
date of the  
23rd of  
December.

---

\* LEGRAND, vol. iii. p. 558, &c.

Cassalis, as so convinced of the justice of the English demands, that he had ventured in defence of them to the edge of rupture with the emperor.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532-3  
Nov. 15.

It might be urged that he was sincere both in his brief and in his conversation; that he believed that a verdict ought to be given, and would at last be given, against the original marriage, and that therefore he was the more anxious to prevent unnecessary scandal. Yet a menace of excommunication couched in so haughty a tone, could have been honestly reconciled with his other conduct, only by his following a course with respect to it which he did not follow—by informing the ambassadors openly of what he had done, and transmitting his letter through their hands to Henry himself. This he might have done; and though the issue of such a document at such a time would have been open to question, it might nevertheless have been defended. His Holiness, however, did nothing of the kind. No hint was let fall of the existence of any minatory brief; he sustained his pretence of good will, till there was no longer any occasion for him to counterfeit; and two months later it suddenly appeared on the doors of the churches in Flanders.

It is concealed from the ambassadors,

And appears in February on the doors of the churches in Flanders. Henry believes it to be a forgery.

Henry at first believed it to be a forgery. One forged brief had already been produced by the imperialists in the course of their transactions, and he imagined that this was another; even his past experience of Clement had not prepared him for this last venture of effrontery; he



CH. 5. wrote to Bennet, enclosing a copy, and requiring him to ascertain if it were really genuine.\*

A. D. 1532-3  
The pope in  
great perplexity at  
what he  
had done.

The pope could not deny his hand, though the exposure, and the strange irregular character of the brief itself troubled him, and Bonner, who was again at the papal court, said that 'he was in manner ashamed, and in great perplexity what he might do therein.'†

Probable  
interpretation of the  
pope's conduct.

His conduct will be variously interpreted, and to attempt to analyse the motives of a double-minded man is always a hazardous experiment; but a comparison of date, the character of Clement himself, the circumstances in which he was placed, and the retrospective evidence from after events, points almost necessarily to but one interpretation. It is scarcely disputable that, frightened at the reception of Anne Boleyn in France, the pope found it necessary to pretend for a time an altered disposition towards Henry; and that the emperor, unable to feel wholly confident that a person who was false to others was

\* Ye may show unto his Holiness that ye have heard from a friend of yours in Flanders lately, that there hath been set up certain writings from the See Apostolic, in derogation both of justice and of the affection lately showed by his Holiness unto us; which thing ye may say ye can hardly believe to be true, but that ye reckon them rather to be counterfeited. For if it should be true, it is a thing too far out of the way, specially considering that you and other our ambassa-

dors be there, and have heard nothing of the matter. We send a copy of these writings unto you, which copy we will in no wise that ye shall show to any person which might think that ye had any knowledge from us nor any of our council, marveling greatly if the same hath proceeded indeed from the pope; [and] willing you expressly not to show that ye had it of us.—*State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 421.

† *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 454.

true to himself, had exacted the brief from him as a guarantee for his good faith; Charles, on his side, reserving the publication until Francis had been gained over, and until Clement was screened against the danger which he so justly feared, from the consequences of the interview at Calais. CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532-3

There was duplicity of a kind; this cannot be denied; and if not designed to effect this object, this object in fact it answered. While Clement was talking smoothly to Bennet and Cassalis, secret overtures were advanced at Paris for a meeting at Nice between the pope, the emperor, and the King of France, from which Henry was to be excluded.\* The emperor made haste with concessions to Francis, which but a few months before would have seemed impossible. He withdrew his army out of Lombardy, and left Italy free; he consented to the marriage which he had so earnestly opposed between Catherine de Medici and the Duke of Orleans, agreeing also, it is probable, to the contingency of the Duchy of Milan becoming ultimately her dowry. And Francis having coquetted with the proposal for the Nice meeting,† not indeed accepting, but not February.  
Intrigues  
at Paris.  
  
The emperor attempts to conciliate Francis.

---

\* Sir John Wallop to Henry: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 422.

† Francis represented himself to Henry as having refused with a species of bravado. 'He told me,' says Sir John Wallop, 'that he had announced previously that he would consent to no such interview, unless your Highness were also comprised in the same; and if it were so condescended

that your Highness and he should be then together, yet you two should go after such a sort and with such power that you would not care whether the pope and emperor would have peace or else *coups de baston*.'—Wallop to Henry, from Paris, Feb. 22. But this was scarcely a complete account of the transaction; it was an account only of so much of it

CH. 5. absolutely rejecting it, Charles consented also to waive his objections to the interview between Francis and the pope, on which he had looked hitherto with so much suspicion; provided that the pope would bear in mind some mysterious and unknown communication which had passed at Bologna.\*

Francis is  
gained  
over.

We have no  
reason to  
regret it.

Thus was Francis won. He cared only, as the pope had seen, for his own interests; and from this time he drew away, by imperceptible degrees, from his engagements to England. He did not stoop to dishonour or treacherous betrayal of confidence, for with all his faults he was, in the technical acceptance of that misused term, a gentleman. He declined only to maintain the attitude which, if he had continued in it, would have compelled the pope to yield; and although he continued honestly to urge him to make concessions, he no longer affected to make them the

as the French king was pleased to communicate. The emperor was urgent for a council. The pope, feeling the difficulty either of excluding or admitting the Protestant representatives, was afraid of consenting to it, and equally afraid of refusing. The meeting proposed to Francis was for the discussion of this difficulty; and Francis, in return, proposed that the great Powers, Henry included, should hold an interview, and arrange beforehand the conclusions at which the council should arrive. This naïve suggestion was waived by Charles, apparently on grounds of religion.

LORD HERBERT, Kennet's Edit. p. 167.

\* The emperor's answer touching this interview is come, and is, in effect, that if the pope shall judge the said interview to be for the wealth and quietness of Christendom, he will not be seen to dissuade his Holiness from the same; but he desired him to remember what he showed to his Holiness when he was with the same, at what time his Holiness offered himself for the commonwealth to go to any place to speak with the French king.—Bennet to Henry VIII.; *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 464.

price of preserving France in allegiance to the Holy See. Nor need we regret that Francis shrank from a resolution which Henry had no right to require of him. To have united with France in a common schism at the crisis of the Reformation would have only embarrassed the free motions of England; and two nations whose interests and whose tendencies were essentially opposite, might not submit to be linked together by the artificial interests of their princes. The populace of England were unconsciously on the rapid road to Protestantism. The populace of France were fanatically Catholic. England was to go her way through a golden era of Elizabeth to Cromwell, the Puritans, and a Protestant republic; a republic to be perpetuated, if not in England herself, yet among her great children beyond the sea. France was to go her way through Bartholomew massacres and the dragonnades to a polished Louis the Magnificent, and thence to the bloody Medea's cauldron of Revolution, out of which she was to rise as now we know her. No common road could have been found for such destinies as these; and the French prince followed the direction of his wiser instincts when he preferred a quiet arrangement with the pope, in virtue of which his church should be secured by treaty the liberties which she desired, to a doubtful struggle for a freedom which his people neither wished nor approved. The interests of the nation were in fact his own. He could ill afford to forsake a religion which allowed him so pleasantly to compound for his amatory indul-

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532-3  
February.The future  
courses of  
England  
and France  
irreconci-  
lable.Francis, on  
the whole,  
did what  
the French  
nation de-  
sired.

CH. 5. gences by the estrapade\* and a zeal for orthodoxy.

A.D. 1532-3  
February.

The Mar-  
sailles  
meeting  
put off.  
Henry is  
obliged to  
acknow-  
ledge his  
marriage.

It became evident to Henry early in the spring that he was left substantially alone. His marriage had been kept secret with the intention that it should be divulged by the King of France to the pope when he met him at Marseilles; and as the pope had pretended an anxiety that either the King of England should be present in person at that interview, or should be represented by an ambassador of adequate rank, a train had been equipped for the occasion, the most magnificent which England could furnish. Time, meanwhile, passed on; the meeting, which was to have taken place first in January, and then in April, was delayed till October, and in the interval the papal brief had appeared in Flanders; the queen's pregnancy could not admit of concealment; and the evident proof which appeared that France was no longer to be depended upon, convinced the English government that they had nothing to hope for from abroad, and that Henry's best resources were to be found, where in fact they had always been, in the strength and affection of his own people.

From this choking atmosphere, therefore, we

---

\* The estrapade was an infernal machine introduced by Francis into Paris for the better correction of heresy. The offender was slung by a chain over a fire, and by means of a crane was dipped up and down into the flame, the torture

being thus prolonged for an indefinite time. Francis was occasionally present in person at these exhibitions, the executioner waiting his arrival before commencing the spectacle.

now turn back to England and the English parliament; and the change is from darkness to light, from death to life. Here was no wavering, no uncertainty, no smiling faces with false hearts behind them; but the steady purpose of resolute men, who slowly, and with ever opening vision, bore the nation forward to the fair future which was already dawning.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1532-3  
Meeting of  
parliament.

Parliament met at the beginning of February, a few days after the king's marriage, which, however, still remained a secret. It is, I think, no slight evidence of the calmness with which the statesmen of the day proceeded with their work, that in a session so momentous, in a session in which the decisive blow was to be struck of the most serious revolution through which the country as yet had passed, they should have first settled themselves calmly down to transact what was then the ordinary business of legislation, the struggle with the vital evils of society. The first nine statutes which were passed in this session were economic acts to protect the public against the frauds of money-making tradesmen; to provide that shoes and boots should be made of honest leather; that food should be sold at fair prices, that merchants should part with their goods at fair profits; to compel, or as far as the legislature was able to do it, to compel all classes of persons to be true men; to deal honestly with each other, in that high Quixotic sense of honesty which requires good subjects at all times and under all circumstances to consider the interests of the commonwealth as

Feb. 4.  
Calmness  
of its pro-  
ceedings.

With ex-  
communi-  
cation  
pending,  
it can find  
time for  
domestic  
economy.

CH. 5. more important than their own. I have already

A.D. 1532-3  
March.

The true  
history of a  
nation, the  
history of  
its combats  
with evil.

spoken of this economic legislation, and I need not dwell now upon details of it; although under some aspects it may be thought that more which is truly valuable in English history lies in these unobtrusive statutes than in all our noisy wars, reformatations, and revolutions. The history of this as of all other nations (or so much of it as there is occasion for any of us to know), is the history of the battles which it has fought and won with evil; not with political evil merely, or spiritual evil; but with all manifestations whatsoever of the devil's power. And to have beaten back, or even to have struggled against and stemmed in ever so small a degree those besetting basenesses of human nature, now held so invincible that the influences of them are assumed as the fundamental axioms of economic science; this appears to me a greater victory than Agincourt, a grander triumph of wisdom and faith and courage than even the English constitution or the English liturgy. Such a history, however, lies beside the purpose which I may here permit myself; and the two acts with which the session closed, alone in this place require our attention.

Act of  
Apparel.

The first of these is one of the many 'Acts of Apparel,' which are to be found in the early volumes of the statute book. The meaning of these laws becomes intelligible when we reflect upon the condition of the people. The English were an organized nation of soldiers; they formed an army perpetually ready for the field, where the degrees were determined by social position; and

The mean-  
ing of these  
acts.

the dresses prescribed to the various orders of society were the graduated uniforms which indicated the rank of the wearers. When every man was a soldier, and every gentleman was an officer, the same causes existed for marking, by costume, the distinctions of authority, which lead to the answering differences in the modern regiments.

CH. 5.

A. D. 1532-3  
The military organization of society required a graduated uniform.

The changing condition of the country at the time of the Reformation, the growth of a middle class, with no landed possessions, yet made wealthy by trade or other industry, had tended necessarily to introduce confusion; and the policy of this reign, which was never more markedly operative than during the most critical periods of it, was to reinvigorate the discipline of the feudal system; and pending the growth of what might better suit the age, pending the great struggle in which the nation was engaged, to hold every man at his post. The statute specifies its object, and the motives with which it was passed.

Every man to be at his post.

‘Whereas,’ says the preamble, ‘divers laws, ordinances, and statutes have been with great deliberation and advice provided and established for the necessary repressing and avoiding the inordinate excess daily more and more used in the sumptuous and costly array and apparel accustomedly worn in this realm, whereof hath ensued, and daily do chance such sundry high and notable inconveniences as be to the great and notorious detriment of the commonweal, the subversion of politic order in knowledge and distinction of people according to their pre-eminence

Growth of extravagance in dress.



CH. 5. and degrees, to the utter impoverishment and undoing of many light and inexperienced persons inclined to pride, the mother of all vices: Be it enacted,\*—but I need not enter into the particulars of the uniforms worn by the nobles and gentlemen of the court of Henry VIII.; the temper, not the detail, is of importance; and of the wisdom or unwisdom of such enactments, we who live in a changed age should be cautious of forming a hasty opinion. The ends which the old legislation proposed to itself, have in latter ages been resigned as impracticable. We are therefore no longer adequate judges how far those ends may in other times have been attainable, and we can still less judge of the means through which the attainment of them was sought.

A. D. 1532-3  
Subverting  
politic  
order,  
and en-  
couraging  
pride, the  
mother of  
all vice.

Modern  
thinkers  
have no  
data by  
which to  
judge the  
character of  
sumptuary  
acts.

The Act of  
Appeals.

The second act of which I have to speak is open to no such ambiguity; it remains among the few which are and will be of perpetual moment in our national history. The conduct of the pope had forced upon the parliament the reconsideration of the character of his supremacy; and when the question had once been asked, in the existing state of feeling but one answer to it was possible.

The authority of the church over the state, the supreme kingship of Christ, and consequently of him who was held to be Christ's vicar, above all worldly sovereignties, was an established reality of mediæval Europe. The princes had with difficulty preserved their juris-

---

\* 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 13.

diction in matters purely secular; while in matters spiritual, and in that vast section of human affairs in which the spiritual and the secular glide one into the other, they had been compelled—all such of them as lay within the pale of the Latin communion—to acknowledge a power superior to their own. To the popes was the ultimate appeal in all causes of which the spiritual courts had cognizance. Their jurisdiction had been extended by an unwavering pursuit of a single policy, and their constancy in the twelfth century was rewarded by absolute victory. In England, however, the field was no sooner won than it was again disputed, and the civil government gave way at last only when the danger seemed to have ceased. So long as the papacy was feared, so long as the successors of St. Peter held a sword which could inflict sensible wounds, and enforce obedience by penalties, the English kings had resisted both the theory and the application. While the pope was dangerous he was dreaded and opposed. When age had withered his arm, and the feeble lightnings flickered in harmless insignificance, they consented to withdraw their watchfulness, and his supremacy was silently allowed as an innocent superstition. It existed as some other institutions exist at the present day, with a merely nominal authority; with a tacit understanding, that the power which it was permitted to retain should be exerted only in conformity with the national will.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1532-3

Papal authority in England resisted violently so long as the pope had real power.

Acquiesced in as a constitutional fiction when he had ceased to be dangerous.

Under these conditions the Tudor princes became loyal subjects to the Holy See, and so they

CH. 5. would have willingly remained, had not Clement, in an evil hour for himself, forgotten the terms of the compact. He laid upon a legal fiction a strain which his predecessors, in their palmyest days, would have feared to attempt; and the nation, after grave remonstrance, which was only received with insults, exorcised the chimæra with a few resolute words for ever. The parliament, in asserting the freedom of England, carefully chose their language. They did not pass a new law, but they passed an act declaratory merely of the law which already existed, and which they were vindicating against illegal encroachment. ‘Whereas,’ says the Statute of Appeals, ‘by divers sundry old authentic histories and chronicles, it is manifestly declared and expressed that this realm of England is an empire, and so hath been accepted in the world; governed by one supreme head and king, having the dignity and royal estate of the imperial crown of the same; unto whom a body politic compact of all sorts and degrees of people, divided in terms by names of spirituality and temporality, be bound and ought to bear, next to God, a natural and humble obedience: he being also institute and furnished by the goodness and sufferance of Almighty God with plenary, whole, and entire power, pre-eminence and authority, prerogative and jurisdiction, to render and yield justice and final determination to all manner of folk resident or subject within this his realm, without restraint or provocation to any foreign prince or potentate of the world: the body spiritual whereof having power

A.D. 1532-3

The fiction desires to become a truth, and finds that it cannot.

The realm of England is an empire,

Divided in terms by names of spirituality and temporality;

when any cause of the law divine happened to come in question, or of spiritual learning, [such cause being] declared, interpret, and shewed by that part of the body politic called the spirituality, now usually called the English church; (which also hath been reported and also found of that sort, that both for knowledge, integrity, and sufficiency of numbers, it hath been always thought to be, and is also at this hour sufficient and meet of itself, without the interfering of any exterior person or persons, to declare and determine all such doubts, and to administer all such offices and duties as to the administration of their rooms spiritual doth appertain): and the laws temporal, for trial of property of lands and goods, and for the conservation of the people of this realm in unity and peace, having been and yet being administered, adjudged, and executed by sundry judges and administers of the said body politic called the temporality: and seeing that both these authorities and jurisdictions do conjoin together for the due administration of justice, the one to help the other: and whereas the king's most noble progenitors, and the nobility and commons of this said realm at divers and sundry parliaments, as well in the time of King Edward I., Edward III., Richard II., Henry IV., and other noble kings of this realm, made sundry ordinances, laws, and provisions for the conservation of the prerogatives, liberties, and pre-eminences of the imperial crown of this realm, and of the jurisdiction spiritual and temporal of the same, to keep it from the annoyance as well of the see of Rome

Ch. 5.  
A.D. 1533.

Of which the spirituality is self-sufficient in causes spiritual,

And the temporality is self-sufficient in causes temporal.

Laws of the Plantagenet kings to prevent the encroachments of the popes.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.

Causes not  
plainly pro-  
vided for in  
those laws  
have  
arisen,

Occasion-  
ing great  
expense  
and delay.

The incon-  
venience of  
the distance  
from Rome  
is very  
great ;

And there-  
fore hence-  
forward  
there shall  
be no ap-  
peal to any  
authority  
exterior to  
the realm,

as from the authority of other foreign potentates attempting the diminution or violation thereof, as often as from time to time any such annoyance or attempt might be known or espied : and notwithstanding the said good statutes and ordinances, and since the making thereof, divers inconveniences and dangers not provided for plainly by the said statutes, have risen and sprung by reason of appeals sued out of this realm to the see of Rome, in causes testamentary, causes of matrimony and divorce, right of tithes, oblations, and obventions, not only to the great inquietation, vexation, trouble, costs, and charges of the King's Highness, and many of his subjects and residents in this his realm ; but also to the delay and let of the speedy determination of the said causes, for so much as parties appealing to the said court of Rome most commonly do the same for the delay of justice ; and forasmuch as the great distance of way is so far out of this realm, so that the necessary proofs, nor the true knowledge of the causes, can neither there be so well known, nor the witnesses so well examined there as within this realm, so that the parties grieved by means of the said appeals be most times without remedy ; in consideration hereof, all testamentary and matrimonial causes, and all suits for tithes, oblations, and obventions shall henceforth be adjudged in the spiritual and temporal courts within the realm, without regard to any process of foreign jurisdiction, or any inhibition, excommunication, or interdict. Persons procuring processes, inhibitions, appeals, or citations from the court of

Rome, as well as their fautors, comforters, counsellors, aiders and abettors, all and every of them shall incur the penalties of premunire; and in all such cases as have hitherto admitted of appeal to Rome, the appeals shall be from the Archdeacon's court to the Bishop's court, from the Bishop's court to that of the Archbishop, and no further.\*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
Interdict  
and excom-  
munication  
notwith-  
standing.

The act was carried through Parliament in February, but again, as with the Annates Bill, the king delayed his sanction till the post could reach and return from the Vatican. The Bishop of Bayonne wrote that there was hope that Clement might yet give way, and entreated that the king would send an 'excusator,' a person formally empowered to protest for him that he could not by the laws of England plead at a foreign tribunal; and that with this imperfect recognition of his authority the pope would be satisfied.

Chastillon, the French ambassador, had an interview with the king, to communicate the bishop's message.

'The morning after,' Chastillon wrote, 'his Majesty sent for me and desired me to repeat my words before the council. I obeyed; but the majority declared that there was nothing in them to act upon, and that the king must not put himself in subjection. His Majesty himself, too, I found less warm than in his preceding conversation. I begged the council to be patient. I said everything that I could think of likely to weigh with the king. I promised him a sen-

---

\* 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.

tence from our Holy Father declaring his first marriage null, his present marriage good. I urged him on all grounds, public and private, to avoid a rupture with the Holy See. Such a sentence, I said, would be the best security for the queen, and the safest guarantee for the unopposed succession of her offspring. If the marriage was confirmed by the Holy Father's authority, the queen's enemies would lose the only ground where they could make a stand. The peace of the realm was now menaced. The emperor talked loudly and made large preparations. Let the king be allied with France, and through France with the Holy See, and the emperor could do him no harm. Thus I said my proposals were for the benefit of the realm of his Majesty, and of the children who might be born to him. The king would act more prudently both for his own interest, and for the interest of his children, in securing himself, than in running a risk of creating universal confusion; and, besides, he owed something to the king his brother, who had worked so long and so hard for him.

‘After some further conversation, his Majesty took me aside into a garden, where he told me that for himself he agreed in what I had said; but he begged me to keep his confidence secret. He fears, I think, to appear to condescend too easily.

‘He will not, however, publish the acts of parliament till he sees what is done at Rome. The vast sums of money which used to be sent out of the country will go no longer; but in

other respects he will be glad to return to good terms. He will send the excusator when he hears again from M. de Paris; and for myself, I think, that although the whole country is in a blaze against the pope, yet with the good will and assistance of the king, the Holy Father will be reinstated in the greater part of his prerogatives.' CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.

But the hope that the pope would yield proved again delusive. Henry wrote to him himself in the spirit of his conversation with Chastillon. His letter was presented by Cardinal Tournon, and Clement said all that could be said in acknowledgment without making the one vital concession. But whenever it was put before him that the cause must be heard and decided in England and in no other place, he talked in the old language of uncertainty and impossibilities;\* and Henry learning at the same time that a correspondence was going forward between Clement and Francis, with the secrets of which he was not made acquainted, went forward upon his own way. April brought with it the certainty that the expected concessions were delusive. Anne Boleyn's pregnancy made further delay impossible. D'Inteville, who had succeeded Chastillon as French ambassador, once more attempted to interfere, but in vain. Henry told him he could not help himself, the pope forced him to the course which he was pursuing, by the answer which he had been pleased to issue; and he could

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 441.



CH. 5. only encounter enmity with its own weapons.  
 A.D. 1533. 'The archbishop,' d'Inteville wrote to Francis,  
 'will try the question, and will give judgment. I entreated the king to wait till the conference at Nice, but he would not consent. I prayed him to keep the sentence secret till the pope had seen your Majesty; he replied it was impossible.'\*

Double  
 aspect of  
 this sta-  
 tute.

As a na-  
 tional act,  
 it was  
 wholly  
 excellent.

Thus the statute became law which transferred to the English courts of law the power so long claimed and exercised by the Roman see. There are two aspects under which it may be regarded, as there were two objects for which it was passed. Considered as a national act, few persons will now deny that it was as just in itself as it was politically desirable. If the pope had no jurisdiction over English subjects, it was well that he should be known to have none; if he had, it was equally well that such jurisdiction should cease. The question was not of communion between the English and Roman churches, which might or might not continue, but which this act would not affect. The pope might still retain his rights of episcopal precedence, whatever those might be, with all the privileges attached to it. The parliament merely declared that he possessed no right of interference in domestic disputes affecting persons and property.

As directed  
 against the

But the act had a special as well as a national

---

\* D'Inteville to Francis the First: MS. Bibliothèque Impérial, Paris.—*Pilgrim*, p. 92.

bearing, and here it is less easy to arrive at a just conclusion. It destroyed the validity of Queen Catherine's appeal; it placed a legal power in the hands of the English judges to proceed to pass sentence upon the divorce; and it is open to the censure which we ever feel entitled to pass upon a measure enacted to meet the particular position of a particular person. When embarrassments have arisen from unforeseen causes, we have a right to legislate to prevent a repetition of those embarrassments. Our instincts tell us that no legislation should be retrospective, and should affect only positions which have been entered into with a full knowledge at the time of the condition of the laws.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
appeal of  
Queen Catherine, it  
is less satisfactory.

The statute endeavours to avoid the difficulty by its declaratory form; but again this is unsatisfactory; for that the pope possessed some authority was substantially acknowledged in every application which was made to him; and when Catherine had married under a papal dispensation, it was a strange thing to turn upon her, and to say, not only that the dispensation in the particular instance had been unlawfully granted, but that the pope had no jurisdiction in the matter by the laws of the land which she had entered.

The declaratory form will not save it from the charge of being retrospective.

On the other hand, throughout the entire negotiations King Henry and his ministers had insisted jealously on the English privileges. They had declared from the first that they might, if they so pleased, fall back upon their own laws. In desiring that the cause might be heard by a

CH. 5. papal legate in England, they had represented themselves rather as condescending to a form than acknowledging a right; and they had, in fact, in allowing the opening of Campeggio's court, fallen, all of them, even Henry himself, under the penalties of the statutes of provisors. The validity of Catherine's appeal they had always consistently denied. If the papal jurisdiction was to be admitted at all, it could only be through a minister sitting as judge within the realm of England; and the maxim, '*Ne Angli extra Angliam litigare cogantur*,' was insisted upon as the absolute privilege of every English subject.

A.D. 1533. Henry had, however, never allowed Catherine's right of appeal, and had always insisted on the English privileges.

Yet, if we allow full weight to these considerations, a feeling of painful uncertainty continues to cling to us; and in ordinary cases to be uncertain on such a point is to be in reality certain. The state of the law could not have been clear, or the statute of appeals would not have been required; and explain it as we may, it was in fact passed for a special cause against a special person; and that person a woman.

The necessity of the act was the justification of it.

How far the parliament was justified by the extremity of the case is a further question, which it is equally difficult to answer. The alternative, as I have repeatedly said, was an all but inevitable civil war, on the death of the king; and practically, when statesmen are entrusted with the fortunes of an empire, the responsibility is too heavy to allow them to consider other interests. *Salus populi suprema lex*, ever has been and ever will be the substantial canon of policy with public men, and morality is bound to hesitate before it

censures them. There are some acts of injustice which no national interest can excuse, however great in itself that interest may be, or however certain to be attained by the means proposed. Yet government, in its easiest tax, trenches to a certain extent on natural right and natural freedom; and trenches further and further in proportion to the emergency with which it has to deal. How far it may go in this direction, or whether Henry VIII. and his parliament went too far, is a difficult problem; their best justification is an exceptive clause introduced into the act, which was intended obviously to give Queen Catherine the utmost advantage which was consistent with the liberties of the realm. 'In case,' says the concluding paragraph, 'of any cause, or matter, or contention now depending for the causes before rehearsed, or that hereafter shall come into contention for any of the same causes in any of the foresaid courts, which hath, doth, shall, or may touch the king, his heirs or successors, kings of this realm; in all or every such case or cases the party grieved as aforesaid shall or may appeal from any of the said courts of this realm, to the spiritual prelates and other abbots and priors of the Upper House, assembled and convocate by the king's writ in convocation.\* If Catherine's cause was as just as Catholics and English high churchmen are agreed to consider it, the English church might have saved her. If Catherine herself

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
Statement  
of the  
moral diffi-  
culty.

An ex-  
ceptive  
clause in-  
troduced,  
to give Ca-  
therine an  
appearance  
of advan-  
tage.

In cases  
touching  
the king or  
the royal  
family, an  
appeal is  
permitted  
from the  
Arch-  
bishops  
Court to  
the Upper  
House of  
Convoca-  
tion.

---

\* 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

CH. 5. had thought first or chiefly of justice, she would  
 A.D. 1533. not perhaps have accepted the arbitration of the  
 English convocation; but long years before she  
 would have been in a cloister.

We regret  
 what we  
 cannot wish  
 undone.

Thus it is that while we regret, we are unable to blame; and we cannot wish undone an act, to have shrunk from which might have spared a single heart, but *might* have wrecked the English nation. We increase our pity for Catherine because she was a princess. We measure the magnitude of the evils which human beings endure by their position in the scale of society; and misfortunes which private persons would be expected to bear without excessive complaining, furnish matter for the lamentation of ages when they touch the sacred head which has been circled with a diadem. Let it be so. Let us compensate the queen's sorrows with unstinted sympathy; but let us not trifle with history, by confusing a political necessity with a moral crime.

The English parliament, then, had taken up the gauntlet which the pope had flung to it with trembling fingers: and there remained nothing but for the Archbishop of Canterbury to make use of the power of which by law he was now possessed. And the time was pressing, for the new queen was enceinte, and further concealment was not to be thought of. The delay of the interview between the pope and Francis, and the change in the demeanour of the latter, which had become palpably evident, discharged Henry of all promises by which he might have bound himself; and to hesitate before the menaces of the pope's brief would have been fatal.

The act of appeals being passed, convocation CH. 5.  
 was the authority to which the power of deter- A.D. 1533.  
 mining unsettled points of spiritual law seemed  
 to have lapsed. In the month of April, there- April.  
 fore, Cranmer, now Archbishop of Canterbury,\*  
 submitted to it the two questions, on the resolu- Two ques-  
 tion of which the sentence which he was to pass tions sub-  
 was dependent. mitted to  
convoca-  
tion.

The first had been already answered separately First, what  
 by the bench of bishops and by the universities, was the law  
 and had been agitated from end to end of Europe with re-  
 —was it lawful to marry the widow of a brother spect to the  
 dying without issue, but having consummated marriage of  
 his marriage; and was the Levitical prohibition a brother's  
 of such a marriage grounded on a divine law, widow?  
 with which the pope could not dispense, or on a  
 canon law of which a dispensation was permis-  
 sible?†

The pope had declared himself unable to Answered  
 answer; but he had allowed that the general against the  
 opinion was against the power of dispensing,† lawfulness  
 and there could be little doubt, therefore, of the of such  
 reply of the English convocation, or at least of marriage  
under any  
circum-  
stances.

\* He had been selected as Warham's successor, and had been consecrated on the 30th of March, 1533. On the occasion of the ceremony when the usual oath to the Pope was presented to him, he took it with a declaration that his first duty and first obedience was to the crown and laws of his own country. It is idle trifling to build up, as too many writers have attempted to do, a charge of insincerity upon an action which was forced upon him by the existing relation be-

tween England and Rome. The Act of Appeals was the law of the land. The separation from communion with the papacy was a contingency which there was still a hope might be avoided. Such a protest as Cranmer made was therefore the easiest solution of the difficulty. See it in STYKE'S *Cranmer*, Appendix, p. 683.

† BURNET, vol. iii. pp. 122-3.

‡ Bennet to Henry VIII.: *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 402. Sir Gregory Cassalis to the same: *Rolls House MS.*

CH. 5. the upper house. Fisher attempted an opposition; but wholly without effect. The question was one in which the interests of the higher clergy were not concerned, and they were therefore left to the dominion of their ordinary understandings. Out of two hundred and sixty-three votes, nineteen only were in the pope's favour.\*

A.D. 1533.  
April.

The lower  
house not  
unanimous.

The lower house was less unanimous, as might have been expected, and as had been experienced before; the opposition spirit of the English clergy being usually then, as much as now, in the ratio of their poverty. But there too the nature of the case compelled an overwhelming majority.† It was decided by both houses that Pope Julius, in granting a licence for the marriage of Henry and Catherine, had exceeded his authority, and that this marriage was therefore, *ab initio*, void.

The second  
question  
regarding  
the consummation  
of the  
original  
marriage.

The other question to be decided was one of fact; whether the marriage of Catherine with Prince Arthur had or had not been consummated, a matter which the Catholic divines conceived to be of paramount importance, but which to few persons at the present day will seem of any importance whatsoever. We cannot even read the evidence which was produced without a sensation of disgust, although in those broader and less conscious ages the indelicacy was less obviously perceptible. And we may console ourselves with the hope that the discussion was not so wounding as might have been expected to the feelings of

\* BURNET, vol. iii. p. 123.

† Ibid. vol. i. p. 210.

Queen Catherine, since at all official interviews, with all classes of persons, at all times and in all places, she appeared herself to court the subject.\* There is no occasion in this place to follow her example. It is enough that Ferdinand, at the time of her first marriage, satisfied himself, after curious inquiry, that he might hope for a grandchild; and that the fact of the consummation was asserted in the treaty between England and Spain, which preceded the marriage with Henry, and in the supposed brief of Pope Julius which permitted it.† We cannot in consequence be surprised that the convocation accepted the conclusion which was sanctioned by so high authority, and we rather wonder at the persistency of Catherine's denials. With respect to this vote, therefore, we need notice nothing except that Dr. Clerk, Bishop of Bath and Wells,‡ was one of an exceedingly small minority, who were inclined to believe that the denial might be true, and this bishop was one of the four who were associated with Cranmer when he sate at Dunstable for the trial of the cause.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
April.

General  
character  
of the  
evidence.

Question  
answered  
affirma-  
tively.

The ground being thus opened, and all preparations being completed, the archbishop composed a formal letter to the king, in which he dwelt upon the uncertain prospects of the succession, and the danger of leaving a question

Cranmer  
applies to  
the king  
for licence  
to proceed.

\* See *State Papers*, vol. i. pp. 415, 420, &c.

† BURNET'S *Collectanea*, p. 22. It is very singular that in the original Bull of Julius, the expression is 'forsan consummavissetis;' while in the brief,

which, if it was genuine, was written the same day, and which, if forged, was forged by Catherine's friends, there is no forsan. The fact is stated absolutely.

† LORD HERBERT, p. 163. BURNET, vol. iii. p. 123.



CH. 5. which closely affected it so long unsettled. He expatiated at length on the general anxiety which was felt throughout the realm, and requested permission to employ the powers attached to his office to bring it to some conclusion. The recent alterations had rendered the archbishop something doubtful of the nature of his position; he was diffident and unwilling to offend; and not clearly knowing in the exercise of the new authority which had been granted to him, whether the extension of his power was accompanied with a parallel extension of liberty

Two copies of the application written, sent, and delivered.

The difference between them, and a possible explanation of the phenomenon.

April 11. He doubted whether the bishops retained their original independence,

in making use of it, he wrote two copies of this letter, with slight alterations of language, that the king might select between them the one which he would officially recognise. Both these copies are extant; both were written the same day from the same place; both were folded, sealed, and sent. It seems, therefore, that neither was Cranmer furnished beforehand with a draught of what he was to write; nor was his first letter sent back to him corrected. He must have acted by his own judgment; and a comparison of the two letters is singular and instructive. In the first he spoke of his office and duty in language, chastened indeed and modest, but still language of independence; and while he declared his unwillingness to 'enterprise any part of that office' without his Grace's favour obtained, and pleasure therein first known, he implied nevertheless that his request was rather of courtesy than of obligation, and had arisen rather from a sense of moral propriety than because he might not legally enter

on the exercise of his duty without the permis- CH. 5.  
sion of the crown.\*

The moderate gleam of freedom vanishes in the other copy under a few pithy changes, as if Cranmer instinctively felt the revolution which had taken place in the relations of church and state. Where in the first letter he asked for his Grace's favour, in the second he asked for his Grace's favour *and licence*—where in the first he requested to know his Grace's pleasure as to his proceeding, in the second he desired his Most Excellent Majesty to *license* him to proceed. The burden of both letters was the same, but the introduction of the little word *license* changed all. It implied a hesitating belief that the spiritual judges might perhaps thenceforward be on a footing with the temporal judges and the magistrates; that under the new constitution they were to understand that they held their offices not directly under God as they had hitherto pretended, but under God through the crown.

A.D. 1533.  
April 11.

Or had sunk into the constitutional position of the secular authorities.

The answer of Henry indicated that he had perceived the archbishop's uncertainty; and that he was desirous by the emphatic distinctness of his own language to spare him a future recurrence of it. He accepted the deferential version of the petition; but even Cranmer's anticipation of what might be required of him had not reached the reality. In running through the preamble, the king flung into the tone of it a character of still deeper humility;† and he conceded the desired

The king's answer dwelling emphatically on the word *Licence*.

\* *State Papers*, vol. i. pp. 390, 391.

† Ye therefore duly recognizing that it becometh you not,

CH. 5. licence in the following imperial style. 'In consideration of these things,'—*i.e.* of the grounds urged by the archbishop for the petition—'albeit we being your King and Sovereign, do recognise no superior on earth but only God, and not being subject to the laws of any earthly creature; yet because ye be under us, by God's calling and ours, the most principal minister of our spiritual jurisdiction within this our Realm, who we think assuredly is so in the fear of God, and love towards the observance of his laws, to the which laws, we as a Christian king have always heretofore, and shall ever most obediently submit ourself, we will not therefore refuse (our pre-eminence, power, and authority to us and to our successors in this behalf nevertheless saved) your humble request, offer, and towardness—that is, to mean to make an end according to the will and pleasure of Almighty God in our said great cause of matrimony, which hath so long depended undetermined, to our great and grievous unquietness and burden of our conscience. Wherefore we, inclining to your humble petition, by these our letters sealed with our seal, and signed with our sign manual, do license you to proceed in the said cause, and the examination and final determination of the same; not doubting but that ye will have God and the justice of the said cause only before your eyes, and not to regard

A.D. 1533.  
April 17.  
Language  
of the  
granted  
permission.

The arch-  
bishop is  
the chief  
minister of  
the king's  
spiritual  
jurisdiction.

being our subject, to enterprize any part of your said office in so weighty and great a cause pertaining to us being your prince and sovereign, without our licence obtained so to do; and therefore in your most humble wise ye supplicate us to grant unto you our licence to proceed.—*State Papers*, vol. i. p. 392.

any earthly or worldly affection therein; for assuredly the thing which we most covet in the world, is so to proceed in all our acts and doings as may be the most acceptable to the pleasure of Almighty God our Creator, to the wealth and honour of us, our successors and posterity, and the surety of our Realm, and subjects within the same.\*

CH. 5.

A. D. 1533.  
April 11.

The imperium in imperio is terminated.

The vision of ecclesiastical independence, if Cranmer had indulged in it, must have faded utterly before his eyes on receiving this letter. As clergy who committed felony were no longer exempted from the penalties of their crimes; so henceforward the courts of the clergy were to fall into conformity with the secular tribunals. The temporal prerogatives of ecclesiastics as a body whose authority over the laity was countervailed with no reciprocal obligation, existed no longer. This is what the language of the king implied. The difficulty which the persons whom he was addressing experienced in realizing the change in their position, obliged him to be something emphatic in his assertion of it; and it might be imagined at first sight, that in insisting on his superiority to the officers of the spiritual courts, he claimed a right to dictate their sentences. But to venture such a supposition would be to mistake the nature of English sovereignty and the spirit of the change. The supreme authority in England was the law; and the king no more possessed, or claimed a power of controlling the judgment of the bishops or their ministers, than he could

The king is obliged to be emphatic in his language;

But it is not to be supposed that he claimed a right of dictating the sentences in the spiritual courts.

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 392.

CH. 5. interfere with the jurisdiction of the judges of the bench. All persons in authority, whether in church or state, held their offices thenceforth by similar tenure; but the rule of the proceedings in each remained alike the law of the land, which Henry had no more thought of superseding by his own will than the most constitutional of modern princes.

A.D. 1533.  
April 11.

Henry's  
persuasion  
with re-  
spect to his  
own con-  
duct.

The closing sentences of his reply to Cranmer are striking, and it is difficult to believe that he did not mean what he was saying. From the first step in the process to the last, he maintained consistently that his only object was to do what was right. He was thoroughly persuaded that the course which he was pursuing was sanctioned by justice—and persons who are satisfied that he was entitled to feel such persuasion, need not refuse him the merit of sincerity, because (to use the language which Cromwell used at the fatal crisis of his life\*) 'It may be well that they who meddle in many matters are not able to answer for them all.'

May 10.  
Cranmer  
goes to  
Dunstable,  
and opens  
his court.

Cranmer, then, being fortified with this permission, and taking with him the Bishops of London, Winchester, Lincoln, and Bath and Wells (the latter perhaps having been chosen in consequence of his late conduct in the convocation, to give show of fairness to the proceeding), went down to Dunstable and opened his court there. The queen was at Ampthill, six miles distant, having entered on her sad tenancy, it would

---

\* Cromwell to the King on his Committal to the Tower: BURNET, *Collectanea*, p. 500.

seem, as soon as the place had been evacuated by the gaudy hunting party of the preceding summer. The cause being undecided, and her title being therefore uncertain, she was called by the safe name of 'the Lady Catherine,' and under this designation she was served with a citation from the archbishop to appear before him on Saturday, the 10th of May. The bearers of the summons were Sir Francis Bryan (an unfortunate choice, for he was cousin of the new queen, and insolent in his manner and bearing), Sir Thomas Gage, and Lord Vaux. She received them like herself with imperial sorrow. They delivered their message; she announced that she refused utterly to acknowledge the competency of the tribunal before which she was called; the court was a mockery; the archbishop was a shadow.\* She would neither appear before him in person, nor commission any one to appear on her behalf.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
May 10.  
Catherine  
is sum-  
moned to  
appear.

She refuses  
to appear.

The court had but one course before it—she was pronounced contumacious, and the trial went forward. None of her household were tempted even by curiosity to be present. 'There came not so much as a servant of hers to Dunstable, save such as were brought in as witnesses; some of them having been required to give evidence in the re-examination which was thought necessary, as to the nature of the relation of their mistress with her first boy husband. As soon as this disgusting question had been sufficiently investi-

And is pro-  
nounced  
contuma-  
cious.

---

\* So at least she called him a few days later.—*State Papers*, vol. i. p. 420. We have no details of her words when she was summoned; but only a general account of them.—*State Papers*, vol. i. p. 394-5.

CH. 5. gated, nothing remained but to pronounce judgment. The marriage with the king was declared to have been null and void from the beginning, and on the 23rd of May, the archbishop sent to London the welcome news that the long matter was at an end.\*

A. D. 1533.  
May 23.  
Sentence  
given  
against her.

\* The words of the sentence may be interesting:—‘In the name of God, Amen. We, Thomas, by Divine permission Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate of all England, and Legate of the Apostolic See, in a certain cause of enquiry of and concerning the validity of the marriage contracted and consummated between the most potent and most illustrious Prince, our Sovereign Lord, Henry VIII., by the grace of God King of England and France, Defender of the Faith, and Lord of Ireland, and the most serene Princess, Catherine, daughter of his Most Catholic Majesty, Ferdinand, King of Spain, of glorious memory, we proceeding according to law and justice in the said cause which has been brought judicially before us in virtue of our office, and which for some time has lain under examination, as it still is, being not yet finally determined and decided; having first seen all the articles and pleas which have been exhibited and set forth of her part, together with the answers made thereto on the part of the most illustrious and powerful Prince, Henry VIII.; having likewise seen and diligently inspected the informations and depositions of many noblemen and other wit-

nesses of unsuspected veracity exhibited in the said cause; having also seen and in like manner carefully considered not only the censures and decrees of the most famous universities of almost the whole Christian world, but likewise the opinions and determinations both of the most eminent divines and civilians, as also the resolutions and conclusions of the clergy of both Provinces of England in Convocation assembled, and many other wholesome instructions and doctrines which have been given in and laid before us concerning the said marriage; having further seen and in like manner inspected all the treaties and leagues of peace and amity on this account entered upon and concluded between Henry VII., of immortal fame, late King of England, and the said Ferdinand, of glorious memory, late King of Spain; having besides seen and most carefully weighed all and every of the acts, debates, letters, processes, instruments, writs, arguments, and all other things which have passed and been transacted in the said cause at any time; in all which thus seen and inspected, our most exact care in examining, and our most mature deliberation in weighing them

It was over;—over at last; yet so over, that the conclusion could but appear to the losing party a fresh injustice. To those who were concerned in bringing it to pass, to the king him-

CH. 5.

A. D. 1533.  
May 23.  
Close of the  
cause.

bath by us been used, and all other things have been observed by us, which of right in this matter were to be observed; furthermore, the said most illustrious Prince, Henry VIII., in the forementioned cause, by his proper Proctor having appeared before us, but the said most serene Lady Catherine in contempt absenting herself (whose absence we pray that the divine presence may compensate) [*cujus absentia Divinâ repleatur præsentia*. Lord Herbert translates it, 'whose absence may the Divine presence attend,' missing, I think, the point of the Archbishop's parenthesis] by and with the advice of the most learned in the law, and of persons of most eminent skill in divinity whom we have consulted in the premises, we have found it our duty to proceed to give our final decree and sentence in the said cause, which, accordingly, we do in this manner.

'Because by acts, warrants, deductions, propositions, exhibitions, allegations, proofs and confessions, articles drawn up, answers of witnesses, depositions, informations, instruments, arguments, letters, writs, censures, determinations of professors, opinions, councils, assertions, affirmations, treaties, and leagues of peace, processes, and other matters in

the said cause, as is above mentioned, before us laid, had, done, exhibited, and respectively produced, as also from the same and sundry other reasons, causes, and considerations, manifold arguments, and various kinds of proof of the greatest evidence, strength, and validity, of which in the said cause we have fully and clearly informed ourselves, we find, and with undeniable evidence and plainness see that the marriage contracted and consummated, as is aforesaid, between the said most illustrious Prince, Henry VIII., and the most serene Lady Catherine, was and is null and invalid, and that it was contracted and consummated contrary to the law of God: therefore, we, Thomas, Archbishop, Primate, and Legate aforesaid, having first called upon the name of Christ for direction herein, and having God altogether before our eyes, do pronounce sentence, and declare for the invalidity of the said marriage, decreeing that the said pretended marriage always was and still is null and invalid; that it was contracted and consummated contrary to the will and law of God, that it is of no force or obligation, but that it always wanted, and still wants, the strength and sanction of law; and therefore we sentence that it is not lawful for



CH. 5. self, to the nation, to Europe, to every one who

A.D. 1533.  
May 23.

The unsatisfactory  
character  
of it.

Feeling in  
England.

The pregnancy of  
the new  
queen an  
additional  
misfortune;

heard of it at the time, it must have appeared, as it appears now to us who read the story of it, if a necessity, yet a most unwelcome and unsatisfying one. That the king remained uneasy is evident from the efforts which he continued to make, or which he allowed to be made, notwithstanding the brief of the 23rd of December, to gain the sanction of the pope. That the nation was uneasy, we should not require the evidence of history to tell us. 'There was much murmuring in England,' says Hall, 'and it was thought by the unwise that the Bishop of Rome would curse all Englishmen; that the emperor and he would destroy all the people.' And those who had no such fears, and whose judgment in the main approved of what had been done, were scandalized at the presentation to them at the instant of the publication of the divorce, of a new queen, four months advanced in pregnancy. This also was a misfortune which had arisen out of the chain of duplicities, a fresh accident swelling a complication which was already sufficiently entangled. It had been occasioned by steps which

the said most illustrious Prince, Henry VIII., and the said most serene Lady Catherine, to remain in the said pretended marriage; and we do separate and divorce them one from the other, inasmuch as they contracted and consummated the said pretended marriage de facto, and not de jure; and that they so separated and divorced are absolutely free

from all marriage bond with regard to the foresaid pretended marriage, we pronounce, and declare by this our definitive sentence and final decree, which we now give, and by the tenour of these present writings do publish. May 23rd, 1533.—BURNET's *Collectanea*, p. 68, and LORD HERBERT.

at the moment at which they were ventured, prudence seemed to justify; but we the more regret it, because, in comparison with the interests which were at issue, the few months of additional delay were infinitely unimportant.

Nevertheless, we have reason to be thankful that the thing, well or ill, was over; seven years of endurance were enough for the English nation, and may be supposed to have gained even for Henry a character for patience. In some way, too, it is needless to say, the thing must have ended. The life of none of us is long enough to allow us to squander so large a section of it struggling in the meshes of a law-suit; and although there may be a difference of opinion on the wisdom of having first entered upon ground of such a kind, few thinking persons can suggest any other method in which either the nation or the king could have extricated themselves. Meanwhile, it was resolved that such spots and blemishes as hung about the transaction should be forgotten in the splendour of the coronation. If there was scandal in the condition of the queen, yet under another aspect that condition was matter of congratulation to a people so eager for an heir; and Henry may have thought that the sight for the first time in public of so beautiful a creature, surrounded by the most magnificent pageant which London had witnessed since the unknown day on which the first stone of it was laid, and bearing in her bosom the long-hoped-for inheritor of the English crown, might induce a chivalrous nation to forget what it was the interest of no

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
May 23.

Yet some conclusion was necessary, and it was not possible to find any other.

All spots to be washed out in the splendour of the coronation.

CH. 5. loyal subject to remember longer, and to offer her an English welcome to the throne.

A.D. 1533.  
May 19.

The queen  
is brought  
from Green-  
wich to the  
Tower.

Scene upon  
the river.

In anticipation of the timely close of the proceedings at Dunstable, notice had been given in the city early in May, that preparations should be made for the coronation on the first of the following month. Queen Anne was at Greenwich, but, according to custom, the few preceding days were to be spent at the Tower; and on the 19th of May, she was conducted thither in state by the lord mayor and the city companies, with one of those splendid exhibitions upon the water which in the days when the silver Thames deserved its name, and the sun could shine down upon it out of the blue summer sky, were spectacles scarcely rivalled in gorgeousness by the world-famous wedding of the Adriatic. The river was crowded with boats, the banks and the ships in the pool swarmed with people; and fifty great barges formed the procession, all blazing with gold and banners. The queen herself was in her own barge, close to that of the lord mayor; and in keeping with the fantastic genius of the time, she was preceded up the water by 'a foyst or wafter full of ordnance, in which was a great dragon continually moving and casting wildfire, and round about the foyst stood terrible monsters and wild men, casting fire and making hideous noise.\* So, with trumpets blowing, cannon pealing, the Tower guns answering the guns of the ships, in a blaze of fireworks and splendour,

---

\* HALL.

Anne Boleyn was borne along to the great archway of the Tower, where the king was waiting on the stairs to receive her.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
May 31.

And now let us suppose eleven days to have elapsed, the welcome news to have arrived at length from Dunstable, and the fair summer morning of life dawning in treacherous beauty after the long night of expectation. No bridal ceremonial had been possible; the marriage had been huddled over like a stolen love-match, and the marriage feast had been eaten in vexation and disappointment. These past mortifications were to be atoned for by a coronation pageant which the art and the wealth of the richest city in Europe should be poured out in the most lavish profusion to adorn.

The news  
come from  
Dunstable.

On the morning of the 31st of May, the families of the London citizens were stirring early in all houses. From Temple Bar to the Tower, the streets were fresh strewed with gravel, the footpaths were railed off along the whole distance, and occupied on one side by the guilds, their workmen, and apprentices, on the other by the city constables and officials in their gaudy uniforms, 'with their staves in hand for to cause the people to keep good room and order.'\* Cornhill and Gracechurch-street had dressed their fronts in scarlet and crimson, in arras and tapestry, and the rich carpet-work from Persia and the East. Cheapside, to outshine her rivals, was draped even more splendidly in cloth of gold,

Saturday  
morning.  
Prepara-  
tions in the  
London  
streets.

---

\* HALL.

CH. 5. and tissue, and velvet. The sheriffs were pacing up and down on their great Flemish horses, hung with liveries, and all the windows were thronged with ladies crowding to see the procession pass. At length the Tower guns opened, the grim gates rolled back, and under the archway in the bright May sunshine, the long column began slowly to defile. Two states only permitted their representatives to grace the scene with their presence—Venice and France. It was, perhaps, to make the most of this isolated countenance, that the French ambassador's train formed the van of the cavalcade. Twelve French knights came riding foremost in surcoats of blue velvet with sleeves of yellow silk, their horses trapped in blue, with white crosses powdered on their hangings. After them followed a troop of English gentlemen, two and two, and then the Knights of the Bath, 'in gowns of violet, with hoods purpled with miniver like doctors.' Next, perhaps at a little interval, the abbots passed on, mitred in their robes; the barons followed in crimson velvet, the bishops then, and then the earls and marquises, the dresses of each order increasing in elaborate gorgeousness. All these rode on in pairs. Then came alone Audeley, lord-chancellor, and behind him the Venetian ambassador and the Archbishop of York; the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Du Bellay, Bishop of Bayonne and of Paris, not now with bugle and hunting-frock, but solemn with stole and crozier. Next, the lord mayor, with the city mace in hand, and Garter in his coat of arms;

A.D. 1533.  
May 31.

The procession.

Two ambassadors only present.

and then Lord William Howard—Belted Will Howard, of the Scottish Border, Marshal of England. The officers of the queen's household succeeded the marshal in scarlet and gold, and the van of the procession was closed by the Duke of Suffolk, as high constable, with his silver wand. It is no easy matter to picture to ourselves the blazing trail of splendour which in such a pageant must have drawn along the London streets,—those streets which now we know so black and smoke-grimed, themselves then radiant with masses of colour, gold, and crimson, and <sup>the</sup> Yet there it was, and there the sun could shine upon it, and tens of thousands of eyes were gazing on the scene out of the crowded lattices.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
May 31.

What London was once.

Glorious as the spectacle was, perhaps however, it passed unheeded. Those eyes were watching all for another object, which now drew near. In an open space behind the constable there was seen approaching 'a white chariot,' drawn by two palfreys in white damask which swept the ground, a golden canopy borne above it making music with silver bells: and in the chariot sat the observed of all observers, the beautiful occasion of all this glittering homage; fortune's plaything of the hour, the Queen of England—queen at last—borne along upon the waves of this sea of glory, breathing the perfumed incense of greatness which she had risked her fair name, her delicacy, her honour, her self-respect, to win; and she had won it.

The white chariot with the golden canopy.

And the queen who sat in it.

There she sate, dressed in white tissue robes,

CH. 5. her fair hair flowing loose over her shoulders,  
 and her temples circled with a light coronet of  
 gold and diamonds—most beautiful—loveliest—  
 most favoured perhaps, as she seemed at that  
 hour, of all England's daughters. Alas! 'within  
 the hollow round' of that coronet—

A. D. 1533.  
 May 31.

Kept death his court, and there the antick sate,  
 Scoffing her state and grinning at her pomp.  
 Allowing her a little breath, a little scene  
 To monarchize, be feared, and kill with looks,  
 Infusing her with self and vain conceit,  
 As if the flesh which walled about her life  
 Were brass impregnable; and humoured thus,  
 Bored through her castle walls; and farewell, Queen.

Fatal gift of greatness! so dangerous ever! so  
 more than dangerous in those tremendous times  
 when the fountains are broken loose of the great  
 deeps of thought; and nations are in the throes  
 of revolution;—when ancient order and law and  
 tradition are splitting in the social earthquake;  
 and as the opposing forces wrestle to and fro,  
 those unhappy ones who stand out above the  
 crowd become the symbols of the struggle, and  
 fall the victims of its alternating fortunes. And  
 what if into an unsteady heart and brain, intoxi-  
 cated with splendour, the outward chaos should  
 find its way, converting the poor silly soul into  
 an image of the same confusion,—if conscience  
 should be deposed from her high place, and the  
 Pandora box be broken loose of passions and sen-  
 sualities and follies; and at length there be no-  
 thing left of all which man or woman ought to  
 value, save hope of God's forgiveness.

Three years  
 later.

Three short years have yet to pass, and again,  
 on a summer morning, Queen Anne Boleyn will

leave the Tower of London—not radiant then with beauty on a gay errand of coronation, but a poor wandering ghost, on a sad tragic errand, from which she will never more return, passing away out of an earth where she may stay no longer, into a presence where, nevertheless, we know that all is well—for all of us—and therefore for her.

But let us not cloud her shortlived sunshine with the shadow of the future. She went on in her loveliness, the peeresses following in their carriages, with the royal guard in their rear. In Fenchurch-street she was met by the children of the city schools; and at the corner of Gracechurch-street a masterpiece had been prepared of the pseudo-classic art, then so fashionable, by the merchants of the Styll-yard. A Mount Parnassus had been constructed, and a Helicon fountain upon it playing into a basin with four jets of Rhenish wine. On the top of the mountain sat Apollo with Calliope at his feet, and on either side the remaining Muses, holding lutes or harps, and singing each of them some ‘posy’ or epigram in praise of the queen, which was presented, after it had been sung, written in letters of gold.

From Gracechurch-street, the procession passed to Leadenhall, where there was a spectacle in better taste, of the old English Catholic kind, quaint perhaps and forced, but truly and even beautifully emblematic. There was again a ‘little mountain,’ which was hung with red and white roses; a gold ring was placed on the summit, on which, as the queen appeared, a white falcon was made to ‘descend as out of the sky’—and then

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
May 31.Scenes in  
the London  
streets.



CH. 5. incontinent came down an angel with great melody, and set a close crown of gold upon the falcon's head; and in the same pageant sat Saint Anne with all her issue beneath her; and Mary Cleophas with her four children, of the which children one made a goodly oration to the queen, of the fruitfulness of St. Anne, trusting that like fruit should come of her.\*

A.D. 1533.  
May 31.

How the  
queen was  
received by  
the people.

With such 'pretty conceits,' at that time the honest tokens of an English welcome, the new queen was received by the citizens of London. These scenes must be multiplied by the number of the streets, where some fresh fancy met her at every turn. To preserve the festivities from flagging, every fountain and conduit within the walls ran all day with wine; the bells of every steeple were ringing; children lay in wait with songs, and ladies with posies, in which all the resources of fantastic extravagance were exhausted; and thus in an unbroken triumph—and to outward appearance received with the warmest affection—she passed under Temple Bar, down the Strand by Charing Cross to Westminster Hall. The king was not with her throughout the day; nor did he intend to be with her in any part of the ceremony. She was to reign without a rival, the undisputed sovereign of the hour.

Saturday being passed in showing herself to the people, she retired for the night to 'the

---

\* HALL, p. 801. Hall was most likely an eye-witness, and may be thoroughly trusted in these descriptions. Whenever we are able to test him, which sometimes happens, by independent contemporary accounts, he proves faithful in the most minute particulars.

king's manour house at Westminster,' where she slept. On the following morning, between eight and nine o'clock, she returned to the hall, where the lord mayor, the city council, and the peers were again assembled, and took her place on the high dais at the top of the stairs under the cloth of state; while the bishops, the abbots, and the monks of the abbey formed in the area.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
June 1.  
Whit-  
sunday.  
Westmin-  
ster Hall.

A railed way had been laid with carpets across Palace Yard and the Sanctuary to the abbey gates, and when all was ready, preceded by the peers in their robes of parliament, the Knights of the Garter in the dress of the order, she swept out under her canopy, the bishops and the monks 'solemnly singing.' The train was borne by the old Duchess of Norfolk her aunt, the Bishops of London and Winchester on either side 'bearing up the lappets of her robe.' The Earl of Oxford carried the crown on its cushion immediately before her. She was dressed in purple velvet furred with ermine, her hair escaping loose, as she usually wore it, under a wreath of diamonds.

She moves  
to the  
abbey.

Her ap-  
pearance.

On entering the abbey, she was led to the coronation chair, where she sat while the train fell into their places, and the preliminaries of the ceremonial were despatched. Then she was conducted up to the high altar, and anointed Queen of England, and she received from the hands of Cranmer, fresh come in haste from Dunstable, with the last words of his sentence upon Catherine scarcely silent upon his lips, the golden sceptre, and St. Edward's crown.

She is  
crowned by  
Cranmer.

Did any twinge of remorse, any pang of

Ск. 5. painful recollection, pierce at that moment the incense of glory which she was inhaling? Did any vision flit across her of a sad mourning figure which once had stood where she was standing, now desolate, neglected, sinking into the darkening twilight of a life cut short by sorrow? Who can tell? At such a time, that figure would have weighed heavily upon a noble mind, and a wise mind would have been taught by the thought of it, that although life be fleeting as a dream, it is long enough to experience strange vicissitudes of fortune. But Anne Boleyn was not noble and was not wise,—too probably she felt nothing but the delicious, all-absorbing, all-intoxicating present, and if that plain, suffering face presented itself to her memory at all, we may fear that it was rather as a foil to her own surpassing loveliness. Two years later, she was able to exult over Catherine's death; she is not likely to have thought of her with gentler feelings in the first glow and flush of triumph.

Possible  
object of all  
this splendour.

We may now leave these scenes. They concluded in the usual English style, with a banquet in the great hall, and with all outward signs of enjoyment and pleasure. There must have been but few persons present however who did not feel that the sunshine of such a day might not last for ever, and that over so dubious a marriage no Englishman could exult with more than half a heart. It is foolish to blame lightly actions which arise in the midst of circumstances which are and can be but imperfectly known; and there may have been political reasons which made so

much pomp desirable. Anne Boleyn had been the subject of public conversation for seven years, and Henry, no doubt, desired to present his jewel to them in the rarest and choicest setting. Yet to our eyes, seeing, perhaps, by the light of what followed, a more modest introduction would have appeared more suited to the doubtful nature of her position.

At any rate we escape from this scene of splendour very gladly as from something unseasonable. It would have been well for Henry VIII. if he had lived in a world in which women could have been dispensed with; so ill, in all his relations with them, he succeeded. With men he could speak the right word, he could do the right thing; with women he seemed to be under a fatal necessity of mistake.

It was now necessary, however, after this public step, to communicate in form to the emperor the divorce and the new marriage. The king was assured of the rectitude of the motives on which he had himself acted, and he knew at the same time that he had challenged the hostility of the papal world. Yet he did not desire a quarrel if there were means of avoiding it; and more than once he had shown respect for the opposition which he had met with from Charles, as dictated by honourable care for the interests of his kinswoman. He therefore, in the truest language which will be met with in the whole long series of the correspondence, composed a despatch for his ambassador at Brussels, and expressed himself in a tone of honest sorrow for

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
June 1.

Henry should have lived in a world in which women could be dispensed with.

Necessity of communicating with the emperor.

Henry writes to the ambassador at Brussels,

CH. 5. the injury which he had been compelled to commit. Neither the coercion which the emperor

A.D. 1533.  
June.

Whom he  
charges  
to use only  
gentle  
words,

And to ex-  
press a  
hope that  
a rupture  
might be  
avoided.

He had  
done what  
he could to  
conform  
with the  
order of the  
world.

His for-  
bearance  
had been  
trifled  
with.

had exerted over the pope, nor his intrigues with his subjects in Ireland and England, could deprive the nephew of Catherine of his right to a courteous explanation; and Henry directed Doctor Nicholas Hawkins in making his communication 'to use only gentle words;' to express a hope that Charles would not think only of his own honour, but would remember public justice; and that a friendship of long standing, which the interests of the subjects of both countries were concerned so strongly in maintaining, might not be broken. The instructions are too interesting to pass over with a general description. After stating the grounds on which Henry had proceeded, and which Charles thoroughly understood, Hawkins was directed to continue thus:—

'The King of England is not ignorant what respect is due unto the world. How much he hath laboured and travailed therein he hath sufficiently declared and showed in his acts and proceedings. If he had contemned the order and process of the world, or the friendship and amity of your Majesty, he needed not to have sent so often to the pope and to you both, nor continued and spent his time in delays. He might have done what he has done now, had it so liked him, with as little difficulty as now, if without such respect he would have followed his pleasure.'

The minister was then to touch the pope's behaviour and Henry's forbearance, and after that to say:—

‘Going forward in that way his Highness saw CH. 5.  
that he could come to no conclusion; and he was A.D. 1533.  
therefore compelled to step right forth out of the  
maze, and so to quiet himself at last. And is it  
not time to have an end in seven years? It is  
not to be asked nor questioned whether the  
matter hath been determined after the common  
fashion, but whether it hath in it common justice,  
truth, and equity. For observation of the common  
order, his Grace hath done what lay in him.  
Enforced by necessity he hath found the true And en-  
forced by  
necessity,  
he had  
found the  
true order.  
order which he hath in substance followed with  
effect, and hath done as becometh him. He  
doubteth not but your Majesty, remembering  
his cause from the beginning hitherto, will of  
yourself consider and think, that among mortal  
men nothing should be immortal; and suits must  
once have an end, si possis recte, si non quocun-  
que modo. If his Highness cannot as he would, He could  
not do as  
he would,  
he had been  
therefore  
forced to do  
as he  
might.  
then must he do as he may; and he that hath a  
journey to be perfected must, if he cannot go  
one way, essay another. For his matter with  
the pope, he shall deal with him apart. Your  
Majesty he taketh for his friend, and as to a  
friend he openeth these matters to you, trusting  
to find your Majesty no less friendly than he hath  
done heretofore.’\*

If courtesy obliged Henry to express a con- July.  
fidence in the stability of the relations between The ambas-  
sador's  
opinion of  
the proba-  
ble effect  
of his com-  
munica-  
tion,  
himself and Charles, which it was impossible  
that he could have felt, yet in other respects

---

\* FOXE, vol. v. p. 111.

CH. 5. this letter has the most pleasant merit of honesty.

A. D. 1533.  
July.

Which,  
however, is  
not verified  
by the  
event.

Hawkins was so much overcome by 'the sweetness of it,' that 'he nothing doubted if that the emperor read the same, by God's grace he should be utterly persuaded;' and although in this expectation he was a little over sanguine, as in calmer moments he would have acknowledged, yet plain speech is never without its value; and Charles himself after he had tried other expedients, and they had not succeeded with him, found it more prudent to acquiesce in what could no longer be altered, and to return to cordiality.

For the present he remained under the impression that by the great body of the English the divorce was looked upon with coldness and even with displeasure, that the king was supported only by the complacency of a few courtiers, and that the nation were prepared to compel him to undo the wrong which had been inflicted upon Catherine and the princess. So he was assured by the Spanish party in England; so all the disaffected assured him, who were perhaps themselves deceived. He had secured Ireland, and Scotland also in so far as James's promises could secure it;\* and he was not disposed to surrender for the present so promising a game till he had tried his strength and proved his weakness. He replied coldly to Hawkins, 'That for the King of England's amity he would be glad thereof, so the said king would do works according. The matter

Charles  
will first try  
the experi-  
ment of an  
insurrec-  
tion.

His answer  
to Henry.

---

\* Northumberland to Henry VIII.: *State Papers*, vol. iv. pp. 598-9.

was none of his; but the lady, whose rights had been violated, was his aunt and an orphan, and that he must see for her, and for her daughter his cousin.\*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
July.

The scarcely ambiguous answer was something softened the following day; perhaps only, however, because it was too plain a betrayal of his intentions. He communicated at once with Catherine, and Henry speedily learnt the nature of the advice which he had given to her. After the coronation had passed off so splendidly, when no disturbance had risen, no voice had been raised for her or for her daughter, the poor queen's spirit for the moment had sunk; she had thought of leaving the country, and flying with the Princess Mary to Spain. The emperor sent to urge her to remain a little longer, guaranteeing her, if she could command her patience, an ample reparation for her injuries. Whatever might appear upon the surface, the new queen, he was assured, was little loved by the people, and 'they were ready to join with any prince who would espouse her quarrel.'† All classes, he said, were agreed in one common feeling of displeasure. They were afraid of a change of religion; they were afraid of the wreck of their commerce; and the whole country was fast ripening towards insurrection. The points on which he relied as the occasion of the disaffection betrayed the sources of his information. He was in correspondence

Catherine  
thinks of  
leaving  
England.Charles  
urges her  
to remain,Assuring  
her that an  
insurrec-  
tion was  
imminent.

\* Hawkins to Henry VIII. : *State Papers*, vol. vii. p. 488.

† BURNET, vol. iii. p. 115.



CH. 5. with the regular clergy through Peto at Antwerp, and through his Flemish subjects with merchants of London. Among both these classes, as well as among the White Rose nobles, he had powerful adherents; and it could not have been forgotten in the courts, either of London or Brussels, that within the memory of living men, a small band of exiles, equipped by a Duke of Burgundy, had landed at a Yorkshire village, and in a month had revolutionized the kingdom.

A.D. 1533.  
July.

Difficulty of the official mind in appreciating the strength of a party of insurrection.

Yet Charles had real ground for his anticipation.

In the eyes of Charles there was no reason why an attempt which had succeeded once might not succeed again under circumstances seemingly of far fairer promise. The strength of a party of insurrection is a power which official statesmen never justly comprehend. It depends upon moral influences, which they are professionally incapable of appreciating. They are able complacently to ignore the existence of substantial disaffection though all society may be undermined; they can build their hopes, when it suits their convenience, on the idle trifling of superficial discontent. In the present instance there was some excuse for the mistake. That in England there really existed an active and organized opposition, prepared, when opportunity offered, to try the chances of rebellion, was no delusion of persons who measured facts by their desires; it was an ascertained peril of serious magnitude, which might be seriously calculated upon; and if the experiment was tried, reasonable men might fairly be divided in opinion on the result to be expected.

In the mean time the government had been

obliged to follow up the coronation of the new queen by an act which the situation of the kingdom explained and excused; but which, if Catherine had been no more than a private person, would have been wanton cruelty. Among the people she still bore her royal title; but the name of queen, so long as she was permitted to retain it, was an allowed witness against the legality of the sentence at Dunstable. There could not be 'two queens' in England,\* and one or other must retire from the designation. A proclamation was therefore issued by the council, declaring, that in consequence of the final proofs that the Lady Catherine had never been lawfully married to the king, she was to bear thenceforward the title which she had received after the death of her first husband, and be called the Princess Dowager.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
July.

Further  
sequel of  
the sen-  
tence at  
Dunstable.

Proclama-  
tion issued  
that Cathe-  
rine is no  
longer to be  
called  
queen.

Harsh as this measure was, she had left no alternative to the government by which to escape the enforcement of it, by her refusal to consent to any form of compromise. If she was queen, Anne Boleyn was not queen. If she was queen, the Princess Mary remained the heir to the crown, and the expected offspring of Anne would be illegitimate. If the question had been merely of names, to have moved it would have been unworthy and wicked; but where respect for private feeling was incompatible with the steps which a nation felt necessary in order to secure itself against civil convulsions, private feeling

A fresh  
'necessity.'

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 398.

CH. 5. was compelled not unjustly to submit to injury.

A.D. 1533.  
July.

The Princess Mary.

Mary, though still a girl, had inherited both her father's will and her mother's obstinacy. She was in correspondence, as we have seen, with the Nun of Kent, and aware at least, if she was not further implicated in it, of a conspiracy to place her on the throne. Charles was engaged in the same designs; and it will not be pretended that Catherine was left without information of what was going forward, or that her own conduct was uninfluenced by policy. These intrigues it was positively necessary to stifle, and it was impossible to leave a pretext of which so powerful a use might be made in the hands of a party whose object was not only to secure to the princess her right to succeed her father, but to compel him by arms either to acknowledge it, or submit to be deposed.\*

Selfish dis-  
interested-  
ness of  
historical  
judgment.

Our sympathies are naturally on the side of the weak and the unsuccessful. State considerations lose their force after the lapse of centuries, when no interests of our own are any longer in jeopardy; and we feel for the great sufferers of history only in their individual capacity, without recalling or caring for the political exigencies to which they were sacrificed. It is an error of disguised selfishness, the counterpart of the carelessness with which in our own age, when we are ourselves constituents of an interested public, we ignore what it is inconvenient to remember.

Thus, therefore, on one hot Midsummer Sun-

---

\* Papers relating to the Nun of Kent: *Rolls House MS.*

day in this year 1533, the people gathering to church in every parish through the English counties, read nailed upon the doors, a paper signed Henry R., setting forth that the Lady Catherine of Spain, heretofore called Queen of England, was not to be called by that title any more, but was to be called Princess Dowager, and so to be held and esteemed. The proclamation, we may suppose, was read with varying comments; of the reception of it in the northern counties, the following information was forwarded to the crown. The Earl of Derby, lord-lieutenant of Yorkshire, wrote to inform the council that he had arrested a certain 'lewd and naughty priest,' James Harrison by name, on the charge of having spoken unfitting and slanderous words of his Highness and the Queen's Grace. He had taken the examinations of several witnesses, which he had sent with his letter, and which were to the following effect:—

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
July 24.  
Proclamation on the church doors.

Reception of it in the northern counties.

Richard Clark deposeth that the said James Harrison reading the proclamation, said that Queen Catherine was queen, Nan Bullen should not be queen, nor the king should be no king but on his bearing.

Depositions forwarded by the Earl of Derby.

William Dalton deposeth, that in his hearing the above-named James said, I will take none for queen but Queen Catherine—who the devil made Nan Bullen, that hoore, queen? I will never take her for queen—and he the said William answered, 'Hold thy peace, thou wot'st not what thou sayest—but that thou art a priest I should punish thee, that others should take example.'

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
July.

Richard Sumner and John Clayton depose, that they came in company with the said James from Perbalt to Eccleston, when the said James did say, 'This is a marvellous world—the king will put down the order of priests and destroy the Sacrament, but he cannot reign long, for York will be in London hastily.'\*

Yorkshire  
ripens to-  
wards the  
Pilgrimage  
of Grace.

Here was the later growth of the spirit which we saw a few months previously in the monks of Furness. The mutterings of discontent had developed into plain open treason, confident of success, and scarcely caring to conceal itself—and Yorkshire was preparing for rebellion and 'the Pilgrimage of Grace.'

Queen  
Catherine  
waited  
upon by  
the Com-  
missioners  
of the  
Council.

There is another quarter also into which we must follow the proclamation, and watch the effect of the royal order in a scene where it is well that we should for a few moments rest. Catherine was still at Ampthill, surrounded by her own attendants, who formed an inner circle, shielding her retirement against impertinent curiosity. She rarely or never allowed herself to be seen; Lord Mountjoy, with an official retinue, was in attendance in the house; but the occupation was not a pleasant one, and he was as willing to respect the queen's seclusion as she to remain secluded. Injunctions arrived however from the court at the end of June, which compelled him to request an interview; a deputation of the privy council had come down to inform the ex-queen of the orders of the government, and to

---

\* ELLIS, first series, vol. ii. p. 43.

desire that they might be put in force in her own family. Aware probably of the nature of the communication which was to be made to her, she refused repeatedly to admit them to her presence. At length, however, she nerved herself for the effort, and on the 3rd of July Mountjoy and the state commissioners were informed that she was ready to receive them.

CH. 5.  
A.D. 1533.  
July 3.  
Her reluctance to receive them.

As they entered her room she was lying on a sofa. She had a bad cough, and she had hurt her foot with a pin, and was unable to stand or walk. Her attendants were all present by her own desire; she was glad to see around her some sympathizing human faces, to enable her to endure the cold hard eyes of the officials of the council.

They are admitted,

She inquired whether the message was to be delivered in writing or by word of mouth.

They replied that they had brought with them instructions which they were to read, and that they were further charged with a message which was to be delivered verbally. She desired that they would read their written despatch. It was addressed to the Princess Dowager, and she at once excepted to the name. She was not Princess Dowager, she said, but queen, and the king's true wife. She came to the king a clear maid for any bodily knowledge of Prince Arthur; she had borne him lawful issue and no bastard, and therefore queen she was, and queen she would be while she lived.

And read their instructions, which are addressed the Princess Dowager.

Her resentment.

The commissioners were prepared for the objection, and continued, without replying, to

CH. 5. read. The paper contained a statement of worn-out unrealities; the old story of the judgment of the universities and the learned men, the sentence of convocation, and of the houses of parliament; and, finally, the fact of substantial importance, that the king, acting as he believed according to the laws of God, had married the Lady Anne Boleyn, who was now his lawful wife, and anointed Queen of England.

A.D. 1533.  
July 3.

They communicate the fact of the second marriage.

Catherine's opinion of that proceeding.

Oh yes, she answered when they had done, we know that, and 'we know the authority by which it has been done—more by power than justice.' The king's learned men were learned heretics; the honest learning was for her. As for the seals of the universities there were strange stories about the way in which they had been obtained. The universities and the parliament had done what the king bade them; and they had gone against their consciences in doing it; but it was of no importance to her—she was in the hands of the pope, who was God's vicar, and she acknowledged no other judge.

She is informed that she is no longer to be called queen.

The commissioners informed her of the decision of the council that she was no longer to bear the title of queen. It stood, they said, neither with the laws of God nor man, nor with the king's honour, to have two queens named within the realm; and in fact, there was but one queen, the king's lawful wife, to whom he was now married.

She replies that she is queen.

She replied shortly that she was the king's lawful queen, and none other.

There was little hope in her manner that

anything which could be said would move her; but her visitors were ordered to try her to the uttermost.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
July 3.

The king, they continued, was surprised that she could be so disobedient; and not only that she was disobedient herself, but that she allowed and encouraged her servants in the same conduct.

She was ready to obey the king, she answered, when she could do so without disobeying God; but she could not damn her soul even for him. Her servants, she said, must do the best they could; they were standing round her as she was speaking; and she turned to them with an apology, and a hope that they would pardon her. She would hinder her cause, she said, and put her soul in danger, if on their account she were to relinquish her name, and she could not do it.

The deputation next attempted her on her worldly side. If she would obey, they informed her that she would be allowed not only her jointure as Princess Dowager and her own private fortune, but all the settlements which had been made upon her on her marriage with the king.

They attempt persuasion.

She 'passed not upon possessions, in regard of this matter,' she replied. It touched her conscience, and no worldly considerations were of the slightest moment.

In disobeying the king, they said, seeing that she was none other than his subject, she might give cause for dissension and disturbance, and she might lose the favour of the people.



CH. 5. She 'trusted not,' she replied—she 'never  
 A.D. 1533. minded it, nor would she'—she 'desired only  
 to save her right; and if she should lose the  
 favour of the people in defending that right,  
 yet she trusted to go to heaven cum famâ et  
 infamiâ.'

Persuasion  
 failing,  
 they try  
 threats,

Promises and persuasions being unavailing,  
 they tried threats. She was told that if she  
 persisted in so obstinate a course, the king would  
 be obliged to make known to the world the offers  
 which he had made to her, and the ill reception  
 which they had met with—and then he would  
 perhaps withdraw those offers, and conceive  
 some evil opinions of high displeasure towards  
 her.

She answered that there was no manner of  
 offers neither of lands nor goods that she had  
 respect unto in comparison of her cause—and as  
 to the loss of the king's affection, she trusted  
 to God, to whom she would daily pray for  
 him.

The learned council might as well have rea-  
 soned with the winds, or threatened the waves of  
 the sea. But they were not yet weary, and their  
 next effort was as foolish as it was ungenerous.

And then a  
 foolish  
 taunt.

They suggested, 'that if she did reserve the name  
 of queen, it was thought that she would do it of  
 a vain desire and appetite of glory; and further,  
 she might be an occasion that the king would  
 withdraw his love from her most dear daughter  
 the Lady Princess, which should chiefly move  
 her, if none other cause did.'

They must have known little of Catherine, if

they thought she could be influenced by childish vanity. It was for no vain glory that she cared, she answered proudly; she was the king's true wife, and her conscience forbade her to call herself otherwise; the princess was his true begotten child; and as God hath given her to them, so for her part she would render her again; neither for daughter, family, nor possessions, would she yield in her cause; and she made a solemn protestation, calling on every one present to bear witness to what she said, that the king's wife she was, and such she would take herself to be, and that she would never surrender the name of queen till the pope had decided that she must bear it no longer.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.

But without effect.

Her protest.

So ended the first interview. Catherine, before the commissioners left her, desired to have a copy of the proposals which they had brought, that she might translate and send them to Rome. They returned with them the next day, when she requested to see the report which they intended to send to the council of the preceding conversation. It was placed in her hands; and as she read it and found there the name of Princess Dowager, she took a pen and dashed out the words, the mark of which indignant ink-stroke may now be seen in the letter from which this account is taken.\* With the accuracy of the rest, she appeared to be satisfied—only when she found again their poor suggestion that she was influenced

First interview ends.

The Commission returns the following day.

She desires to read their report.

---

\* *Cotton MS.* Otho X, p. 199. *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 397.

CH. 5. by vanity, she broke out with a burst of passionate indignation.

A.D. 1533.  
July 4.  
Burst of  
chivalrous  
anger.

‘I would rather be a poor beggar’s wife,’ she said, ‘and be sure of heaven, than queen of all the world, and stand in doubt thereof by reason of my own consent. I stick not so for vain glory, but because I know myself the king’s true wife—and while you call me the king’s subject, I was his subject while he took me for his wife. But if he take me not for his wife, I came not into this Realm as merchandize, nor to be married to any merchant; nor do I continue in the same but as his lawful wife, and not as a subject to live under his dominion otherwise. I have always demeaned myself well and truly towards the king—and if it can be proved that either in writing to the pope or any other, I have either stirred or procured anything against his Grace, or have been the means to any person to make any motion which might be prejudicial to his Grace or to his Realm, I am content to suffer for it. I have done England little good, and I should be sorry to do it any harm. But if I should agree to your motions and persuasions, I should slander myself, and confess to have been the king’s harlot for twenty-four years. The cause, I cannot tell by what subtle means, has been determined here within the king’s Realm, before a man of his own making, the Bishop of Canterbury, no person indifferent I think in that behalf; and for the indifference of the place, I think the place had been more indifferent to have been judged in hell; for no truth can be suffered

here, whereas the devils themselves I suppose do  
tremble to see the truth in this cause so sore  
oppressed.'\* CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.  
July 4.

Most noble, spirited, and like a queen. Yet she would never have been brought to this extremity, and she would have shown a truer nobleness, if four years before she could have yielded at the pope's entreaty on the first terms which were proposed to her. Those terms would have required no humiliating confessions; they would have involved no sentence on her marriage nor touched her daughter's legitimacy. She would have broken no law of God, nor seemed to break it. She was required only to forget her own interests; and she would not forget them, though all the world should be wrecked by her refusal. She denied that she was concerned in 'motions prejudicial to the king or to the Realm,' but she must have placed her own interpretation on the words, and would have considered excommunication and interdict a salutary discipline to the king and parliament. She knew that this sentence was imminent, that in its minor form it had already fallen; and she knew that her nephew and her friends in England were plotting to give effect to the decree. But we may pass over this. It is not for an English writer to dwell upon those faults of Catherine of Arragon, which English remorse has honourably insisted on forgetting. Her injuries, inevitable as they were, and forced upon her in great measure by

Catherine's  
conduct  
very noble,  
yet not the  
noblest of  
all.

---

\* *State Papers*, vol. i. p. 403.

CH. 5. her own wilfulness, remain among the saddest spots in the pages of our history.

A.D. 1533.  
One more  
incident.

One other brief incident remains to be noticed here, to bring up before the imagination the features of this momentous summer. It is contained in the postscript of a letter of Cranmer to Hawkins the ambassador in Germany; and the manner in which the story is told is no less suggestive than the story itself.

The immediate present, however awful its import, will ever seem common and familiar to those who live and breathe in the midst of it. In the days of the September massacre at Paris, the theatres were open as usual; men ate, and drank, and laughed, and cried, and went about their common work, unconscious that those days which were passing by them, so much like other days, would remain the *dies nefasti*, accursed in the memory of mankind for ever. Nothing is terrible, nothing is sublime in human things, so long as they are before our eyes. The great man has so much in common with men in general, the routine of daily life, in periods the most remarkable in history, contains so much that is unvarying, that it is only when time has done its work, and all which was unimportant has ceased to be remembered, that such men and such times stand out in their true significance. It might have been thought that to a person like Cranmer, the court at Dunstable, the coronation of the new queen, the past out of which these things had risen, and the future which they threatened to involve, would have seemed at least serious; and

that engaged as he had been as a chief actor, in a matter which, if it had done nothing else, had broken the heart of a high-born lady whom once he had honoured as his queen, he would have been either silent about his exploits, or if he had spoken of them, would have spoken not without some show of emotion. We look for a symptom of feeling, but we do not find it. When the coronation festivities were concluded he wrote to his friend an account of what had been done by himself and others in the light gossiping tone of easiest content ; as if he were describing the common incidents of a common day. It is disappointing, and not wholly to be approved of. Still less can we approve of the passage with which he concludes his letter.

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.

June 17.

‘ Other news we have none notable, but that one Frith, which was in the Tower in prison,\* was appointed by the King’s Grace to be examined before me, my Lord of London, my Lord of Winchester, my Lord of Suffolk, my Lord Chancellor, and my Lord of Wiltshire; whose opinion was so notably erroneous that we could not dispatch him, but were fain to leave him to the determination of his ordinary, which is the Bishop of London. His said opinion is of such

---

\* Cromwell had endeavoured to save Frith, or at least had been interested for him. Sir Edmund Walsingham, writing to him about the prisoners in the Tower, says:—‘ Two of them wear irons, and Frith weareth none. Although he lacketh

irons, he lacketh not wit nor pleasant tongue. His learning passeth my judgment. Sir, as ye said, it were great pity to lose him if he may be reconciled.’—Walsingham to Cromwell: *MS. State Paper Office*, second series, vol. xlv.

CH. 5. nature, that he thought it not necessary to be  
 A.D. 1533. believed as an article of our faith that there is  
 the very corporeal presence of Christ within  
 the host and sacrament of the altar; and holdeth  
 on this point much after the opinion of *Æcolampadius*.

‘And surely I myself sent for him three or four times to persuade him to leave that imagination. But for all that we could do therein, he would not apply to any counsel. Notwithstanding now he is at a final end with all examinations; for my Lord of London hath given sentence, and delivered him to the secular power when he looketh every day to go unto the fire. And there is also condemned with him one Andrew a tailor for the self-same opinion; and thus fare you well.’\*

These victims went as they were sentenced, dismissed to their martyr’s crowns at Smithfield, as Queen Anne Boleyn but a few days before had received her golden crown at the altar of Westminster Abbey. Twenty years later another fire was blazing under the walls of Oxford; and the hand which was now writing these light lines was blackening in the flames of it, paying there the penalty of the same ‘imagination’ for which Frith and the poor London tailor were with such cool indifference condemned. It is affecting to know that Frith’s writings were the instruments of Cranmer’s conversion; and the fathers of the Anglican church

---

\* ELLIS, first series, vol. ii. p. 40.

have left a monument of their sorrow for the shedding of this innocent blood in the Order of the Communion service, which closes with the very words on which the primate, with his brother bishops, had sate in judgment.\*

CH. 5.

A.D. 1533.

---

<p>* 'The natural body and blood of our Saviour Christ are in Heaven, and not here, it being against the truth of Christ's natural body to be at</p>	<p>one time in more places than one.' The argument and the words in which it is expressed were Frith's.—See FOXE, vol. v. p. 6.</p>
--	---

END OF VOL. I.



LONDON:  
SAVILL AND EDWARDS, PRINTERS, CHANCERY STREET,  
COVENT GARDEN.



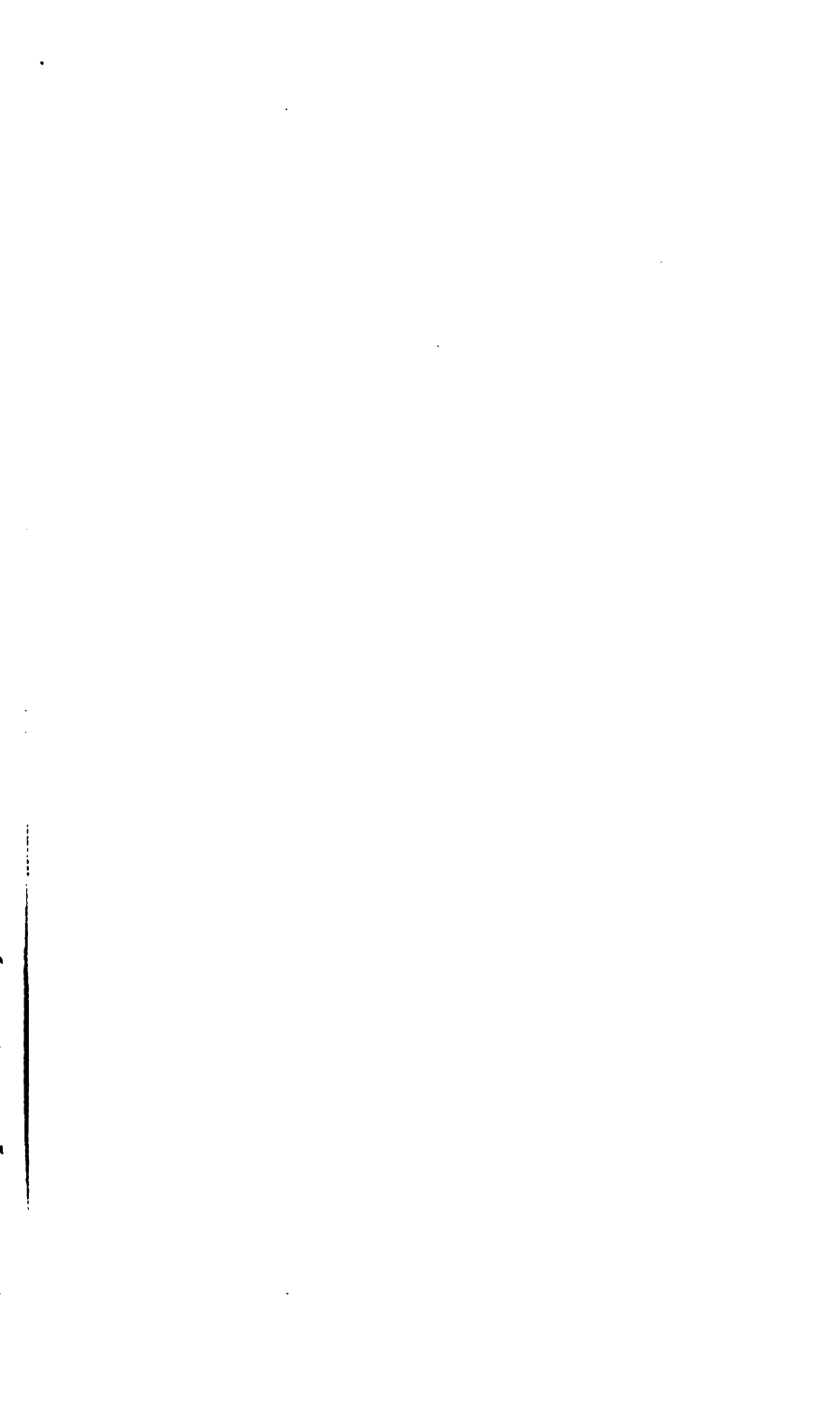
Sept 17

L 901-1-1

e.B.



100



**THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT**

**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

**MAY 1 1916**

**MAR 2 4 1916**

